THE CHARM OF SOUL PETS

BOOK 01

Fish's Sky

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

The Charm of Soul Pets

(寵魅)

by

Fish's Sky

(鱼的天空)

Synopsis

Cloud birds that soar through the blue sky; Terrorblood wolves that roam the wastelands ruthlessly. Dream beasts that dart through the moonlight forests; Ghost kings that dwell on foggy cliffs. Ocean spirit beasts that haunt the depths of the boundless oceans; thousand-eyed treants that stand unyielding on precipitous peaks.

Sword Beetles, Sunset Eagles, Ancient Wood Demons, Chaotic Thunder Sprites, Cursed Demon Fox: Ice... Plants, Beasts, Elementals, Undead, this is the eccentric, variegated, beautiful, and stunning world of soul pets!

Our protagonist, a soul pet trainer, had at first a young, mutated soul pet - a Moonlight Fox. In unending fights, it mutated into the stronger Evil Flamed Six-tailed Demon fox and the even higher leveled Queen Flamed Nine-tailed Firefox!

Under the companionship of this soul pet, he walked on the path to become a king, catching precious and rare soul pets, and never ceasing his endeavor to becoming the very best!

Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

First Edition: November 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by 87Translator, Moonfox @ Chongmei Translations

Translation Edits by LordGrim @ Chongmei Translations

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1: Nightmare Island

From a bird's eye view through the wispy clouds, the deep blue ocean could be seen. With this perspective, the entire body of water became a curvy mirror, reflecting the beautiful skies.

There were many verdant islands dotting the boundless ocean, but under a certain raincloud lay a more special one, an island of about forty kilometers wide.

It was a somewhat rhombus shaped island, with a perfectly straight peak at its center. From far away, the vast island looked as if a sword was lodged into it.

This island was entirely surrounded by massive cliffs, without a single beach.

The waters below the cliffs were unusually turbulent; and the sound of angry tides ramming into the disarrayed reefs was often heard.

With this structure around the fringes of the island, it meant that it was a sealed off island upon which no ship could berth!

On the south side of the island, at a protruding cliff, a fifteen year old young boy, wearing thin clothes, sat at the edge of the rocks. He watched the seas and the unknown land beyond with wistful eyes, yet there was also a mysterious trace of grief.

This was a gloomy face that did not match his age. However, he maintained it without any disguise. It was his genuine feelings that were shown...

The storming waves battered the cliff, occasionally spraying upwards. The ocean winds bit into the young boy's thin clothes, tousling his messy hair.

The young boy sat silently on the cliff like a statue, his insignificant body facing the violent tides.....

After a period of time, a horn sounded out from the depths of the forest.

"Wuuu~~"

Hearing the horn, the boy showed a loathe expression, but nevertheless stood up and walked towards the sound.

The boy looked thin, but his movements were agile. In the intricate forest, he dashed with ease. Very soon, he arrived at an open area within the forest.

The open area was circular, with a radius of about 100 meters. Around the open area was a wall made up of thirty meter high wooden pikes, creating a village-like campground.

The campground only had one entrance. At the entrance were four men in green clothes. These four men were all about thirty years old, with nothing that stood out.

But what did stand out were the frightening fangs of the wolf-like beasts beside them!

“URAGHH!!! UHHH!!”

The four fierce wolves saw the boy walk in and immediately growled, baring their bony white teeth and threatening to pounce on the lean boy.

“Get your ass in here! Coming here this slowly, do you wanna die? Humph, Your body won’t even satisfy my coyote’s nightly snack!”

The young boy stayed out of the coyotes’ reach and ran inside the base.

Looking at the back of the boy, the spiky haired man spat with disdain. “If only I knew who brought this kid in. He looks too weak to do anything, nevertheless withstand the torture of our Nightmare Camps.”

“It was Boss Xia, I heard……”The other red haired man paused, and in a deep voice continued.

“You know…the kid’s already a dead man.”

“A dead man,” Gulei snorted. “Which one of these little bastards

aren't already dead men?" Gulei said carelessly.

"You don't understand. That kid used to be the young master of a clan. He offended somebody, so they hired people in the Nightmare Palace to get rid of him."

"Boss Xia is responsible for this mission, so after he kidnapped this kid, since he was supposed to die anyways, he thought he might as well let him sign a soul pact with a White Nightmare. This way, we would have another slave to work with."

At the mention of the White Nightmare, the three men beside him all drew in a breath. One man said in a whisper, "How does Boss Xia have things like the White Nightmare? And is that kid really that special? Can he withstand the White Nightmare?"

"No way. If that kid had that sort of power, he'd have been sent to White Nightmare Island already, how would he still be here?"

"I don't know how Boss Xia got hold of a White Nightmare, but I know Boss Xia's just using the kid as an experiment, with the mentality that the kid's dead already. I believe it won't take long before the kid is devoured by the White Nightmare." The red-haired man laughed, not caring at all about the death of the boy.

"Ha, so that's how it is. I've always hated that kid anyways, he might as well die. Back to the main topic, Boss Xia doesn't seem simple, having a Nightmare we haven't even seen before. I'll let you know, the leader of the other Nightmare Islands only have one or two Cyan Nightmares at most."

“That’s to be expected….Oh, times about up, let’s close the door. Tonight, we will feast upon their shrieks, haha….”

The other three laughed along with the first, careless about the lives of the people within the camp.

The boy that sat on the cliff silently was called Chu Mu. What was supposed to be a young boy shining with youthfulness was sharpened to become a concealed dagger.

The reason Chu Mu appeared on this island was indeed because he was kidnapped. And the reason he hadn’t been killed was also exactly because of the devilish experiment Boss Xia did on him.

In reality, on this entire island, other than the aforementioned foremen, all the kids had had this devilish experiment done on them: being forced to sign a soul pact with a Nightmare.

This was the world of soul pets. Those with talent could become soul pet trainers.

Trainers could sign soul pacts with soul pets, making the soul pets fight for them.

The relationship between soul pets and humans were master-servant relationships; humans could command their soul pets to do anything.

But on this completely isolated Green Nightmare Island, things were a bit different.

Every once in awhile, there were many kids like Chu Mu who were sent to this isolated island and subjected to these immoral experiments.

The nightmares they speak of are evil soul pets. Evil soul pets were very unique within the soul pet system. They could also sign soul pacts with humans and fight for them.

However, they had the ability to devour their master's souls!

The kids, trapped within this place on their first day here, would all be forced to sign soul pacts with Nightmares.

At one point in time, the parasitic Nightmare would eat their master's soul as food, and humans without souls will soon perish.

The only way to prevent their souls from being devoured was to become stronger, let their cultivation become greater, and let their soul become stronger.

In other words, they had to be stronger than the Nightmare forever in order to live!!

This was the cruellest part of hell. Children deal not with the earnest teachings of teachers, but the fiendish, merciless savages that might take their lives at a moment's notice!

Here, weaklings would become food for their evil pets quickly, while stronger people were chased by Nightmares forever...forever...

It’s like a never ending nightmare!!

The moon wasn't visible tonight. The sea winds whipped the lowlying clouds, driving them further into the ocean.

The woods wavered in the gale, incessantly crying like a grieving woman.

In the campground, on the spacious flat area, there stood a hundred teens in the whistling wind. Their clothes were all flimsy, but their faces showed a numbing resolve, their blank eyes showing sharpness like that of a beasts.

The hundred of them lined up in a ten by ten squad, standing neatly together.

Around them, standing near the wooden pike walls were ten adult foremen.

These foremen all stood in place. In their eyes were only coldness and indifference. Their gazes were fixed on the hundred children, constantly vigilant.

Near the wooden gate, three men in dark clothes stood with very apathetic expressions.

The burly, middle-aged man standing in the middle took a few steps forward, swept his gaze through the kids, and smiled cruelly.

“Today is the fitness training. You have to face your own savage pets.”

“I can tell you right now, I will only allow fifty of you to continue on training here. That means that half of you will die today in this test!”

“Haha, enjoy the sweetness of death! Only people who frequent the edge of life and death are worthy of entering the Nightmare Palace.”

Hearing this, the hundred kids all showed signs of panic, eyeing the ten foremen restlessly.

Within the hundred, only fifty could survive, meaning that each person had only a 50% chance of living. How cruel was that!

But, these villains wouldn't have any sympathy for the children. With the command of the middle-aged man, the ten foremen standing beside the wall started chanting a string of strange incantations.

Everytime they pursed their lips, a translucent glowing symbol

would appear magically around them. The symbols were like words, projecting a blue image onto the ground and creating a glittering light phenomena.

“Awooooooooo!!!Awooooooooooo”

“Awooooooooooo!! Awoooawooooooooooo!!!”

Suddenly, wolf howls sounded out from around them. The smell of blood engulfed the not-so open campground, buffeting the lean children.

Bone white claws dug into the dirt below, with grey hair spiking up. Razor sharp teeth peeked out of their mouths, shining malevolently.

When the ten foremen finished their summoning, ten predators appeared in the campground ----Hunting Wolfs! The savage soul pet known for its sharp and terrifying teeth!

Seeing the ten threatening wolves howling right at them, the children all became pale. A few girls even bit their lips, crying tears.

Regardless of whether or not they were faced against soul pets or the helpless children, Hunting Wolves are very scary creatures. For food, they would attack without the slightest hesitation with all their might until their prey dies.

And in most areas, even adult soul pet trainers had a tough time

against a single Hunting Wolf, let alone these unarmed, unlearned children.

Chapter 2: Survival Instinct

Chu Mu stood at the fourth spot of the fifth row. He knew that if he didn't quickly think of a method, he would become one of the 50 kids facing imminent death.

Regarding Hunting Wolves, this sort of soul pet, Chu Mu absolutely understood them. When he was in his clan, he had already learned various means to understand soul pets.

Hunting Wolves were soul pets - a beast type-that were part of the Beast World, and were part of the wolf clan. According to the color of their fur and the build of the Hunting Wolves in front of him, they had most likely reached the Eighth Stage.

Beasts like these Hunting Wolves at the eighth stage were in no way inferior to a robust, grown man holding a large blade! Thus, Chu Mu knew that in order the method to survive, in no way rested upon defeating these Hunting Wolves. Instead, he had to think of a method to dodge the Hunting Wolves' attacks until 50 other children were killed first!

"Ao Wu!!""Ao Wu!!""Ao Wu!!"

The palpitating sound of wolf cries echoed through the air, stirring up an evil and demonic wind.

Subsequent to the command of those cruel men, ten hungry Hunting Wolves immediately launched themselves onto the group of unarmed and defenseless children. The sound of crying and

wolves howling immediately became one!

The originally orderly formation instantly collapsed, and the children on the edges frantically rushed towards the center of the group. This was in order to prevent themselves from being eaten by the wolves first.

However, the field was only so big, and with a total of 100 people, no matter how much one pushed or shoved, those who had the weakest physical constitutions were ultimately pushed out into the edges.

“AAAH!”

Intense, miserable cries resounded out and a pale faced youth’s arm was bitten off by a wolf with a comparatively larger build. The young and tender arm was suspended in between the Hunting Wolf’s wolf teeth as the captivating color of fresh blood terrifyingly dripped from the wolf’s lips.

“Ah!”

“AAAAHH~~~”

More and more miserable cries rang through the air. In another spot, a few children had perished at the sharp claws of the Hunting Wolves. These serrated claws easily ripped through the delicate skin of the children. It tore so far into the flesh that it was possible to see their bones.

The fiercest attack of the Hunting Wolves lay in their utilization of claws and wolf teeth. The deep, white-colored claws ruthlessly tore into the children's faces and stabbed into their bodies; their teeth went so far as to bite through their necks!!

The intoxicating color of fresh blood astonished the heart as it began to form a small stream that calmly flowed on the muddy ground.

The young children in the field cried their eyes out and let out blood-curdling shrieks. Riddled with scars and bruises, they crawled and rolled around; fear was omnipresent in their eyes. The small corpses left lying in the pool of blood further portrayed an already extremely wretched scene.

However, in a completely opposite manner, were the surrounding cold and callous attendants. Some of them even wore tyrannical smiles.

Chu Mu's location within the human group was at the center. This allowed him to avoid the first few attacks of the Hunting Wolves. Nevertheless, following the fleeing and crowding of the children begging for survival, Chu Mu slowly came into the Hunting Wolves' lines of sight.

Fortunately, there was another child in front of Chu Mu. Chu Mu remembered the name of this child-Zhou Shengmo. Among those who were sent to the island, he also seemed to be the child with the best aptitude.

Chu Mu knew that this was an extremely cruel island, and harboring sympathy was tantamount to sending oneself towards a path of death. This was particularly pertinent to those who didn't have strength, so when he saw a Hunting Wolf pounce on Zhou Shengmo, Chu Mu decisively chose to ignore it.

Zhou Shengmo's physique was slightly larger, and he was half a head taller than Chu Mu. Upon seeing the Hunting Wolf pounce on him, Zhou Shengmo also paled and subconsciously retreated.

Zhou Shengmo's movement's could still be considered fast, as he was just barely able to dodge the Hunting Wolf's sequestered attack. However, when the Hunting Wolf finished adjusting, it would be hard for Zhou Shengmo to dodge again.

It was at this time that Zhou Shengmo discovered Chu Mu beside him.

Seeing Chu Mu, Zhou Shengmo seemed to see a hope of survival and unexpectedly threw himself towards Chu Mu. Relying on his sturdy body, he grabbed Chu Mu and ferociously pushed him towards the Hunting Wolf.

Chu Mu did not even have enough time to react and his body was instantly pushed towards the impending forest-white wolf teeth!!

The two sharp forest-white canine front teeth were at least 20 centimeters long and hung over their lower jaw. Currently, it was exposed to Chu Mu's eyes, and they were so close that Chu Mu

could smell the Hunting Wolf's terrifying breath!!

The Hunting Wolf's attack was merciless and aimed to slaughter. When Chu Mu neared it, the Hunting Wolf immediately opened its mouth and aimed for Chu Mu's neck!!

At the brink of life and death, Chu Mu used an extraordinary amount of effort to twist his body and dodge the Hunting Wolf's fatal strike. Nevertheless, simultaneously, Chu Mu felt a slight chill on his neck. He had clearly been grazed by the sharp wolf teeth.

After Chu Mu twisted his body, he borrowed the momentum and rolled over 4 meters away on the ground!

"Da, da"

The sound of footsteps was heard from behind Chu Mu. He instantly realized that the Hunting Wolf that had bitten air was now pouncing towards him. He is heart was both confused and panicking. However, he still tried to remain cool-headed.

Chu Mu remembered all of the abilities that the Hunting Wolves possessed, and if he guessed correctly, when sneak-attacking from behind, the Hunting Wolf would choose the Violent Wolf's Demonic Strike!

Violent Wolf's Demonic Strike was a continuous stream of claw strikes that could be performed by the majority of Hunting

Wolves. Even if it was a grown person, he would most likely perish after four of these powerful and continuous claw strikes.

Chu Mu ground his teeth and after guessing the Hunting Wolf's method of attack, he instantly ducked and curled himself into a ball.

Originally, Chu Mu only needed to lie on his stomach to avoid this attack, but Chu Mu understood that if he were to only lie on his stomach, the Hunting Wolf would most likely jump on top of him. At that point, the only thing that awaited him was the misfortune of death.

If he were to crouch into a ball, it would be the most effective way of protecting his vital parts. When the Hunting Wolf took time to recover, this was when he could break into a run and flee!

As expected, the Hunting Wolf vigorously chasing Chu Mu extended its claws and when it approached Chu Mu, it instantly performed Violent Wolf's Demonic Strike. Suddenly, a continuous stream of four powerful claw attacks evasively streaked across with a cold light.

"Shuashuashua!!" Three claw strikes hit the air due to Chu Mu's crouching.

"Si La!" The fourth strike, however, directly tore into Chu Mu's back and left a deep scratching scar on his back. Immediately, fresh blood freely flowed.

Chu Mu sucked in a breath of air. The acute pain from his back was akin to the being burned by raging flames.

The claw tore apart and lacerated Chu Mu's flesh. Fresh blood proceeded to flow from his back.

Chu Mu bit his teeth and after the Hunting Wolf finished its attack, he jumped up from the ground and instantly ran in a direction where there were no Hunting Wolves. The fresh blood from his back promptly followed his frantic escape and created a splattering bloody footprint.

Currently, Chu Mu's complexion was pale, without any hint of blood. His face was even slightly twitching. However, an expression of staunchness and resolution broke through the weak complexion.

This sort of expression, for a 15 year old child, meant that not only was he brave and determined, but he also possessed a will that was engraved among his own instincts to survive desperate straits . It was the survival instinct coveted by many!

Chapter 3: Coerced Into Death

"Pa!! Pa!! Pa!!"

A few sounds of clapping rang through the bloody camp; signifying that the terrifying nightmare had finally come to an end!

The smell of blood in the camp was carried away by the caress of the sea breeze and began to permeate into the surrounding environment. Quite fittingly, rain began to fall from the sky onto the camp, splashing onto the faces of the trembling children. It washed the small corpses of the children lying in pools of their own blood, cleansing the blood off their bodies.

The camp began to turn muddy as the rain water and blood mixed together...

The ruthless Hunting Wolves were restrained by their Soul Pet Trainers. After the slaughter, there were exactly fifty people left, the remaining having been met with death; the Nightmare in there bodies had probably already devoured their souls. Later, their bodies would be brought to another area where the Nightmares, which had eaten their fill, would be extracted from the corpses which would then be thrown into the boundless ocean.

"Starting tomorrow, you can move independently around the island. The island contains myriads of Soul Pets which suit you, and you can choose to sign a soul pact and train on the island with them.

“In three months time, you will participate in a decisive duel. Those that finish in the top ten will be sent to another island where they will continue training their Nightmare. As for the others, hmph, you will be thrown into the ocean as shark bait!” The middle aged man pointed at the surviving children and spoke to them in a loud voice.

After speaking, the middle-aged man exposed a callous smile as he continued to speak: “Of course, you had better not neglect the Nightmare in your bodies. If you don’t quickly increase your own Soul Power, then you will end up becoming pitiful food…”

When he mentioned the Nightmares in their bodies, the faces of the children paled many times over. Each of their expressions dulled, as they were engulfed by a feelings of both helplessness and despair at being chased to the bitter end by death.

“Return to your nests. You should feel happy about surviving… it’s only a pity that tomorrow, you will once again face another death challenge! One more thing, a word of advice, don’t enter the island’s inner region; that place is a death zone for you guys!”

Without a shred of mercy, he instead sneered and the 13 foremen turned around and left. Left in their wake were the 50 corpses dripping in blood, on the camp ground.

The rain water continued to cleanse these petite corpses of blood. The surviving children could only step on their corpses to walk out of the campground and onto another location in the camp where

they lived.

The lodging facilities were made up of 25 wooden houses; they could still be considered both durable and exquisite as they sat orderly next to the ocean. Thus it could be said that the environment wasn't bad.

Of course, the reason why the surroundings weren't bad wasn't because those cold-hearted people wanted to give the children a good lodging accommodation. Instead, this island was meant as a long term Nightmare training camp. When this batch of children either died or left, other children would be sent here and their tears and blood would reappear.

Chu Mu's back was already split open and returning to his own wooden house was clearly very strenuous.

Once he opened his door, Chu Mu felt someone splash water onto his back, causing a wave of searing pain to course through his wound

Chu Mu angrily turned his around and saw Zhou Shengmo wearing a smile that caused one to loathe him when looking at it.

"What luck you have. You didn't even die in this kind of way!" Zhou Shengmo sneered.

Chu Mu laughed grimly and couldn't be bothered to argue with this person. This was because in Chu Mu's eyes, sooner or later,

Zhou Shengmo would be a dead person. Even if he wasn't slaughtered by the foremens' Soul Pets, Chu Mu would personally murder this bastard!

"Truthfully, when we were in field, I was helping you. Perhaps in a short while, when the Nightmare devours your soul, you will regret not being quickly killed by the Hunting Wolf's claws, as it isn't as bad as bearing the pain of having one's soul devoured! Hahaha!" Zhou Shengmo let out a loud laugh and once he finished speaking, he turned around and abruptly left.

Chu Mu watched the slightly plump and hefty person and let out a sneer. At this age, the expression he exposed shouldn't have been this shrewd.

The shrewdness Chu Mu possessed came from his clan's education coupled with being forced to undergo this sort of hellish activity. Any child that was sent here would have a dark and callous heart.

Chu Mu opened the door and walked into the wooden house.

Originally, there were three other people who lived in the wooden house. However, it was very clear that they could never return again. After all, those three were too weak and small.

Chu Mu didn't interact with them and only remembered that among them, there was a small girl. This girl's body was weaker than the males and the chances of the girl surviving under the onslaught of the Hunting Wolf's claws was next to nothing.

Therefore, it could now be assumed that the wooden house belonged to Chu Mu exclusively.

Blood was still flowing from Chu Mu's back and he changed his wet clothing first and used water to wash off the filth on his body. Subsequently, he cleaned his wound and then, from his drawer, grabbed injury medicine for his wound left by the foremen.

It was evident that using the injury medication by himself to reach the wound on his back would be very hard. Chu Mu lay on the bed and seemed abnormally strained. He let out a loud shout and even managed to injure his wound more a few times. However, he ultimately wasn't able to successfully apply the medication to his wound.

"Let me help you..."

"Ah!"

The two sounds appeared extremely suddenly. The prior voice was comparatively exquisite, but because Chu Mu didn't realize that there was someone else in the room, he had jumped onto the bed with extreme vigilance. The reason why he let out a miserable shriek was due to the intense movement causing a wave of splitting pain to course through his wound.

"It's you... you didn't die..." When Chu Mu saw the dripping wet young girl (ʖ̯ʖ) , he let out a bitter laugh.

“I survived by a fluke… let me help you apply it…” The girl said.

The girl’s name was Ting Yu and she also lived in the wooden house. Chu Mu had believed that she was already dead and didn't expect that aside from a few scratches, there unexpectedly weren’t any clear wounds. It seemed like she was also a smart child.

Chu Mu nodded his head and lay on the bed, letting Ting Yu help him rub medicine on the wound.

While the girl helped him to apply medicine, Chu Mu still maintained a trace of vigilance. After all, in three months, only 10 people would be able to survive. If this seemingly weak child was vicious and merciless, there was a chance that she would want to thin out the competition and kill him while using the excuse to apply medicine!

Ting Yu very carefully smeared the medicine. There were no sketchy movements during the entire process and Chu Mu slowly felt the pain alleviate.

“Today I helped you, so in the future, if I have any problems, you also have to help me. Is that okay?” After Ting Yu bandaged up Chu Mu, she spoke.

The girl was very realistic, but expressed that she didn’t harbor any ill intent towards Chu Mu. She only wanted to maintain a relationship as an ally.

Chu Mu nodded his head and insipidly said: “I’ll try my best…”

“My Cyan Nightmare’s growth is very fast. In ten days, it has a chance of maturing into the third rank. I’m scared that my Soul Power isn’t enough to supply it and that my own soul will be devoured by it.” Ting Yu sat on her own bed and embraced her knees as she shivered with cold.

“Try your best if you don’t want to die…” Chu Mu could only offer a phrase of comfort to Ting Yu’s hidden bitterness.

Soul Pets had means by which they increased their strength; the demonic Nightmare Soul Pet was no different.

For instance, the Hunting Wolf in front of Chu Mu earlier. From birth until infancy, a Hunting Wolf would begin to experience its so called maturation and would start growing from the first stage.

The foremen’s Hunting Wolves on Nightmare Island were all already of the fifth stage and their attack power was extremely powerful. Children, without the strength to truss a chicken, would definitely be unable to resist against them.

As for the Nightmares in Chu Mu and the other children on the island’s bodies, they would also grow one step at a time. Currently, everyone’s Nightmares had probably already entered the second stage.

Every time the Nightmare would advance a stage, the quantity of

food it required would amplify. Before, there had at least been 200-300 people whose souls had been consumed when their Nightmares reached the second stage because their Soul Power wasn't sufficient to nourish the Nightmares.

"I feel as if you aren't even the least bit worried. Are you extremely confident in yourself?" Ting Yu asked.

Chu Mu bitterly shook his head, but didn't speak to Ting Yu.

Truthfully, among all the other children, Chu Mu was the least likely person to survive the onslaught of the Nightmare.

This was because all the other children had signed a Soul Pact with a Cyan Nightmare. Only Chu Mu harbored a White Nightmare in his body which was much more terrifying that the Cyan Nightmares.

While both were at the second stage, the White Nightmare would still eat a lot more than the Cyan Nightmare. Moreover, the more it grew, the quantity of food it required would also double. This was not something that a child could bear and this was also the reason why the foremen all firmly believed that Chu Mu was already a dead man.

The amount of people that managed to survive the White Nightmare's curse were almost zero. In other words, White Nightmares were fundamentally killers and Chu Mu's fate was already decided when he made a Soul Pact with a White Nightmare.

This form of being coerced into death could only force Chu Mu to unleash his greatest potential to raise his own strength!

Chapter 4: Looking For A New Soul Pet

Inside the hall of an even more prominent and luxurious wooden cabin, another spot in the camp, were four males. Among them, three were the three middle-aged foremen who had just previously watched over the children.

These three foremen were the heads of Cyan Nightmare Island and they each had 20 foremen under their command. On this island, whatever they said was law.

However, currently, these three Cyan Nightmare Island Chieftains were reverently and deferentially standing in front of a male wearing white clothes. Previously, when they faced the children, they were cruel and vicious, but none of those emotions was showing now. In fact, they were even afraid that their expression wasn't even cordial enough, and that they weren't acting as reverent as they should have.

"Leader Xia, for you to be able to once again visit our island, it truly is our honour." The foreman acting as the head spoke up.

"Cao Yi, has the brat that I threw here died yet?" said the male called Leader Xia.

This Leader Xia was about 30 years old. His skin was pale and it gave off the appearance of someone who was weak and sickly. His entire body gave one an ice-cold feeling.

“For the time being, he hasn’t.” said the island chieftain Cao Yi.

Leader Xia revealed a somewhat shocked expression and muttered to himself: “In Gangluo City, the employer data clearly indicated that this brat had only just recently entered the Soul Disciple Realm. Thus, it is reasonable to say that this sort of weak Soul Power should have been devoured by the White Nightmare when it enters the second stage. Why has he not died yet?”

To the side, the three men didn’t know what Leader Xia was talking about and could only look at each other inquisitively.

“Leader Xia, do you want us to directly kill him? If your White Nightmare is to eat that sort of a weak soul, it will be an insult to your honourable White Nightmare.” Cao Yi finally said.

“There’s no need for that. Since he hasn’t died, that shows that his Soul Force is still enough to provide for my White Nightmare. It seems that this brat still has a bit of ability. He’s not a nobody like the other’s think. That’s fine too; temporarily, there isn’t a suitable host body, so I’ll let him nurture my White Nightmare first. Not everybody is able to raise it a few stages...” Leader Xia said.

After speaking, Leader Xia stood up and said, “Continue to let him receive training here. After he dies, you can send the White Nightmare back to my island.”

“What if he doesn’t die?” One of the adjacent forment asked in a low voice.

“Idiot! What kind of a White Nightmare doesn’t need over 1000 corpses to lay its foundation for growth? How can that brat survive?!” Cao yi immediately scowled at his own subordinate.

“Yes yes yes, this small one is dumb, this small one is dumb...” The foreman who asked too much instantly nodded his head like he was pounding garlic.

Leader Xia let out a profound laugh and didn’t say anymore. He turned around and walked out the door.

Truthfully, this Leader Xia didn’t believe that Chu Mu could survive. This was because the every growth of a White Nightmare left behind a trail of blood. They frequently needed up to 1000 relatively high quality host bodies before the White Nightmares were sufficiently supplied for.

The new born White Nightmare of Leader Xia could still make do by devouring the soul of a child Soul Pet Trainer with potential.

Nevertheless, this was only because the White Nightmare was at a low stage. Once the White Nightmare increased its stage, the quantity of food it ate would exponentially grow, signifying that this White Nightmare needed to search for a host with stronger strength. It was no longer something that Chu Mu, this sort of 15 year old, weak Soul Pet Trainer, could provide.

This Leader Xia estimated that when the White Nightmare grew to the third stage, Chu Mu’s time would be just about over.

Inside a wooden hut.

“The high stage and skilled Soul Pets on this island should be of a limited amount, so we should capture our battle Soul Pets earlier. If we obtain a trash Soul Pet, even if we pass the three months of stringent training and cultivation, it will be extremely hard to obtain the top ten spots.

Last night, the events from the life and death struggle caused Ting Yu to not sleep very long. On the morning of the second day, she definitely decided to set out and capture her own Soul Pet.

“Yes, I wish you good luck.” Chu Mu lightly nodded his head and spoke to the ready and waiting Ting Yu.

“What? Do you not plan on going with me?” Ting Yu asked.

“I’ll travel alone. You also don’t want to make this room only have one person left because of an encounter with a good Soul Pet right?” Chu Mu nonchalantly said.

Ting Yu pursed her lips and said: “But, if more people don’t work together, how will one person defeat a Soul Pet, let alone capture it?”

Generally speaking, the first time a Soul Pet Trainer fought a Soul Pet, one would be supported by his or her clan, teacher or elder. Only after experiencing a period of nurturing would one be

able to truly fight as a Soul Pet Trainer.

The training style of this Nightmare Island was particularly unique. It required Soul Pet Trainers to think of their own methods to obtain their first battle Soul Pets, apart from the Nightmare. Most likely, they would have no choice but to personally fight with the Soul Pets.

“You should also realize that we live in a pillaging society. If you were to team up with others-unless you possessed a superior body like Zhou Shengmo, who when forming a team had no one attempt to steal his Soul Pet-there will definitely be casualties in the group. Thus, if you truly want to obtain your own satisfactory Soul Pet, the best option is to go alone…” Chu Mu earnestly said.

“But… It’s because I don’t trust others…” Ting Yu was spoke in a somewhat cute manner.

“I’m not worth trusting either.” Chu Mu said. After speaking, he walked out of the wooden room with a bag.

Ting Yu watched Chu Mu’s figure from behind and stamped her feet in rage. She said: “Hmph, you’ve already forgotten that I helped you apply medicine yesterday. Worse comes to worse, if we were to encounter a good Soul Pet, I would’ve let you pick first! You petty person!”

Chu Mu ignored Ting Yu’s grumbling. After all, applying medicine was an easy task, and perhaps when Ting Yu one day sustained an injury, Chu Mu would also help her apply medicine.

This place was a barbaric, blood-thirsty and cruel, barren island-it wasn't a civilized city. Why did he have to understand how to cherish a younger sister, or show courtesy to a young lady...

After the healing medicine had been spread for a night, Chu Mu was able to freely move again. The slight pain on his back wasn't too disturbing.

Previously, Chu Mu had already gained a thorough understanding of the island's topography. In order to enter the fairly lush jungle, Chu Mu moved like a small fairy as he quickly broke past hindrance after hindrance towards the center of Cyan Nightmare Island.

The perimeter of Nightmare Island was 20 kilometers, and although the island had been occupied by Nightmare Palace for a long time, the foremen would only mostly occupy the outskirts of the island. They would rarely enter within the 10 kilometer radius of the inner island to move about.

Cyan Nightmare Island itself was a small ecosystem. This place had a plethora of different Soul Pet habitats. In order to capture a good soul pet, not only was luck required, but outstanding perception and sufficient strength were also needed.

Luck naturally referred to coming across a high ranking Soul Pet.

Perception ability referred to whether or not one was able to discern the rank and aptitude of the Soul Pet.

Strength referred to whether the Soul Pet Trainer himself was able to capture the Soul Pet.

In theory, no matter how weak or formidable a Soul Pet was, there was always a chance to obtain it.

A majority of the children had already begun searching for Soul Pets on the outskirts of the island. These people would walk and stop frequently, and every time they saw something living, they would meticulously observe it in order to make sure they weren't passing up a good Soul Pet.

Chu Mu, however, wasn't the same. He didn't stop at any area in the outskirts of the island. No matter what kind of Soul Pet he encountered, he didn't stop to look at it. Instead, he directly raced towards the inner area of the island!

The inner island was a dangerous area. Even if it was those foremen, they wouldn't have dared to so easily enter this area. The reason Chu Mu had the audacity to proceed was not because he was aiming to high or because he had enough confidence in himself.

Instead, he knew that if he were like the other children and only stayed in the outskirts of the island to search for a relatively low quality Soul Pet, perhaps only if he had plentiful knowledge and perception would he be able to obtain one of the first 10 spots in the competition

Nevertheless, even after overcoming this challenge, he wouldn't be far from death. This was because the White Nightmare in his

body was much more terrifying than a Cyan Nightmare. Without a powerful Soul Pet, there would be severe limitations to Chu Mu's ability to raise his own body's strength.

It wasn't that Chu Mu wanted to build a solid foundation with a good Soul Pet and slowly but surely allow himself to become stronger. Instead, it was that he fundamentally couldn't lower his own requirements. He also absolutely could not put his own position on the same level with the other children on Cyan Nightmare Island.

He had already been forced onto a road of death. The only option that he had was to fight to live on the field of death!

Chapter 5: Bramble Demon

Chu Mu had received a very well-rounded education ever since he was born. This included physical exercise, so though it had been very challenging to run through the rough terrain, Chu Mu could still withstand it.

Chu Mu advanced along a small stream. The stream was formed by the snow on top of the sword-like mountain in the middle of the island. By walking against the water's flow, Chu Mu wouldn't get lost anymore.

"Mandy Monster?" Chu Mu suddenly slowed down, staring intently at a soul pet that was drinking 100 meters away.

Mandy Monsters had a trunk much like that of a lizard; with a pink body and sharp ears, they were part of the Beast Type of the Beast World. The Mandy Monsters were a short range fighter that excelled in defense and power while weaker in speed and agility.

"The Species Rank of the Mandy Monster should be around Medium."

A Soul Pet's power was decided by its stages, and stages could be improved through fighting, among other methods. As long as they were trained well, they could always be improved. From the first stage, to the fourth stage, to the ninth stage, and even higher.

Thus, stages weren't an accurate measure of a soul pet's potential

and quality. “Species rank” was the most important indicator.

Species rank showed the species advantage of a soul pet.

Two soul pets could both be at the fifth stage, yet the soul pet with a species rank of Medium would be much stronger than the soul pet with a species rank of Low. This was an inherent advantage. It was like comparing a tiger and a dog. No matter how well you trained a dog, it would be still be hard for it to defeat a tiger.

Mandy Monsters were a popular choice. After all, Medium soul pets were usually easier to control and rose through stages quickly.

However, Chu Mu didn’t think highly of this rank. Mandy Monsters had a lot of restrictions, such as their slow speed; if it met a soul pet that was agile or could cast spells, it would lose without a doubt.

Chu Mu didn’t plan on lingering around this Mandy Monster. Mandy Monsters were quite mild, so if Chu Mu didn’t bother it, he wouldn’t get attacked.

As Chu Mu walked past the Mandy Monster, it pulled its head out of the water, its big eyes watching Chu Mu. Seeing that Chu Mu had no other intentions, it went back to drinking from the stream.

“Second Soul Pact, Capture!!”

Suddenly, a bright voice sounded out fervently!

Chu Mu immediately looked towards that place and saw a kid of his size trying to cast a soul pact.

Chu Mu knew this person. He was called Ge Sen and had brown hair with pale skin and freckles.

“Hehe, don’t even try to fight over it with me!” Though Ge Sen didn’t say anything, he could see the smug smile the guy was emanating, happy about casting his soul pact first.

Chu Mu smiled coldly and decisively walked away faster.

Once a soul pact was cast, there would be two results: One result was that the soul pet would become the trainer’s, and the other was that the soul pet would become enraged.

Though this particular Mandy Monster’s rank was Low, from its appearance, it seemed to be at at least the fourth stage. Being a fully healthy soul pet, the chances that the weak Ge Sen could capture it were less than 1%. And the consequences of failing was obviously…

“HAOOOO!!!”

Sure enough, the Mandy Monster was enraged, frenzily rampaging through the undergrowth towards Ge Sen.

Ge Sen's smug smile instantly got wiped off of his face, and he ran, panicking, further into the undergrowth.

Chu Mu glanced at the messy undergrowth and laughed silently, ignoring the kid. As he advanced, the commotion slowly became distant.

Chu Mu prepared plenty of food and water for this long trek. The first day, Chu Mu advanced about 7 to 8 kilometers before the sky became dark.

Chu Mu hid within a small granite cave, blocking the entrance with rocks to prevent more savage soul pets from eating him.

In the night, Chu Mu started cultivating. Soul pet trainers mainly trained their soul power. Soul power was the source of energy, as well as the source of Chu Mu's life.

On the morning of the second day, Chu Mu continued his trek. According to the foremen, the tall thorny areas were the dividing lines between the inside and the outsides parts of the island.

Chu Mu had long ago prepared his machete, hacking an entire road through the thorny undergrowth.

The thorny forest was at least 200 meters long with trees the height height of 3 to 4 meters, which was higher than some of the village walls. Chu Mu was small, so there were some places where

he could fit right through.

In the thorny forest, people could get hurt no matter how careful they were. Soon, Chu Mu had new wounds, and his blood was dripping onto the ground.

“Huhu”

(TL: Meant to be the sound of something whistling through the air or rustling through the undergrowth)

Suddenly, a weird sound came from beside Chu Mu’s ears.

Chu Mu slowed down to a stop, suppressing his breathing.

“Huhuhu” The soft sound was heard again! Chu Mu laid down on his stomach, barely able to breath!

Suddenly, Chu Mu felt something at his ankles!

Chu Mu quickly turned around to find a green snake like creature to coil around his ankle!

“Ahhhhh!!!” Before Chu Mu could react, he was pulled down and dragged along the ground into the depths of the forest.

Through the rough dragging he also saw the true identity of this green snake-like creature.

It wasn't a snake, it was a moving thorn vine!

"Bramble Demon!" Two words immediately surfaced into Chu Mu's head.

The bramble demon is a vine type creature in the Plant Kingdom. Only growing in thorny forests, it specializes in capturing creatures trekking through the forest. It is one of the more common carnivorous creatures of the Plant Kingdom.

Chu Mu knew that the moment he got pulled to the main body of the Bramble Demon, he would be dissected.

Without much time to think in the face of danger, Chu Mu quickly grasped his machete tightly, curled his body up, and facing the pain of brambles tearing through his face, he swung towards the tentacle!

Chu Mu used lots of force in this swing, so the vine snapped accordingly, leaking green fluid out of its amputated vine.

Kicking away the wriggling vine, Chu Mu didn't dare to tarry any longer. Holding his machete, he quickly crawled through the thorny forest, escaping from the clutches of the Bramble Demon!

Darting madly through the forest, the sharp brambles kept cutting Chu Mu, but he didn't dare to stop for a single second.

The boundless forest seemed to have no end. Chu Mu already felt so tired to the point that he couldn't breath.

A few bright rays of sunlight flashed past, and the thorn forest finally became sparse. Chu Mu finally escaped the green grasps of the thorn forest, coming out far from unscathed.

"Good thing that the Bramble Demon was only stage two. If it were two more stages higher, with two more vines, I would have been in real danger!"

Chu Mu crouched behind a big rock, breathing heavily while thinking to himself with lingering fear.

The Bramble Demon's Species Rank was Low, even lower than the Mandy Monster. However, the Bramble Demon was one of the more aggressive Plant Kingdom soul pets, with a strong early stage and a speedy improvement in ranks. If anyone caught this Bramble Demon, they would be able to get it to rank 7 or 8 within three months, so getting top ten wouldn't be a problem at all for them.

In reality, the Bramble Demon Chu Mu met was very likely to be caught. However, it's Species Rank was too low; though it had a strong early stage, it had no potential.

Chu Mu decisively gave up trying to catch the Bramble Demon.

Chapter 6: Trapping And Capturing A Soul Pet

His entire body was covered in bloodstains, and Chu Mu didn't dare do anything else too extreme. After all, myriads of Soul Pets had extremely acute senses of smell; for example, the terrifying and savage Hunting Wolf.

The Hunting Wolf's rank was High and it was even slightly stronger than the Mandy Monster. As long as someone managed to obtain one, even if its aptitude was average, once it reached at least the 7th stage, the person could definitely enter the top ten .

As for the inferior Bramble Demon, even if it reached the Ninth stage, it most likely would still have problems defeating a seventh stage high ranking Hunting Wolf.

Chu Mu found a hidden region and rested there for a day while he spent the time treating his own wounds.

The effects of the healing medicine were remarkable and Chu Mu was soon able to stand up.

On the third day, Chu Mu had finally, truly, entered the inner island. Chu Mu continued to walk forward with particular caution. If he were to encounter any Soul Pet en route, it would be much more terrifying than any of the foremen's Hunting Wolves. If he were to capture such a Soul Pet, he would definitely be able to sweep away his opponents.

However, these Soul Pets were all incomparably savage, so before capturing one, Chu Mu didn't even dare to closely approach one.

"Double Headed Snake, Gulan Nisi, Fire Fox, Ten Legged Poison Centipede, Macaque Demon... alas, I can't approach any one of them. They are all above the seventh stage..."

Hiding on a tree, watching the Soul Pets walking under the tree today, Chu Mu would incessantly let out a bitter laugh. The ranking of these Soul Pets were mostly High or Medium. Unfortunately, Chu Mu could only watch helplessly as the rope trap in his hands was never actually triggered.

A trap was currently Chu Mu's only method of dealing with Soul Pets stronger than him.

However, Chu Mu's handmade trap was only limited to high level Soul Pets of the third stage and under. Just now, all of them had pretty much been at a level higher than that of the seventh stage, and had strength that could rival the Hunting Wolves. Chu Mu's shabby trap would not be able to contain these ferocious monsters.

Patience...Chu Mu needed to have utmost patience.

"That's weird, how could there be such a weak Soul Pet wandering about here?"

Suddenly, a weak and small Soul Pet appeared in Chu Mu's field of vision. According to Chu Mu's estimate, it was most likely at the first stage.

This small animal had beautiful reddish brown fur and had a gorgeous fox-like tail; its body was clearly somewhat small and exquisite. This young fox had evidently been drawn to Chu Mu's trap by the food that lay there. Looking at its appearance, it had also sustained an injury as it cautiously hobbled over and reached for the food on the trap.

"Reddish brown fur... It should be a Red Cloud Fox... It's forehead has a silver crescent moon imprint... Weird, isn't this an imprint only Silver Moon Foxes possess? Could it be that this young animal is a mixed breed?" Chu Mu softly muttered to himself.

Chu Mu didn't trigger the trap. Despite this small animal truly being at a relatively low stage, its ranking was very low. No matter if it was a Red Cloud Fox or a Silver Moon Fox, they were both of lower rankings.

This sort of a Soul Pet couldn't be considered a battle Soul Pet. In major cities, they normally would become small house pets for girls to cuddle with as they slept.

Chu Mu renounced triggering the trap and waited for the small half-breed to take the food, before dropping another piece of food onto the trap with the rope. He continued to wait...

After continuously waiting on the tree for three days, Chu Mu didn't encounter any satisfactory Soul Pets.

At daybreak, Chu Mu gnawed on his breakfast rations and decided that if he didn't encounter a Soul Pet that met his requirements during the morning, he would take a risk and enter an even deeper area. There, he would search for a suitable place.

"Sha Sha"

Suddenly, the faint sound of leaves rustling disseminated in Chu Mu's ears.

The tree Chu Mu was on was called the Long Leafed Tree. Ipso facto, there were a few Soul Pets that enjoyed resting here; for example, the Macaque Demon that Chu Mu had seen earlier.

Aside from the Macaque Demon, there were also the Cyan Bird and the Wind Spirit Butterfly.

The rank of the Macaque Demon was approximately that of the High rank. The Cyan Bird was also at the high rank, and the strongest was the Wind Spirit Butterfly. Its rank placed it as a superior existence among beasts.

The lowest requirement for Chu Mu was a Soul Pet at the high rank. As for the question about a Soul Pet's aptitude, Chu Mu could only rely on luck. If he were able to obtain a Cyan Bird or Wind Spirit Butterfly, Chu Mu could pretty much return to his residence

and begin to train his Soul Pet.

There was an important reason as to why Chu Mu chose to climb the Long Leafed Tree. It was because the Macaque Demon, Cyan Bird, and Wind Spirit Butterfly that dwelled on this tree would not take the initiative to attack humans, so it was relatively safe.

Therefore, when he heard the rustling noise, Chu Mu was not fearful, but instead happy, because there was a chance that one of these three Soul Pets could appear.

After brushing aside the long leaves, Chu Mu immediately found the origin of the sound.

In front of Chu Mu wasn't a robust and muscular macaque, nor was it a free and leisurely Cyan Bird. It wasn't even a graceful and beautiful Wind Spirit Butterfly. Instead, to Chu Mu's great disappointment, it was a small cyan insect.

The cyan insect was very small and was only as long as Chu Mu's palm and as wide as his thumb. It had a pair of shiny black eyes.

At this moment, the shiny black eyes of the small pest greedily eyed the rations in Chu Mu's hand...

"……" Chu Mu was speechless. He let out a bitter laugh and broke off a small part of his rations. He gave it to the wretched small cyan insect and said, "Go ahead and eat it; however, you must bring me good luck."

This small cyan insect fundamentally wasn't even considered a Soul Pet and had upset Chu Mu's prior expectations.

The small wood eating insect was not fearful of others and after taking the small piece of ration, it stayed adjacent to Chu Mu while contentedly gnawing on it.

The small wood eating insect's gnawing speed was extremely quick. It let out a pleasant sounding rustling noise and after finishing the ration, propped up its body and pitifully stared at Chu Mu.

Chu Mu didn't care for such a small amount of rations and once again handed over another piece in a bored manner. The small cyan insect let out a noise of elation and speedily began gnawing.

"Yi!"

Suddenly, an irregular gale arose and something clearly swayed at the top of the Long Leafed tree. The leaves of the tree chaotically swayed as they fell all over the place.

Chu Mu was startled and after his gaze penetrated the Long Leafed Tree's leaves, he suddenly discovered a slightly large eagle Soul Pet with cyan colored feathers as it orbited the Long Leafed Tree!

"A Cyan Bird!!" Chu Mu was overjoyed!

Cyan Birds were a wing type Soul Pet of the Beast World. The superiority of their wings along with their ability to control the wind allowed them to be virtually unmatched among others at their stage and rank.

Nimble, flying, and wind type Soul Pets; if he were to capture it, after three months of upgrading its strength and raising it to the seventh stage, he definitely could rank among the best!

“Shashasha~~”

The small cyan insect felt the Cyan Bird’s aura and so scared that it shook from head to toe. Its climbing speed was unexpectedly quick as it immediately crawled up Chu Mu’s arm onto his shoulder. Subsequently, it hid in the collar of Chu Mu’s shirt.

“Abominable, this one possesses at least the fourth stage of strength. Its ranking is High, and it’s at the fourth stage…” Seeing the free and easy cyan silhouette causing the gale on the Long Leaf Tree as it circled around, Chu Mu incessantly swore.

The trap Chu Mu had dug was meant to deal with Soul Pets on the ground. If he wanted to obtain the Cyan Bird, the difficulty was truly somewhat large.

“No matter what, I must try!” Chu Mu didn’t want to forsake this opportunity and pried apart the branches before climbing to the very top of the tree.

Stepping on a sturdy tree branch, Chu Mu's two hands tightened around his machete. He breathed in a deep breath of air and met the biting cold of the gale head on. His eyes unwaveringly stared at the Cyan Bird circling around the tree!

Chapter 7: Surpassing 9th Stage Organism

"Zhizhi~"

Chu Mu crouched and borrowed the sturdiness of the branch to leap into the air. He flew towards the Cyan Bird and raised the machete in his arm.

Almost there!

Chu Mu's judgement was extremely accurate and the machete fell precisely on the Cyan Bird's trajectory.

"Yi!!" The Cyan Bird let out a sharp cry. Just as Chu Mu's machete was about to chop down onto its body, the Cyan Bird's wings flapped and its speed suddenly increased!

Chu Mu only saw the cyan colored figure slip past him and the machete filled with all his effort only managed to scrape the Cyan Bird's tail, brushing off a cyan colored feather.

"Extreme Speed. This Cyan Bird is a freak!" Chu Mu's expression completely changed as he didn't expect that the Cyan Bird would have already learned Extreme Speed, which was an ability that momentarily increased its speed!

After the machete swung through the air, Chu Mu fell from a height of nearly 10 meters; fortunately, he fell on a soft grass

patch. To alleviate the force of impact, Chu Mu did a roll when he landed.

Lifting his head, Chu Mu looked at the Cyan Bird with regret.

Generally speaking, only Cyan Birds who reached the sixth stage were able to use Extreme Speed a sort of flying stunt.

The feathered crest of the Cyan Bird in front of him was clearly only at the fourth stage of strength, but it was still able to perform a sixth stage technique. This meant that the aptitude of this Cyan Bird was extremely high.

High ranking and high aptitude simply made for an extremely perfect battle Soul Pet. If he could capture it, he could definitely defeat the others on the island.

“Yi!!”

Suddenly, the Cyan Bird let out a bird cry and the cyan silhouette gorgeously swooped down from the sky!

“Crap!” Chu Mu abruptly realized that he had angered the Cyan Bird and he grabbed his machete while running towards a thick shrub in an attempt to preserve his life!

“Huhuhuhu!!” An intense gale erupted behind Chu Mu and it became hard to breathe. The crushed rock on the grass began to fly everywhere.

“Tornado...holy!” Chu Mu turned around and astonishingly discovered a 3 meter tall spiral of air that swept away everything as it rushed towards him. The grass and shrubs were pulled out of the ground and tore up everything around Chu Mu.

A three meter tall tornado was enough to throw a 100 kilogram body 5-6 meters into the air. If he were to fall from this height, even if he didn’t die, he would at least sustain a heavy injury.

The surrounding stream of air became as sharp as a knife as the tornado was only 10 meters away from Chu Mu. He felt a heavy suction force pull him towards the tornado!

“Hou!”

Suddenly, a cow-like sound echoed from within the forest. Immediately after, in between Chu Mu and the tornado, an organism covered in heavy armor appeared.

As the tornado passed through the heavily armored organism, this heavily armored Soul Pet was only raised a few inches off the ground.

This Soul Pet had an enormous body and the tornado didn’t have a large effect on it. It only incessantly curled up around its body.

The heavy armored organism was lifted off of the ground and whirled around a few times before slowly descending onto the

ground again. As for the tornado, after being obstructed by such a heavy object, it ultimately slowly dissipated.

“Nido Beast! What a timely appearance!” Seeing the rhinoceros like Soul Pet with layers of armor, Chu Mu let out a sigh of relief.

Nido Beasts were Soul Pets with both absolute strength and absolute defense. It’s ranking was High rank, and looking at the external characteristics of this Nido Beast, this one was at least at the eighth stage.

“Hou!!”

The Nido Beast had clearly been accidentally provoked by the Cyan Bird. It opened its mouth and spat out a sonic boom at the Cyan Bird.

The sonic boom blew up the Cyan Bird’s left wing and caused it to reel backwards!

“Pupu” the Cyan Bird fell onto the peak of the tree and smashed its head.

The Cyan Bird seemed to be aware of the Nido Beast’s ferociousness and didn’t dare approach it. It viciously eyed Chu Mu, but had no option but to flap its wings and fly away.

“A High rank Soul Pet truly isn’t something easy to capture.” Watching the Cyan Bird leave, Chu Mu helplessly shook his head

and felt quite regretful.

After the eruption of the tornado,the small forest was clearly in a somewhat chaotic state and Chu Mu was scared that he was still being watched by the angry Cyan Bird. He had no choice but to search for a new area to put down his trap.

Fortunately, his journey was relatively safe, and Chu Mu didn't bump into any savage Soul Pets. he smoothly found a new hiding spot and after laying down his trap, he began another round of waiting.

"Those fellow should have already started raising their Soul Pet's strength..." Chu Mu couldn't help but talk to himself. In order to obtain a good Soul Pet, Chu Mu had to have both courage and patience.

One day of waiting didn't reap any harvests. Chu Mu propped himself on a tree branch and his gaze was fixed on the bright moon in the sky. His expression was quite bleak and he subconsciously rubbed his chest.

The Nightmare in his body still existed. This caused Chu Mu's every breath to feel somewhat stifled. Moreover, Chu Mu had already faintly felt that the Nightmare was about to enter the third stage of strength. This signified that he was one step closer to death.

"I don't know how much longer I can live for..." After muttering to himself, Chu Mu closed his eyes and took a small nap.

Chu Mu, sleeping on the tree trunk, was enveloped by a haze. It seemed as if his head had been covered by a specter. If one looked at him, he looked even more lonely and helpless.

Another three days of waiting passed.

He woke up early in the morning and when he opened his eyes, Chu Mu was startled. His hazy eyes instantly dilated!

Gila Monster!!

His heart made a “Pudong…Pudong” sound as it beat!

Facing an organism that was at least two meters tall, two meters long and at the super strong ninth stage, Chu Mu’s breath nearly stopped!

The Gila Monster was often referred to as a Fire Iguana and was the Beast World’s-Beast Type’s-Iguana species Soul Pet. It was a fire attribute, and possessed fire type attacks. The fire spit from its mouth was enough to burn one of the foremen’s Hunting Wolves to death.

Aside from this, the Gila Monster possessed an exceptional defense. It’s external layer was composed of keratin armor and this layer of armor probably wouldn’t even be broken by ten Hunting Wolves gnawing on it for an hour. There wouldn’t even be any injuries!

Chu Mu didn't even have any intention of capturing this sort of a Soul Pet. After all, this Gila Monster didn't only have a High species rank, but it's strength was at the super strong ninth stage!

Its enormous body crawled down from Chu Mu's side and completely disregarded his trap. It further ignored Chu Mu's bait and leisurely walked past the large tree with a lofty air.

A fiery hot breath attack arrived, causing Chu Mu to be drenched in sweat, but he didn't dare to move an inch!

The Gila Monster stopped for a brief moment before continuing its journey and proceeded to walk forwards.

Seeing the Gila Monster leave, Chu Mu let out a large sigh of relief. His gaze fell on the nearly four meter long Soul Pet. Chu Mu was somewhat gloomy; if he were able to capture it, not only would he be able to defeat all the other opponents in the competition, he would also be able to escape the grasps of those people...

Only, it was a pity this hope probably wouldn't ever bear to fruition.

"Sousou~~"

Just as he let out his sigh, suddenly, Chu Mu heard a faint trembling noise.

Chapter 8: Species Mutation, Moonlight Fox

“A Gila Monster was just here, and this soul pet still dares to pass by. Is it another fierce one?” Chu Mu guessed secretly.

The Gila Monster that surpassed stage 9 was still not far off. This type of creature had its own unique odor, able to scare away weaker soul pets.

The bush rustled a bit. After a moment, a delicate little soul pet crawled out.

This soul pet glanced vigilantly at the wriggling Gila Monster ahead, and slowly walked towards the food……

“Blue Star Fox, another little fox……”Chu Mu looked at the little guy, a bit speechless.

At the trap was a Blue Star Fox even smaller than the previous young foxes. Including the tail, it was no longer than forty centimeters.

And judging by its sparse fur, it should be still young. Using human standards, it was equivalent to a child that just learned how to walk.

“A Blue Star Fox should be a bit higher ranking than the Red Cloud Fox. Too bad it's still only good for being a pet for

girls……”Chu Mu laughed bitterly and shook his head, looking helplessly at the little guy that's was taking his bait.

When the little guy took the bait from Chu Mu, it even checked the surrounding again-clearly a clever little soul pet.

“Not too strong, just too weak. Ai……” Chu Mu’s heart was hopeless as well as he broke off a piece of ration and handed it to the little cyan bug standing on his shoulder.

The little cyan bug happily took the ration and started nibbling it. “Sha sha sha”.

The wait was always hard to bear. Chu Mu didn’t drive the little cyan bug away, keeping it as a little companion. Also, the little bug didn’t even count as a soul pet, but it had a very high vigilance. Every time there was a strong soul pet, the little bug would always alert Chu Mu.

Chu Mu waited several more days to no avail, so Chu Mu had to switch to another place.

“What…..What’s happening, did I bother an entire fox’s nest, how is there another young fox?!”

The fifteenth day came, and Chu Mu saw another young fox come and take his food!!

Chu Mu’s bait were soul core shards from soul pets. These soul

cores originated from soul pets, so to most normal soul pets, this was delicious food.

Chu Mu had a limited amount of soul core shards, and not nearly enough for every little fox to take some.

Finally, Chu Mu couldn't take it any longer. When another young little Moonlight Fox tried to steal his soul core shards again, he firmly triggered his trap!

"Wuu~~"The young moonlight fox immediately realized the danger and unexpectedly reacted swiftly. The moment the trap sank, it used its tiny claws to grab onto a tree root buried deep in the ground, hanging itself about 50 centimeters from the top of the hole-like trap.

"Sousou!!!"The young Moonlight Fox was very agile. Using the corners of the trap, it bounced back and forth until it reached ground level.

Chu Mu stared blankly for a bit; This young Moonlight fox was at most an infant, yet it was this agile! That trap was set for stage three soul pets!

"Shashasha!!!"

Just when Chu Mu thought the little guy was going to escape, the little bug on Chu Mu's shoulder suddenly made a noise. Right afterwards, strings of white silk spewed out of the little cyan bug's

mouth!

The white silk very accurately tangled the Moonlight Fox mid flight. The Moonlight Fox panicked and fell down, right onto the edge of the trap.

“Pew” The cyan bug continuously spewed out white sticky silk, bundling the Moonlight Fox tightly in layers, cutting off any chance of escape the young fox had.

The young fox struggled continuously to try to escape the silk, but though it was fast, it’s strength was too small, and it couldn’t struggle free. Soon, it was out of energy.

Chu Mu looked slightly awestruck at the big eyed little bug, then looked at the trapped fox and couldn’t help but start laughing. He patted his little buddy and said, “Good job. Didn’t know you could spew silk as well, you indeed bring me luck.”

The little cyan bug started wiggling its body, radiating a cute air of superiority.

Chu Mu rewarded another piece of ration to the cyan bug and walked in front of the fox. He decisively picked the little beast up and crawled back up the tree.

Strong soul pets often roam the grounds, so Chu Mu didn’t dare to stay there for long.

The little fox laid there, its eyes constantly spinning and showing unconformity, waiting for the slightest opportunity to escape.

“Hmm, strange...why does this one also have a silver moon mark?” Chu Mu quickly noticed the mark on the Moonlight Fox’s forehead.

In the Beast Kingdom - Beast Type - Fox Species, only the Silver Moon Fox has a silver moon shaped mark on their forehead.

And the reason the Moonlight Fox was called Moonlight Fox was because it had the ability to absorb moonlight and convert it power.

Chu Mu remembers the first time he met a fox, it was a mix between a Red Cloud Fox and a Silver Moon Fox, with a Species Rank of Low.

The second time he met a Blue Star fox, which was also ranked as Low, but slightly higher than the Red Cloud Fox. Chu Mu vaguely remembered seeing a silver moon mark as well, but he didn’t care about it at the time.

The third time, he met this Moonlight Fox, which was ranked Medium. What confuddled Chu Mu the most was that this one had a silver moon mark as well.

“Moon shaped marks should only be owned by the Silver Moon Fox, how do all three young foxes have it? Could it be? All the

three foxes are really the same one?”

“Same one…That can’t be possible, the three foxes are all of a different species, they can’t be the same…”

Chu Mu was only speaking without thought. In reality, though Red Cloud Fox, Blue Star Fox, and Moonlight Fox are all foxes, they were of a different species, so they couldn’t be the same.

Soul pets were born into a species forever, this doesn't change….

Of course, there's always a very special exception….

A soul pets’ quality was determined by their Species rank, and that differs by species, so it couldn’t be changed.

But in the realm of soul pets, there's a very very very rare situation ----- It’s called Species Mutation!

Theoretically all soul pets could continuously improve, like a High ranked Hunting Wolf improving from stage 1 to higher stages.

But, every soul pet had a limit; even if its stage was still increasing, because of the limitations of their species, their power would only increase minutely.

And at that time, those with Mutant blood had a very small

chance of having a species mutation, mutating from a lower ranking species to a higher one!

Once, Chu Mu had heard about this before. A very potent Hunting Wolf had mutated into a stronger Fear Wolf.

The Species Rank of a Fear Wolf was much higher than that of a Hunting Wolf. A stage six Fear Wolf could defeat three stage six Hunting Wolves!

Mutations were miracles of the soul pet realm, and it was also the biggest surprise a soul pet trainer could get!

Chapter 9: Soul Pact; Obtaining A Mutated Soul Pet

“This small fellow couldn’t be a mutation, right? Chu Mu grabbed the small fox in front of him and carefully examined it.

“Even if it is a mutation, it should only have mutated from a Red Cloud Fox to a Blue Star Fox. How did it suddenly change into a Moonlight Fox? Unless this small fellow didn’t only mutate once, but mutated twice in this period of time.”

Chu Mu continued to talk to himself, but as he kept talking, his voice grew softer and softer.

Chu Mu was speaking without seriousness and didn’t actually believe that there was a Soul Pet on this planet that could continuously mutate. After all, species mutations were already extremely uncommon. As for continuous species mutations... this was simply equivalent to an ultra strong Soul Pet whose species rank was able to infinitely upgrade.

However, speaking to himself in this manner, Chu Mu was suddenly aware of an extremely important question. This had to do with the silver moon mark on the other Red Cloud Fox and Blue Star Fox’s heads!!

“The Soul Pet Mutations Book has a description that Soul Pets with species mutations will have a place on their body where a mark of their original species will be left.”

Chu Mu's expression had already changed from nonchalant to serious. He was also slowly becoming overwhelmed with shock!

"Mutated...Mutated...Mutated Soul Pets, or is it a....a Soul Pet with continuous mutations?!!"

Chu Mu remembered the first time he saw the Red Cloud Fox, its tail had a trace of a wound. In order to confirm his guess, Chu Mu hastily grabbed the tail of the fox and brushed apart its fur.

A shallow scar!! Chu Mu stood on the spot, dumbfounded. He was still somewhat unwilling to believe that the wound was in the same spot.

"A Continuous Mutation Soul Pet... it truly is a Soul Pet with continuous mutations... Am I dreaming..."

At the moment, Chu Mu's heart was boiled in passion and he felt as if his entire body was billowing in heat waves!!

To most Soul Pets, the ability to mutate once was a luxury good. As for him, he had inadvertently encountered a Soul Pet with the ability to continuously mutate. This was a priceless treasure !!

A Soul Pet with continuous mutations had unlimited potential and infinite room for its strength to grow!

A Cyan Bird with High ranking and High aptitude, or even an Ultra High ranking Gila Monster was fundamentally unable to compare to a Soul Pet with continuous mutations!

Chu Mu didn't remember the last time he had laughed in such a carefree manner like today!!

"Mutated Soul Pet, Continuous Mutation Soul Pet, hahahahaha!!"

The sultry tears fell onto his cheek.

In the past year, Chu Mu's innermost being was incomparably desolate. This was because from the start to finish, his life was suspended in someone else's fingertips. If this person were to so much as slightly move his fingertip, Chu Mu would face the cruelest death possible.

Every person on the island was struggling at the edge of life and death. Chu Mu had already stepped into the gates of hell and the devil in his body was incessantly developing.

Chu Mu knew that he wasn't very far away from his date with death.

To others, greeting death required courage, but to Chu Mu, one needed even more courage-so much so that it couldn't even be classified as simply as courage!

Being forced onto a road of death, the only path to survival was to fight.

Having forced his way into the extremely dangerous inner island, Chu Mu had also decided that this was his only chance at survival!

As expected, in the dangerous region, Chu Mu had obtained the greatest hope for life!

It was a Soul Pet that could continuously mutate! As long as he nurtured it with the utmost care, he could definitely roam the world with ease!

Chu Mu wiped the corners of his eyes, gradually subdued the burning passion in his heart.

Chu Mu also knew that it still wasn't the time to be happy. Even if he had a Soul Pet that could continuously mutate, he still needed to cultivate it one step at a time in order to let him become stronger and stronger.

The first thing he needed to do was sign a Soul Pact.

Chu Mu looked face to face with the small fox and discovered that even though this small fellow had been completely restricted by the white thread, it was still thinking of a method to free itself. From the small Moonlight Fox's eyes, Chu Mu saw unwillingness and tenaciousness resonate throughout the fox.

No matter what sort of a temperament this Moonlight Fox had, Chu Mu absolutely had to capture it!

Chu Mu closed his eyes and began to draw out his Soul. He expedited the Soul Force in his body and opened his Soul Pact energy.

“Fourth Soul Pact, open!”

A light blue, peculiar halo appeared on Chu Mu’s hand; it was composed of a circulating gorgeous luster.

Chu Mu lightly placed his palm on the Moonlight Fox’s body. The light blue halo immediately coiled around the Moonlight Fox.

The Moonlight Fox’s eyes revealed a somewhat frightened expression as it began to frantically began try to free itself. Only, the white flexible web spit out by the Cyan Insect was extremely strong. The small and weak fox was unable to free itself.

The Soul Pact Halo continued to circulate in a brilliant manner, like flowing water. However, following the Moonlight Fox’s struggles, the light blue Soul Pact Halo became dimmer.

The rays of light grew continuously dimmer and ultimately, the light blue Soul Pact Halo disappeared.

The disappearance of the light blue halo signified that the Soul Pact this time didn’t succeed. This Soul Pet further harbored an

extremely intense intention to resist, and did not accept Chu Mu's Soul Pact at all.

Chu Mu also knew that the chances of him succeeding on the first try wasn't large. Fortunately, the White Nightmare was currently asleep, and the Soul Force in his body was full enough to attempt 10 Soul Pacts.

Chu Mu continued to draw out his Soul and consume the Soul Force in his body. He once again released the light blue Soul Pact Halo.

The halo curled around the Moonlight Fox's body. Suffering from the Soul's irritation, the Moonlight Fox immediately exposed an indignant and pained expression. It tried to struggle again and not long after, the light blue Soul Pact Halo disappeared again.

There was no way Chu Mu would easily renounce this chance and he continued to use his Soul Pact strength.

After several attempts at capturing it with a Soul Pact, Chu Mu wasn't able to subdue this Soul Pet.

On the seventh try, Chu Mu didn't immediately perform his Soul Pact; instead, he attentively gazed at the incessantly obstinate Moonlight Fox and said: "Small fellow, I know that you don't want to be captured by anyone, but you're currently too weak. It's extremely hard to survive in the inner island and there's a chance that you'll be slaughtered while you're in this exceptionally young phase. You probably don't want such a depressing end, right? You

long to become strong, and I am someone who can bring you to stand at the very pinnacle of this world!

“Receive my Soul Pact!!”

Chu Mu spoke very earnestly because he believed that Soul Pets were able to understand the human language.

After speaking, Chu Mu performed his seventh Soul Pact. He placed his palm on the Moonlight Fox’s body; the light blue halo once again coiled around its body…

Chapter 10: The First Fight, Bramble Demon

This time, the moonlight fox didn't show as much resistance as before. Instead, it used its beautiful eyes to watch Chu Mu.

Soul pets were like humans, they all had their own thoughts and emotions. Currently, Chu Mu could see a glimmer of hesitation and blankness, as if it was trying to decide whether or not it should trust Chu Mu.

Additionally, the process of a soul pact was slightly restrictive and forceful, so as soon as the Moonlight Fox showed a sign of hesitation, the soul pact halo became brighter!

The light blue halo slowly closed in as the Moonlight Fox's resistance grew smaller, starting to imprint on the young fox's soul.

Slowly, the Moonlight Fox stopped resisting, and the light blue glow eased itself into the Moonlight Fox's body, becoming a mark that belonged only to Chu Mu and imprinted itself onto the Moonlight fox's soul.

"Wu"

The Moonlight fox let out a weak gasp, giving off a light blue glow from its body.

The glow covered its body, and it's fine body slowly dissipated in front of Chu Mu under the blue glow.

Soul pet trainers had their own soul pet space where they can hold their pets. Whenever they signed a soul pact with a pet, they could, through their thoughts, summon their soul pet to and from their soul pet space.

The summoning and recalling of soul pets all required soul power. Though he didn't have much soul power left, Chu Mu still eagerly summoned his first battle soul pet in front of him.

A light blue glow gradually appeared. Wrapped inside was an elegant and beautiful body, with a pretty and fluffy tail waving to and fro, and a pair of intelligent eyes gazing at Chu Mu, which was as enchanting as moonlight.

The Moonlight Fox's gaze was different from before. In the place of blankness and suspicion, there was now meekness and gentleness.

Seeing the first soul pet he captured, Chu Mu couldn't help but start laughing. This was a soul pet with unlimited potential; it could evolve from Medium to High, or even more. This also meant that Chu Mu's destiny changed drastically with this soul pet!

"Wu"

The Moonlight Fox let out a weak sound of complaint, looking

miserable. It wriggled its cute body around, trying to struggle free of the white silk that still coiled around it.

Chu Mu brought out his knife and strenuously cut all the resilient white silk. Then, he gathered the little fluffy guy into his arms and started stroking its fur.

The Moonlight Fox seemed to enjoy this caressing, reluctant to leave Chu Mu's embrace and showing dependence. It used its tiny tongue to lick Chu Mu's cheek.

Seeing this young Moonlight Fox showing intimacy already, Chu Mu guessed that this young fox's age and wisdom wasn't that high, and that it survived on this treacherous island simply by instinct and tenacity. For a young soul pet, this couldn't have been easy; it's growth must have been very arduous.

"Little guy, you must have been orphaned at a very young age. But, don't worry about it. We'll be mutually dependent upon each other in the future, and you no longer have to fight by yourself……Speaking of which, let me get you a name first." Chu Mu grinned sheepishly. This smile was the first time in many years that Chu Mu had smiled from the depths of his heart.

In reality, Chu Mu was just like the little fox who struggled to survive in the inner island. Now, though, Chu Mu was no longer fighting by himself.

"I remember a weapon called Mo Xie. Beautiful and gentle when still, but sharp and deadly when moving-just like you. Let's call

you Mo Xie, it fits the sly little fox you are."

"Wu~~" As if it didn't like Chu Mu calling it sly, it cried out, unsatisfied.

"Hmm, I meant wise……"

The little fox immediately extended its smooth little tongue and started licking Chu Mu. Chu Mu laughed at that, thinking that the little guy not only had potential, but was also very interesting.

Obtaining a pet that was more than satisfying, Chu Mu now had the confidence to leave this dangerous inner island.

Of course, even on the return journey, Chu Mu didn't dare to lower his guard in the slightest. After all, the little Moonlight Fox was still young, still unable to confront strong soul pets at the moment. In fact, Chu Mu had to take on the responsibility to protect the young moonlight fox.

Recalling soul pets didn't take much soul power, but summoning one did. Chu Mu's soul power was still needed to supply the White Nightmare. As a result, he didn't recall Mo Xie. Instead, he brought it and started walking back.

Chu Mu was very meticulous. While entering the inner island, he made a few markings along the way so that he wouldn't lose his way in the dangerous island.

Following the markings he made on the trees, Chu Mu returned to the thorny area again without a hitch.

Chu Mu remembered that there was a stage two Bramble Demon in this thorn forest, so he raised his guard.

Just when he was about to climb over, little Mo Xie suddenly jumped out from Chu Mu's embrace and dashed into the thorn forest.

After signing a soul pact with a soul pet, within a certain distance, the position of the soul pet could be discerned by the soul pet trainer. Chu Mu didn't want a treasure like Mo Xie to have an accident, so he immediately followed.

Mo Xie's body was small, its movements strong and swift, darting through the thorn forest with ease, and not getting scratched the slightest.

Chu Mu followed quickly, soon realizing that little Mo Xie was dashing straight towards the Bramble Demon that attacked him.

"Sosososososo"

When they got near the Bramble Demon's position, Chu Mu heard the sound of the thorn forest wavering and rustling.

Hacking through the thorn forest, he saw the moon coloured figure quickly darting here and there within the dense thorns. Behind it was a vine as thick as a thumb chasing Mo Xie like a

snake. However, compared to little Mo Xie's nimble movements, the chasing vine seemed sluggish.

"Yes, this will be the first battle on our way to becoming the strongest!" When Chu Mu saw the little Mo Xie fight with the Bramble Demon that almost killed him, it sparked his fervor for battle.

As a qualified soul pet trainer, one mustn't personally join the fight. Instead, one must become the controller of the entire battle!

Chapter 11: Growth, Stage Two Moonlight Fox

Bramble Demons were relatively common, so Chu Mu knew them like the back of his hand.

Before, Chu Mu derived that this Bramble Demon was only stage two, with only one vine at its disposal. At that stage, the Bramble Demon's vine was about 15 to 20 meters long. Judging by the elasticity of the vine, it might be able to extend its vine another 10 meters further.

That meant that the Bramble Demon's body should be within 10 meters of little Mo Xie.

Just when Chu Mu was looking for the main body of the Bramble Demon, he noticed the vine retracting rapidly.

"Vine Slash!" The Bramble Demon's vicious attacking ability floated into his mind. If this ability hit little Mo Xie's body, with such a fragile body, Mo Xie would definitely be injured majorly.

Chu Mu immediately stole a glance at Mo Xie. Chu Mu still didn't know what abilities Mo Xie had, so as the Vine Slash was about to come, he was very worried as well!

"Mo Xie, quick, dodge it!"

“Huhu!!!” The vine suddenly sped up, slapping down at Mo Xie!

Little Mo Xie, with Chu Mu’s reminder, was ready for it. Just as the vine was about to hit it, her little body, under the shining of the moon, suddenly gained two blurry shadows!

“Pa!!!!”

The vine slash landed on little Mo Xie’s two blurry shadows. At that moment, dirt and stone shrapnel flew everywhere, and the vines there were all broken!

Chu Mu got anxious; the vine slash’s power was incredible! If it hit him, he might also have been seriously injured.

But Chu Mu was more worried about little Mo Xie.

Under the bright silver moon, only a few rays hit the ground of the thorn forest, with one right under where the vine slash hit.

Dust floated through the moonlight. As the dust cleared, the two elegant blurry shadows disappeared, revealing Mo Xie’s graceful body.

“Moon Shadow!” Chu Mu looked at the little guy who had easily dodged the vine slash, showing surprise.

Moon Shadow was an evasive technique that was cast using the

moonlight. Mo Xie, as a Moonlight Fox, was only stage 1, but she could already cast this spell that normally only stage 3 Moonlight Fox could cast.

Before, Chu Mu met the Cyan Bird that was able to cast techniques beyond its stage, so Chu Mu defined it as a soul pet with high talent.

So, it was true that all soul pets with mutating blood had insane talent.

When the Bramble Demon used vine slash, it revealed itself, and Chu Mu very accurately caught this opportunity.

“Front left, about seven meters, attack its main body!” Chu Mu immediately gave a command.

Little Mo Xie instantly locked on to the Bramble Demon’s location. As the Bramble Demon slowly dragged its tentacle back, the little fox transformed into a silver blur and dashed into the dense vines!

“Gazhi~~~Gazhi~~~~~~”

Soon sounds of branches breaking emitted from that area of the thorn forest, and vines were scattered everywhere.

Chu Mu followed up. When he parted the thorns, he saw little Mo Xie with a broken branch in her mouth, and her claws extended and buried deep within a black-green vine-like soul pet.

Standing on the Bramble Demon with four feet, Mo Xie rose his head proudly and started calling to the moon.

The Bramble Demon was a stage 2 Low rank species, lower than the Moonlight Fox. Though it was a stage higher, if it was found by Mo Xie, then it didn't stand a chance.

"Wuu~~~~~" Mo Xie foxcalled again, and a beam of moonlight hit her, bringing out her graceful and lean body. As this time, her moonlike fur grew longer.

"She grew?" Chu Mu looked at Mo Xie, surprised.

Battling was the fastest and most direct way of letting soul pets grow quickly. Furthermore, growing is just the process at which a weak creature slowly grows and matures!

There is always hostility and competition between soul pets. During a battle, this yearning to defeat the other and the battle itself will refine the body and allow the soul pet to grow.

Growing from stage 1 to stage 2, Mo XIe's fur became even more fluffy and radiant.

"The Moonlight Fox's fur seems to be fully for cosmetics, so her resistance probably didn't increase by much, but she should be more powerful now," Chu Mu thought to himself.

"Kill it, its soul core should be enough to fill you up for a meal."

Chu Mu said to Mo Xie.

Getting permission, Mo Xie's claws ripped through the Bramble Demon and retrieved a drop of something that looked like liquid, but also like a crystal clear piece of amber. It was the soul core of the Bramble Demon.

Soul Pets of different kingdoms had different soul cores. Those in the Plant Kingdom usually had soul cores like this piece of liquid amber.

Eating it for food, Mo Xie probably didn't need food for the next one or two days. She jumped back into Chu Mu's hands, showing signs of fatigue. Yawning cutely, she laid in Chu Mu's hands and looked as if she were going to fall asleep any second.

After Chu Mu finished collecting the vines of the Bramble Demon, he carried little Mo Xie out of the thorn forest.

Outside of the thorn forest was the outer island. Chu Mu let out a breath, found a relatively safe little cave, blocked off the entrance, and spent the night within the cave.

……

The next morning, Chu Mu was woken by a soft and wet feeling on his cheek. Opening his eyes, he saw the beautiful little Mo Xie licking his face, affectionately "Wuu"ing.

Chu Mu patted the little guy and put her on the ground. He used the water within the cave to wash quickly, as well as to take a big gulp. Then, he went and moved the rocks that were blocking the cave aside.

The sun shone on Chu Mu's face, eye-piercing yet warm.

"It's almost noon already……How did I sleep until now" Chu Mu wondered.

Maybe it was because he was tense the entire time he was in the inner island, but the moment he left there he could finally have a good rest. Thus, he naturally slept until this late.

Chu Mu brought out the rations, took a few bites to quench his hunger, and fed some to the little cyan bug that always hid on his collar.

Receiving food, the little bug wriggled its body in pleasure again, acting very happy.

When Chu Mu left the cave, he walked straight towards the campground. Even in the outer island, there were some savage soul pets, but Mo Xie's vigilance was very high. As a result, he could easily detect the aura of the stronger soul pets and avoid them.

Chapter 12: Grind, Train, Improve

When he was close to the campground, Chu Mu could see the other members of the Nightmare Island.

Most of these members were reticent. When they saw Chu Mu, they would at most glance at the soul pet that Chu Mu brought back to understand their enemies better, nothing more.

“Chu Mu, when did you become a princess, hahahaha, you’re killing me!!” A taunting voice sounded.

Chu Mu followed the sound and stared apathetically into the long face of another boy.

The long faced boy was called Tang Xian, one of the boys that came to Nightmare Island at the same time as Chu Mu. He had a distasteful personality, hardly hiding his self-righteous side.

Beside the person stood a meter tall, thinly scaled huge rodent soul pet, with two white front teeth exposed in the air, looking as bossy as its owner…

Chu Mu recognized this pet; it was the most common form of Steel Teeth, with a High species rank. Judging by this Steel Teeth’s form, it was probably around rank three!

“How about you put your little fox down and let it skirmish with

my Steel Teeth, hahahah!” Tang Xian ridiculed.

Chu Mu was too lazy to care about that guy, so he quietly remembered all the soul pets of his enemies and walked straight into the camp ground.

“Another troublesome opponent……”The laughter behind his back became even more unsuppressed as Chu Mu muttered under his breath.

Tang Xian’s Steel Teeth was ranked High, and had a power of rank 3. With two more months of training, it would be able to reach around rank 8, possibly stronger than the Hunting Wolves they had to face on the first day. Chu Mu had to take precautions against it. After all, before Mo Xie mutated, it would still be on the weak side of Medium.

Coming back to his wood shack, Chu Mu put Mo Xie on the ground as he took a shower and applied ointment to the festering wounds he had, just in case they got further infected.

Little Mo Xie seemed to like cleanliness. While Chu Mu was showering, she jumped in for a quick wash as well. Then, she jumped onto Ting Yu’s soft bed, rolling around to get herself dry.

“Err…… whatever, i guess she won’t come back any time soon.” Chu Mu thought about it and didn’t stop Mo Xie from ruining Ting Yu’s bed.

Training soul pets started with understanding. He had to know what techniques Mo Xie was capable of and what characteristics she had.

Moonlight Foxes weren't too common, so Chu Mu didn't understand them too well.

On the cabinet beside the bed stood a thick "Pet Encyclopedia". Chu Mu opened it and searched for information on Moonlight Foxes.

Moonlight Fox: Beast World - Demon Type - Demon Fox Species - Moonlight Fox Subspecies

"Moonlight foxes turned out to be part of Demon Type, I thought they'd be Beast type……"

"Moonlight Foxes are ranked on the weaker side of Medium. They are classified as agile pets, with ordinary fighting strength. Its main means of offense is its claws. Its fur has some resistance, and its eyes can cast enchanting charms to weaken the enemy's willpower to fight."

"Moonlight Fox's species ability: Moonlight's Essence"

"Moonlight Fox's basic abilities: Moon Shadow, Charm, and Pitiful Appearance"

"Moonlight Fox's main abilities: Ripping Claw, Ambush"

"Moonlight Fox's advanced abilities: Moonlight Slash"

After reading the diagrams and description, Chu Mu could only force a smile. Watching the little Mo Xie rolling on the soft bed, he sighed.

“Low level, practically no techniques, of those techniques, only two or three are used for attacking, how worse can it get.....”

Moonlight Essence was the species ability that every Moonlight Fox knew, so not much training was needed to use it fluently.

Yet, of the basic abilities-Moon Shadow, Charm, and Pitiful-Chu Mu had already seen little Mo Xie use Moon Shadow. As for the other two, she probably didn’t know them yet. She still needed to learn them in the process of growing.

“One step at a time then.”

Chu Mu said to reassure himself. Little Mo Xie had lots of potential, but the matter of most importance right now was to increase her fighting strength. If he didn't get into top ten, Chu Mu would die.

Chu Mu rested a bit in the wooden shack and brought Mo Xie outside of the camp. He started the official training of Mo Xie on an open grass field.

“Mo Xie, other than Moon Shadow, what other abilities do you know? Show me a few.” Chu Mu said.

Little Mo Xie looked at the bright sunlight grudgingly, and miserably called out once, meaning that her powers could only be used with moonlight.

“Show me your paws.” Chu Mu said to little Mo Xie.

Mo Xie very obediently extended her supple little paws, lying the soft pads of her paws on Chu Mu’s palm.

“Extend your claws.‘ Chu Mu said.

“Shua!!” The claws inside Mo Xie’s padded paws suddenly extended. They were about four centimeters long, and were as sharp as knives. Chu Mu instantly felt a chilliness in his hands, and the outer layer of his skin was cleanly cut open.

Chu Mu didn’t mind these little wounds. Inspecting Mo Xie’s claws carefully, he started to talk, “Indeed, still level one little young claws, initial stage. Your speed is fine already, so let’s start training your attack power. Let’s get those initial stage claws to middle stage. Then you’ll have a stronger attack power.”

“Wuwu~~”Little Mo Xie pouted.

“Ripping Claw needs your claws to be of the middle stage for the ripping effect to work. Let’s start training with a tree trunk.”

Little Mo Xie wanted to become stronger too, so she quickly locked onto a tree with a diameter of 10 centimeters and started attacking it with her young claws!

“Shua!!”

Her young claws crossed over and the bark was immediately ripped open, spraying wood pieces everywhere.

“Continue.” Chu Mu said.

“Shuaa!! Shuaa!! Shuaa!!”

Little Mo Xie attacked three times consecutively, leaving a rather deep mark on the ten centimeter wide tree!

“Continue until this tree breaks.” Chu Mu spoke again.

Little Mo Xie “wuwu”’d again, and continued to sharpen her claws.

“Shua!!”

Finally, after the eighth claw, the tree fell over.

“Wuwu~~~”

Little Mo Xie’s claws were still at their most delicate stage. Ripping down a tree forcefully like that would seriously wear her

claws. There was even a bit of blood on them.

“Continue.” Chu Mu said again.

“Wuwu”

Little Mo Xie immediately protested, raising her bloodied claws, meaning her claws hurted a lot already.

“If you don’t sharpen them, your claws will always be at initial stage. Don’t worry, your claws will heal the next day, and they’ll be even sharper than today’s.” Chu Mu said reassuringly.

Chapter 13: Provocation, Duel Invitation

Little Mo Xie looked at her claws, slightly upset, but still bravely walked towards another tree of about the same size.

“Just now, you took eight attacks to bring down that tree. This time only use seven.”Chu Mu wasn’t afraid at all when it came to training his soul pets.

In reality, this type of training was also the most effective in improving your soul pet’s abilities. Every soul pet needed arduous training.

Laziness, idleness, and leisure will only cause it to die to other soul pets in the future.

Little Mo Xie clenched her teeth and, while enduring the pain from her claws breaking, started to attack the tree.

“Keep training here, try to bring down this tree in seven hits this time. I’m going to search for something.”

“Wuwu~” Little Mo Xie immediately groaned.

“Don’t worry, I won’t walk too far. If you encounter anything dangerous, just hide in that bush and don’t come out, ok?” Chu Mu warned.

Little Mo Xie nodded her head.

Chu Mu walked into a dotted blue bush.

Chu Mu had lived in this area for a while now, and he remembered there was a blue healing herb within these blue bushes. When this plant was chewed, it could be applied to a soul pets' wounds and heal them faster.

Not only this, once this blue herb was applied to wound, it could allow broken claws to regrow. The new claws would even be sharper than before.

Chu Mu parted the bushes and immediately found a few dark blue herbs!

"Dark blue herbs!"

Chu Mu was overjoyed. The strength of the herb was determined by its color, with light blue being the weakest and dark blue being the strongest. Dark blue herbs were a whole three times stronger than the normal healing herb. If this was applied to Mo Xie's claws, it could allow Mo Xie's claws to grow from the initial stage to the medium stage within three days!

"Seems like luck is on my side today. This way Mo Xie's strength will increase even faster." Chu Mu started laughing and started pulling the herbs out of the ground.

The better the herb, the deeper its roots, and these herbs also had thorns. When Chu Mu pulled hard on them, his palm was completely cut.

Chu Mu could endure it, but when he picked all three herbs, his hands were dripping blood.

Crudely wrapping his hands, Chu Mu quickly returned to where Mo Xie was training.

“Who’s dumb fox is scratching trees?” Just when Chu Mu got there, he heard a kid’s voice.

When Chu Mu walked closer, he saw a slightly short kid jeering Mo Xie.

Beside the kid was a meter long centipede, blue-black in color. It looked weird, hideous, and a bit sinister.

The ten legged centipede was part of the Beast World - Bug Type - centipede species. It had a medium species rank. Reportedly, the ten legged centipede would grow another abdomen and two legs every rank it grew.

Chu Mu glanced over and discovered the centipede had 14 legs, meaning the ten-legged centipede was probably rank two.

“You must be Chu Mu. I’ve heard of you and your mini pet long ago. Haha, a little fox scratching a little tree, how hard can it possibly hit?” The kid started laughing.

Chu Mu didn't know the kids name, so he laughed coldly.

"Your centipede is strong then? Coincidentally my Moonlight Fox also needs a battle. The day after tomorrow, right here. A fight between my Moonlight Fox and your Ten Legged Centipede. If you win, I'll give you a level one bug type soul core. If you lose, you give me that brown soul core in your hand. Deal?"

The foremen in the island have set down rules. In the two months before the match comes, they weren't allowed to kill each other. If they had grudges they could duel it out.

"Won't you have to find a new pet two days later then?" The kid bursted into laughter.

"I think that would apply to you better.." Chu Mu said.

"I'm Zhang Luo." The centipede kid said and left with a smug impression, as if he had received the two soul cores already.

"Zhang Luo……Heng." Chu Mu looked at the guy leave, but only laughed coldly.

Soul cores were very important to soul pets. Every soul pet had their own type. For example, Chu Mu's pet was Demon type and Beast type.

If a Moonlight fox ingested a Demon type soul cores as food when it grows, then its demon powers would become purer and stronger. Its Demon Abilities would also become stronger.

If fed continuously with Beast Type soul cores, then the Moonlight Fox will tend to be like a beast. It's power, agility, and defense will become stronger, and its body will be strengthened as a whole.

Using soul cores to pushing a soul pet towards a certain type was called Soul Core Feeding. It was an imperceptibly slow process that leaned a soul pet towards a type.

Chu Mu saw a Beast Type soul core of decent quality in Zhang Luo's hand, a perfect fit for little Mo Xie to eat. This type of food would let the delicate little Mo Xie to become stronger.

"Have you brought down a tree within seven hits yet?" Chu Mu patted little Mo Xie.

"Wuuu" Little Mo Xie lifted her head, pouting like a little girl, "wuwu"ing with obvious bitterness. Subsequently, she extended her small claws for Chu Mu to see.

"It's good that you finished it. Relax, during the competition the day after tomorrow, we will definitely win. You can also obtain delicious food." Chu mu said.

When fighting was mentioned, Little Mo Xie was rather excited.

Clearly, like Chu Mu, she had a thirst for battle in her blood.

As a Soul Pet's strength increased, they normally did so through five means:

A Soul Pet would increase its stage; a Soul Pet would temper its body; a Soul Pet Trainer would feed its Soul Pet's Soul Core; the use of medicine; refining the Soul Crystal.

Among them, the main method was naturally tempering a Soul Pet's body. Therefore, whilst Little Mo Xie was training, Chu Mu had to be harsh towards her. If a solid foundation wasn't established early on, in the future it would be even harder to become stronger.

After a day of training, Little Mo Xie was already very tired. Chu Mu let her return to her Soul Pet Space to rest.

A Soul Pet would recover its physical strength and body condition slightly faster in the Soul Pet Space than the external world. Therefore, when a Soul Pet overexerted its physical strength or sustained an injury, a Soul pet Master would always put it into the Soul Pet Space.

Chapter 14: New Ability, Ripping Claw

At night, Chu Mu flipped open the “Plant Encyclopedia” in order to see how to fully bring out the dark blue herbs’ effect.

The Ten Legged Centipede’s species rank was clearly higher than the moonlight fox, and it’s attacks were very powerful, so little Mo Xie was already naturally behind.

Therefore, Chu Mu had to increase little Mo Xie’s power in the next two days. Because of that, Chu Mu had to pull an all-nighter to learn how to refine the herb.

Luckily, it wasn’t hard to refine the healing herb. Chu Mu just had to soak it in water, pull off the stem, chew it, and then use soul power to fuse it into the soul pet’s body.

The healing herb had two properties: it could heal wounds, and it could strengthen the claws of a soul pet. Chu Mu was indeed lucky to get three dark blue healing herbs. After all, these herbs sold for one gold on the market, and one gold was already enough to buy a Medium ranked soul pet.

The second day, Chu Mu didn’t train little Mo Xie any further. Instead, he took the newly concocted medicine and carefully rubbed it on little Mo Xie’s claws.

“Wuu~~”little Mo Xie licked the wounds on Chu Mu’s hand.

“These little wounds will heal very quickly, I can’t waste the little healing herb we have on it……”Chu Mu petted little Mo Xie, laughing.

“This medicine will last about half a day, so try not to move your claws until then. You can rest for the other half of the day, we’ll start training your Ripping Claw again tomorrow.”

“Wuwu” Little Mo Xie rose her head, licking Chu Mu’s face with her slippery tongue.

“You want to train tonight?” Chu Mu said, slightly surprised. Looking at the delicate but prideful little guy, he smiled and said, “Sure, then let’s train tonight! We’ll strive for a perfect victory against the Ten Legged Centipede!”

The process of strengthening was very simple. After he was done rubbing the medicine, Chu Mu let Mo Xie go back into the soul pet space.

The effects of the herb were very obvious. What would’ve taken two days and two nights to heal was fully healed within half a day!

More importantly, in this half day, little Mo Xie’s rank one claws had gone from the initial stage to medium stage!

Though they’re still rank one claws, when little Mo Xie extended them, they already flickered with a dangerous light, and were clearly stronger than before.

When night fell, Chu Mu brought little Mo Xie to the same grass field again.

“Mo Xie, use all your strength, see how many hits it’ll take for you to knock this tree over today.” Chu Mu said.

Mo Xie made a sharp cry and started running. The silver moonlight fell on her spotless fur as she quickly jumped up, claws slashing the tree!

“Shuaa!”

This claw made a very deep mark, at least 3-4 cm!

“Shua!!”

A second swipe passed, and the tree was already showing huge cracks!

“Shua!!!”

After the third swipe, the tree could no longer stand straight. With a huge groan, it slowly fell to the ground.

“Three times! Very good, very good!!”

Chu Mu was very satisfied with little Mo Xie's performance. After all, just yesterday little Mo Xie, with the cost of damaging her claws, used seven hits to fall the tree. Today, it only took her three attacks.

There was a huge difference between the initial stage and the intermediate stage. With initial stage claws, Mo Xie needed seven hits and her claws were damaged after. With intermediate stage claws, she could easily knock the tree over without any damage!

"Now, try using Ripping Claw" Chu Mu said.

Ripping Claw was an ability that most clawed soul pets knew, but it was also the most effective and straightforward attacking ability. If little Mo Xie could learn to use it well, ripping apart the Ten Legged Centipede's defenses would be no problem!

Usually, the soul pet could use Ripping Claw when their young claws grow to intermediate stage.

Abilities were every soul pets' instinct, just like how fish would instinctively know different swimming techniques when they mature.

Soul pets' abilities were the same. When they reached a certain degree, they would learn these survival techniques without deliberate training. However, they still needed to learn how to use it skillfully by battling more.

“Are you ready?” Chu Mu glanced at little Mo Xie. Little Mo Xie nodded intently.

“Alright, use Ripping Claw!” Chu Mu immediately gave a command.

When little Mo Xie received the command, she quickly dashed out. This time, little Mo Xie was running at full speed, using her speed as power!

In the dark night, a silver streak flickered by. Jumping suddenly, and drawing an exquisite arc in the air, a pair of gleaming claws ripped through the space ahead.

“Shua shua!!”

The Ripping Claws criss-crossed, making a crisp sound, as if slashing through frictionless water!

“Creaaaak~”

The next moment, a 10 centimeter wide tree made a coarse noise and fell over to the side!

“Well done!” Chu Mu smiled when he saw little Mo Xie’s attacking power rise substantially.

“Wuwu~”little Mo Xie quickly walked back, looking very excited

too.

“Continue, make sure every cast is perfect. After all, enemies won’t be trees, they’ll be able to move.” Chu Mu said.

With its attack power increased, little Mo Xie became more motivated. Immediately locking onto another tree, little Mo Xie dashed towards it.

This time little Mo Xie didn’t quite calculate the distance correctly. Her Ripping Claw only scraped the surface of the bark.

“Don’t worry, just practice some more and you’ll be able to get the hang of it.” Chu Mu assured.

The entire night, little Mo Xie trained her Ripping Claw. Only when the moon was starting to fall did Chu Mu let little Mo Xie return to the wooden room.

Although Mo Xie’s young claws were already at the intermediate stage, Ripping Claw still wore her claws down. Chu Mu refined another herb and rubbed it over Mo Xie’s claws.

The second day, little Mo Xie’s claws became even sharper. Today, Chu Mu still focused his efforts on Ripping Claw, making sure that Mo Xie could use it effectively from any place, any angle.

“Shua shua!!” Two dangerous glints criss crossed, and the ripping effect of the Ripping Claw cut the airborne branch into pieces

instantly. Mo Xie landed lightly on the ground along with the broken branches.

“Very good, keep up the fluid transitions. Run, jump, attack, land-exposing no weak spots at all times.” Chu Mu said.

“Wuwu” little Mo Xie called, eyes gleaming with confidence.

“Training ends here today, let’s get well rested tonight in preparation for tomorrow’s battle.”

In the evening, Chu Mu brought Mo Xie back to his wooden hut.

Chapter 15: Ten-Legged Centipede

"I heard that tomorrow you will fight with Zhang Ge.” Ting Yu was sitting on the bed and inquired right when Chu Mu entered.

In this period of time, because Chu Mu had left early and came back late, while Ting Yu had been busy training her own Soul Pet, they didn't encounter each other often.

“Yes.” Chu Mu nodded his head.

“His Ten Legged Centipede had already reached the third stage; your small Moonlight Fox is only at the second stage...” Ting Yu said.

“Yes.” Chu Mu still nodded.

“Moonlight Foxes are Soul Pets with relatively weak attack power. Even if its speed is fast, its claws most likely will be unable to break apart the Ten Legged Centipede’s flesh armour. His Ten Legged Centipede’s flesh armour is already at the middle stage.” Ting Yu said.

“Eh? Mid stage already?” Chu Mu raised his eyebrows. He was somewhat surprised that this fellow had already raised the Ten Legged Centipede’s defensive abilities. Chu Mu remembered that two days ago, it's Flesh Armour was only at the early stage.

“Yes, if you fight with him at night, you might barely be able to contend...” Ting Yu said.

Moonlight Foxes had the Moon Absorption species ability. If there was moonlight at night, their battle power would increase!

“The competition is at noon; he's not stupid.” Chu Mu said.

“I don't understand. The island has so many Soul Pets on it. Why did you randomly choose this Moonlight Fox?” Ting Yu said.

Ting Yu was a girl and normally girls harbored special adoration towards beautiful and cute Soul Pets like Moonlight Foxes. However, the girls on the island would not receive any such love. The girls also wanted to survive, and in order to do so, they had to forsake this sort of unneeded sympathy.

Chu Mu also didn't reply. The secret of Little Mo Xie being a continuous mutation Soul Pet could not be told to anyone else, otherwise he would definitely attract killers.

Ting Yu saw that Chu Mu didn't really want to speak and she herself was also tired. Thus, she lay on the bed, covered herself in blankets, and quickly fell asleep.

Nothing too dangerous occurred at night as the majority of the Soul Pet Trainers would sleep early and rise early.

Chu Mu looked at the “Pet Encyclopedia” for a while and looked

over the Ten Legged Centipede’s information again before going to sleep.

On the morning of the next day, Little Mo Xie let out a noise of excitement, as if it was trying to tell something good to Chu Mu. Chu Mu didn't understand and summoned her out.

“What's the matter, Mo Xie?” Chu Mu inquired inquisitively

“Wuwuwu.” Mo Xie extended her claws and instantly, a few flashes of cold light penetrated the planks of the wooden room.

Chu Mu was startled, but soon it turned into an expression of extreme happiness as he said: “Late stage! Your claws have reached the late stage!!”

“Wuwu~” Little Mo Xie also let out a smile.

“Hahaha!!” Chu Mu immediately began to laugh.

Little Mo Xie was indeed worthy of being a continuous mutation Soul Pet; even if it was of the Moonlight Fox species, it's aptitude was unexpectedly this overpowered!

Normally speaking, if a Moonlight Fox had normal growth, it had to have had at least reached the sixth stage before its claws would enter the late stage. Although she had the Deep Blue Healing Grass to expedite the process, at the very most, the claws should have only reached the mid stage.

Of course, even if Little Mo Xie was at the second stage, her young claws had grown to the late stage, so her attacking ability had grown more than a modest amount. Most likely, even without using Ripping Claws, she could break apart the Ten Legged Centipede’s defense!

The surprise Little Mo Xie brought caused Chu Mu’s confidence to rise exponentially. When noon arrived, he walked to the predetermined place.

“Wait for me, I'll go with you.” Having left early in the morning only to come back at noon, when Ting Yu saw Chu Mu leave, she immediately followed.

Chu Mu nodded his head and continued walking with Ting Yu.

Upon reaching the grass field, Chu Mu saw Zhang Ge; aside from Zhang Ge, there were another five people. These five people had presumably formed a small group with Zhang Ge.

When capturing Soul Pets, many Soul Pet Trainers, perhaps in order to avoid having the Soul Pets stolen from them, formed a small group to ensure that they wouldn't be bullied before the Life and Death Battle.

Chu Mu enjoyed traveling alone so he didn't enter any group. Ting Yu naturally entered a group composed of only female Soul Pet Trainers.

“So it turns out you are fighting him. Zhang Ge, if you want to find an opponent, you should look for someone stronger...” Among them, a youngster with long hair let out a look of disdain when he saw Chu Mu.

The others clearly didn't think that Zhang Ge’s opponent would be Chu Mu, who had a Moonlight Fox as his first Soul Pet. They all believed that it was meaningless.

The 50 Soul Pet Trainers on the island were all going to partake in the Life and Death Battle, so understanding the Soul Pets of other Soul Pet Trainers was extremely essential. Thus, those that formed a group would normally compile the information of others and share it with those in their group; this way, when they came across opponents from other groups, they would have a better chance.

Chu Mu’s Soul Pet was a Moonlight Fox. This couldn't even be considered a secret as it could be said that among all the groups, it was unanimously believed that he harbored no threat-so much so that he wasn't even as good as many of the female Soul Pet Trainers.

Having been laughed at by those next to him, Zhang Ge very embarrassingly gave an explanation: “I didn't have an option. He challenged me, and there was no way I could not accept it.”

Facing the ridicule of the others, Chu Mu silently let out a laugh.

“That long haired person opposite us seems to be Zhu Wing. I heard that his Soul Pet is a Scaled Snake, which is a High Rank Soul Pet that ranks sixth.” Ting Yu said.

Chu Mu discerned that the long haired youth named Zhu Qing was the leader of the small group. He could probably be considered one of those who would be a threat to him during the Life and Death Battle.

“Okay, Okay, start. Don’t waste time.” Zhu Qing wasn’t very patient and urged on Zhang Ge and Chu Mu.

Zhang Ge also embarrassingly laughed and put the beast attributed Soul Core identical with Chu Mu’s, in the center as the stake. Subsequently, Chu Mu also put his insect attributed Soul Core in the center.

Chu Mu only had three Soul Cores; two of them had already been used as bait and had been consumed. Currently, he only had an insect attributed Soul Core left, and it was because of this Insect Soul Core that Zhang Ge would fight Chu Mu.

There were two types of fights between Soul Pet Trainers. The first was a purely Soul Pet fight, and the other was one which Soul Pet Trainers joined the fight.

Soul Pet Trainers possessed Soul Power and could perform a few techniques. Only, the Soul Pet Trainers here hadn’t obtained any technique books and none of them seemed to have any techniques. Thus they could only completely rely on their Soul Pets.

“Listen to my Soul Summoning…” Zhang Ge recited his own Soul Pact Incantation.

A light brown awn of light surfaced and slowly formed an approximately two meter Soul Pact pattern in diameter on the grass field. An evasive flash of light flashed over the pattern and a blackish brown Ten Legged Centipede astonishingly appeared on the pattern.

Its body had reached one meter long and it had sixteen legs as sharp as knives. It swayed back and forth, and its malevolent looking head along with its centipede pincer tail both indicated that it was a savage Soul Pet not to be trifled with.

Chapter 16: Second Stage Defeating A Third Stage

Little Mo Xie had already been summoned by Chu Mu and seeing the Ten Legged Centipede appear, the haughty Mo Xie also immediately leapt in front of Chu Mu. It stood off against the centipede that was over one meter tall.

Zhang Ge clearly did not want to be mocked by his peers, and wanted to finish the fight as fast as possible. He immediately ordered the Ten Legged Centipede to attack Little Mo Xie.

The Ten Legged Centipede's entire body was like a iron chain. As it moved, it ferociously moved its tail pincer and resolutely smacked it towards Little Mo Xie.

Little Mo Xie's body was weak, and her defense was lacking. If she was hit by the Ten Legged Centipede even once, she would most likely lose the strength to fight.

Luckily, Little Mo Xie possessed speed more nimble and faster than that of the Ten Legged Centipede. With a light hop, Little Mo Xie dodged the Ten Legged Centipede's tail pincer, She suddenly extended her sharp claws and swiped at the Ten Legged Centipede's body.

"Zizi"

Mo Xie's claws seemed to grind against metal. This attack clearly had not broken the Ten Legged Centipede's defense.

Chu Mu didn't pay any heed to this. After all, Mo Xing had attacked while dodging, so her body didn't have a chance to gather force. Thus, it was very hard to exhibit the claw's formidable power.

"Dance around it in circles. Its body is relatively sturdy." Chu Mu had already thought of a countermeasure to deal with the Ten Legged Centipede and immediately instructed Little Mo Xie.

Little Mo Xie was also very agile, and after dodging the Ten Legged Centipede's tail pincer, she never stopped moving. Even if the Ten Legged Centipede continued to swing its tail in attack, it would stop for a long time after every attack. It needed time to recover before continuing.

Zhang Ge saw that Chu Mu's Moonlight Fox was extremely nimble and also knew that he couldn't continue like this. He immediately used his mind to issue an order.

After issuing the order, the Ten Legged Centipede stopped continuously attacking Little Mo Xie. It abruptly coiled up, faced the ground, and unexpectedly dug into the ground in an instant. It left a large, deep hole in the grass field.

"Enter the ground to use Scuttle Attack?" A smile appeared on Chu Mu's face. It could be said that he knew the Ten Legged Centipede's abilities like the back of his hand. Immediately he

issued an order to Little Mo Xie.

Little Mo Xie stopped in her tracks and didn't move. She seemed to be quietly waiting for something...

Seeing the Moonlight Fox stand in one spot motionlessly, Zhang Ge, Ge Qing and the others sneered. Evidently, they thought that the fight was about to end. After all, Moonlight Foxes were a delicate Soul Pet and had no way of withstanding the Ten Legged Centipede's Scuttle Attack.

"Hurry up and let your Soul Pet run. If its position is locked on by the Ten Legged Centipede, you will lose." Beside him, Ting Yu was inwardly quite worried.

Scuttle attack was the standard case of a bug type ability. After digging into the ground, the Soul Pet would then suddenly resurface and attack the enemy's spot: the underbelly.

Chu Mu didn't pay heed to Ting Yu's anxiety. He closed his eyes, consumed his own Soul Power and released his own perceptive force.

The perception ability covered the entire grass field. Even without using eyes, Chu Mu was able to use Soul Power to feel the light movement beneath Little Mo Xie's feet.

Suddenly, Chu Mu opened his eyes.

“It's right now; jump up!” A voice resounded.

The mental connection between Little Mo Xie and her master was extremely sensitive. The second Chu Mu issued his command, Little Mo Xie stored her energy and leapt up into the air!

“Beng!”

All of a sudden, the turf blew apart and a meter long centipede scuttled from under the grass like a black steel spear. It unexpectedly jumped two meters into the air.

While the Scuttle Attack was being unleashed, Little Mo Xie had immediately jumped at that second and managed to avoid the quick and violent attack. She then proceeded to attach her claws to a nearby tree.

Gracefully, she landed on the tree trunk and then jumped once more. She unexpectedly launched herself at the Ten Legged Centipede suspended in the air!

“Ripping Claw!” Chu Mu issued a command!

Little Mo Xie’s claws awe-inspiringly stretched out and when her body began descending, she furiously swiped the air, creating two intersecting cold lights.

Seeing Little Mo Xie’s position, everyone was stupefied. They clearly did not think that this Moonlight Fox was surprisingly able

to emit a Ripping Claw!

“Shua! Shua!”

The cold lights dissipated in the air and a dent appeared in the Ten Legged Centipede’s body. It then fell heavily onto the ground

Little Mo Xie, on the other hand, landed on the ground with ease. She haughtily raised her head and didn’t even glance at the Ten Legged Centipede.

“No need to be worried. My Ten Legged Centipede has already strengthened its flesh armor. This small fox’s Ripping Claw can at most injure its skin.” Zhang Ge’s face was frozen. He felt that his Ten Legged Centipede being attacked by the Moonlight Fox was somewhat humiliating and he hastily gave an explanation.

After explaining, Zhang Ge immediately ordered his Ten Legged Centipede to climb up and continue fighting.

“Get up!!”

“Hurry and get up!!”

The mental thought was unable to make the Ten Legged Centipede stand up and Zhang Ge could only rush towards the Ten Legged Centipede, yelling at it loudly. However, after shouting a number of times, the Ten Legged Centipede still hadn’t moved.

“What happened?” The other three revealed suspicious expressions and their gazes fell on Ge Qing.

Ge Qing’s eyebrows creased and after a while he opened his mouth: “Just now that small fox’s Ripping Claw attack was extremely strong....”

Nevertheless, when Ge Qing’s voice faded, the Ten Legged Centipede’s body suddenly began twitching.

“Gazhi!!” A crisp sound rang out. A few claw scars appeared on the twitching body of the Ten Legged Centipede. These claw traces unexpectedly indicated that its body was severed into a few pieces!!

Seeing such a terrifying scene appear, Zhang Ge’s face instantly paled and he blankly looked at the Ten Legged Centipede that was currently chopped up into several pieces.

“What a strong attack power!” Ting Yu was rather close and just now, she completely and clearly saw the entire process of Little Mo Xie unleashing her Ripping Claw.

The Ten Legged Centipede’s flesh armor was at the middle stage, and its defensive strength could be considered top quality. However, it was still thoroughly lacerated to death by one of Mo Xie’s ripping claws.

Ge Qing and the other person each exposed an expression of shock.

In Ge Qing and that youth’s eyes, a malevolent and violent Ten Legged Centipede unconditionally should easily beat a Moonlight Fox. The current contrast of the Ten Legged Centipede’s death brought them shock, surprise, and disbelief.

“Wuwu”

Suddenly, the battle’s victor, Little Mo Xie, lifter her head and let out a howl.

An indistinct ray of light passed through the tree leaves and washed over the Moonlight Fox’s body. Mo Xie’s beautiful tail gradually became more developed and furry. It looked like a small girl’s fur skirt: noble and beautiful!

“It's grown!”

To Chu Mu, Little Mo Xie growing was more exciting than defeating the Ten Legged Centipede!!

“Wuwuwu” Little Mo Xie let out another howl.

Ge Qing’s group of youngsters were stupefied when they saw the results of Little Mo Xie’s growth!

“This small fox just entered the third stage!!”

“A second stage Moonlight Fox defeating a third stage Ten Legged Centipede, is…. Isn’t this too abnormal? That’s not a mutated Moonlight Fox is it?

“That is a Moonlight Fox. Its claws should be at the late stage of young claws…” Ge Qing’s expression became abnormal and he glanced at Chu Mu.

In one respect, a Moonlight Fox having late stage claws while being at the second stage in levels meant that the Moonlight Fox’s aptitude was excessively large. Another aspect naturally indicated that the Soul Pet Trainer was extremely good at raising the Soul Pet. Moreover, just from the current fight, it was clear to see that Chu Mu knew the Ten Legged Centipede like the back of his hand. It was enough to indicate that he was an exceptionally talented Soul Pet Trainer!

[Editor’s Note: Let’s catch em all ash!]

Chapter 17: The Nightmare's Advent

Ting Yu also had an expression full of astonishment and excitement. She looked at Chu Mu and put on a smile: “It turns out that you were very certain of the outcome.”

Chu Mu only laughed, but didn’t say anything.

Zhang Ge, to the side, stood frozen on the spot and stared at the already dead Ten Legged Centipede.

He had spent a long time just to capture this Ten Legged Centipede, and during these past few days, he had invested a lot of sweat and blood. The most important thing was that once the Ten Legged Centipede died, he wouldn’t have any chance of entering the top ten in the not-too-distant Life and Death Battle. If he didn’t enter the top ten, he would be mercilessly killed.

Suddenly, Zhang Ge was like a maniac!

“You demon, I’m gonna kill you!!”

A dagger had suddenly appeared in Zhang Ge’s hand, and he unexpectedly charged towards Chu Mu.

Facing Zhang Ge’s surprise attack, Chu Mu still retained his calm as he stood still.

“Shua!!!”

A moon colored shadow quickly jumped into the air and used its sharp claws to scratch Zhang Ge’s stomach. Zhang Ge was halfway through his charge when he came to a sudden stop. He frightenedly stood frozen in one spot and looked at the cold Moonlight Fox.....

Half of Little Mo Xie’s body remained crouched on the ground. Her silver eyes frostily stared at Zhang Ge; a row of teeth was exposed in her mouth. This brought about a ferocious persona.

“One more step and the dead one will be you.” Chu Mu apathetically said.

In a second, after Chu Mu saw that Zhang Ge didn’t dare to act blindly without thinking, he walked over to the where the Soul Cores were and put away both of them. He then proceeded to turn around and leave.

"Want to leave?"

At this time, Ge Qing let out a sneer and chanted an incantation. On the ground, a blue pattern appeared. Within this curtain of light, he summoned his Soul Pet.

“Sisisisi~~”

A large snake nearly two meters long suddenly slithered out of

the curtain of light. The snake's body was covered in flashing phosphorescent scales!

Scaled Serpent!

A High Rank Soul Pet! From the color of its scales, it was possible to tell that this was a terrifying fourth stage Soul Pet!

Fourth stage, High Rank-its strength could be said to be extremely close to the foremen's Hunting Wolves that had attacked them!

Chu Mu creased his eyebrows. He had thought that this place was relatively close to the campground, so Zhang Ge's group wouldn't dare act rashly. Unexpectedly, Ge Qing still dared to attack him.

"Tactfully hand over those two Soul Cores and I will spare you and your little Soul Pet." Ge Qing glared at Chu Mu and spoke in a cold manner.

As Ge Qing said this, the other four Soul Pet masters summoned their own Soul Pets. Most of them were all third stage Soul Pets.

Chu Mu's expression turned somewhat heavy and the adjacent Ting Yu's face also wasn't too good looking. It was clear that they didn't expect these people to be so shameless and audacious, causing trouble so close to the campground.

"Ahhh!!! Ahh! Ahhh Ahhh!!"

Suddenly, an incomparably miserable shriek resonated through the air!!

The battle about to begin at any moment was suddenly disrupted by the abrupt miserable shriek!

Everyone was frozen and their eyes immediately fell on Zhang Ge who had suddenly turned mad.

Zhang Ge had suffered some unknown attack and was ineffably clutching his chest. His face was incomparably pale and perspiration unceasingly rolled down his cheek. His entire face was pinched together because of the pain!

The miserable shrieks continued and Zhang Ge began to roll on the ground without end. The extremely painful appearance caused everyone's blood to run cold!

"Nightmare... it's the nightmare..." A youngster came to a sudden realization and terrifyingly pointed at the faintly discernable black shadow encompassing Zhang Ge's body.

The black shadow was like a specter growing continuously distinct. It frighteningly enveloped Zhang Ge's body, causing his body to incessantly twitch. The veins and arteries on his body began to bulge and his pupil kept on growing bigger...

"His Nightmare is unexpectedly advancing a stage right now..."

Ge Qing's face turned ugly. He completely did not expect this to occur.

A Nightmare which devoured its host's soul!!

It was clear that Zhang Ge's Soul Power wasn't enough to provide for the Nightmare's increase in level. His soul would thus act as the supplement, causing him to ultimately face a plaintive death.

Once the Cyan Nightmare flared up, the foremen were able to detect it. Once Zhang Ge's soul had been devoured, the Cyan Nightmare in his body would become a masterless Soul Pet and would quickly be put away by the two foremen.

Chu Mu also used this opportunity to free himself from Ge Qing and his gang.

"Hmph, you killed Zhang Ge. I will take revenge for him. On the day of the battle, you just wait for my Scaled Serpent to swallow you into its stomach!" Ge Qing didn't plan on letting Chu Mu go easily. Just as Chu Mu was about to leave, he spoke out in a threatening manner.

After returning to his wooden hut, Chu Mu's heart was palpitating. This wasn't because of Ge Qing's threat, but because of Zhang Ge's terrifying death.

This wasn't the first time Chu Mu had seen someone's soul be devoured by a Cyan Nightmare. However, every time he witnessed

it, his heart felt as if a terrifying demonic claw was clasped around it.

Chu Mu unconsciously rubbed his chest and spoke to himself: “Breeding you, Nightmare, has already rendered me unable to perform skills; you absolutely cannot ineffably grow on me…”

In reality, Chu Mu’s White Nightmare had already grown to a terrifying fifth stage! If he could summon the White Nightmare to fight for him, Chu Mu would be able to easily defeat all his competitors. After all, a White Nightmare was on a completely different level than a Cyan Nightmare.

Only, it was a pity that all of Chu Mu’s current Soul Power was being used to raise the White Nightmare. If he didn’t continue to raise its level higher, he had no way of letting it join the fight. The remaining small portion of Soul Power could only be used to control Little Mo Xie’s fight. This forced him to only stand on the side and give directions while fighting.

Fortunately, none of the Soul Pet Trainers on the island had learned Soul Pet Trainer skills yet. Moreover, they had all received the Soul Power restriction of the Cyan Nightmare. If not for this, Chu Mu would have suffered endlessly during fights.

Chapter 18: Encountering A Powerful Enemy

“This is no fun. Once your Moonlight Fox uses Charm and Affliction, my Soul Pet has no desire to fight. Even if it’s a level higher than yours, it’s to no avail.” Ting Yu growled as she returned her Soul Pet into its own space.

Ting Yu’s Soul Pet was a “Thorny Rose Demon”; it belonged to the Botanical Kingdom-flower type-rose species, and it was a High Rank.

Within the island, Thorny Rose Demons were the ninth highest ranked Soul Pets and their strength reached the seventh stage. Formerly, Ting Yu had remained discrete, and it wasn’t until recently when her Soul Pet was discovered by him.

Chu Mu was her roommate and would naturally know before others. However, when he found out that this small and cute girl possessed such a formidable Soul Pet, he was extremely shocked.

“Hmph, your Little Mo Xie is a freak. It’s clearly only at the sixth stage, which is lower than my Flower Demon. It’s rank is also lower than my Flower Demon and its claws have only just reached the first stage of completion. But my Flower Demon has no way of defeating it!” Ting Yu was somewhat bitter as she glared at Chu Mu.

“Haha, when the contest occurs, it’s best if you don’t encounter me.” Chu Mu laughed.

There were only a mere five days left until the decisive battles. After undergoing nearly two months of progress, Mo Xie had also learned Affliction and Charm, these two Beast Spirit abilities.

Affliction was a unique pretense skill of Moonlight Foxes and caused it to adopt a pitiful pretense. This garnered it strong Soul Pet sympathy, weakening the opponent's fighting spirit.

Charm was a skill that would use a beautiful external appearance to create a facade, confusing the opponent's state of mind.

These two skills had no attacking properties, but Chu Mu could use them very effectively during battle,and cause extreme danger to the opponent's life.

There weren't many people willing to provoke Ting Yu's Thorny Rose Demon, but when Ting Yu secretly fought against Chu Mu, she would always lose to him.

"There are still five days before the decisive battles. There shouldn't be a problem for your Little Mo Xie to obtain the top ten spots." Ting Yu said.

"My Soul Pet is perfect for restraining your Thorny Rose Demon. In my opinion, there shouldn't be many people capable of facing your Flower Demon, right?" Chu Mu said.

"That's not definitive. Although I haven't fought with those

people, according to my knowledge, there should be at least a few people with Soul Pets stronger than my Thorny Rose Demon." Ting Yu said.

"Oh, let's hurry and finish this battle. Explain to me the others' Soul Pets." Chu Mu said.

"You only know how to immerse yourself in training and breeding your Soul Pet so you don't know anything about others. Eventually you'll suffer losses because of this." Ting Yu glared at Chu Mu.

Chu Mu indifferently laughed.

Subsequently, Ting Yu informed Chu Mu of the relatively strong ones:

"Tang Xian's Steel Teeth, eighth stage-High Rank, its species rank is ranked tenth, but its strength is ranked in the top five!"

"Gu Feng's Rock Demon, ninth stage-Middle Rank, its species rank is 20th, and its strength is within the top five!"

"There's also Ge Qing who threatened to swallow you alive. Although his Scaled Serpent is only at the seventh stage, it's extremely ferocious. After fighting others, it seems to not have lost yet."

"As for the publicly accepted strongest, it would definitely be

Zhou Shengmo. His Soul Pet is a naturally endowed Hunting Wolf, eighth stage-High Rank, it possesses a complete Wolf Claw and complete Wolf Teeth. Even if it hasn't learned any skills, my Thorny Rose Demon cannot defeat it. We should just hope to not encounter this fellow, otherwise we'll be in big trouble…"

Having mentioned Zhou Shengmo, Chu Mu's face darkened. When he was undergoing survival training, this fellow entrapped him and had nearly caused him to lose his life. This enmity would not be forgotten by Chu Mu!

"Of course, there is another person: you. You were able to train an ornamental type Soul Pet into this sort of a level. If you had a High Rank Soul Pet like the rest of them, obtaining a spot in the top three wouldn't be a problem." Ting Yu said.

Chu Mu still only laughed and didn't bother explaining anymore.

"I'm going to Mao Forest for a walk. Train by yourself." Chu Mu said.

"Hmm, why don't we go together?" Ting Yu said.

"There's no need, there's a chance I'll go to a dangerous area." After speaking, Chu Mu left.

Chu Mu traversed the grass field and walked towards Mao Forest.

Mao Lin was relatively close to the inner island. It could be

considered similar to the Bramble Forest and was an area that separated the inner island from the outer island. This place also harbored a few strong Soul Pets.

Last month, Chu Mu brought Little Mo Xie to Mao Forest and found a second level medicine-Gyokuro Pungen.

Dew was the most pure liquid nutrient. When the leaves of plants that absorbed the world's essence and dew fell on the same spot, if there was fertile soil, a Gyokuro Pungen would grow.

As a second level medicine, the Gyokuro Pungen's use was very apparent; it could make a Soul Pet grow faster. Moreover, if one were to blend the Gyokuro Pungen with a second level Heavenly Blue Grass according to a three to two ratio, a third grade medicine compound-Heavenly Blue Gyokuro Pungen-would be created! This would immediately cause a Soul Pet to advance a few stages and was thus a rare good.

There were only five days left until the competition. After the competition, he would either be killed or brought to another island, so Chu Mu had to use these few days to obtain the Gyokuro Pungen.

Last month when Chu Mu saw it, he didn't take it because the Gyokuro Pungen's appearance would always be accompanied by a Hundred Eyed Palm Soul Pet.

Hundred Eyed Palms were from the Plant World-Flower Type - Hundred Eyed Palm Species-Mid Ranked Soul Pet. The Hundred

Eyed Palm accompanying the Gyokuro Pungen was usually about the eighth stage. Most places with a Gyokuro Pungen would have this Soul Pet.

Just after stepping into Mao Forest, Chu Mu smelt an earthen smell. The past few days had seen rainfall, so the atmosphere was particularly fresh, causing one to feel rather fresh and relaxed.

Chu Mu brought Mo Xie and on his shoulder was also the small cyan insect. The small cyan insect's vigilance was very high so Chu Mu had dodged danger many times because of it.

After walking approximately one kilometer into the forest, Chu Mu heard a few people speaking in the dead quiet forest.

Chu Mu immediately stopped and hid behind a large tree.

Chu Mu normally wouldn't interact with others while moving about on the outer island. After all, Chu Mu didn't belong to a group and it would be very easy to be taken advantage of.

"Brother Zhou, just the three of us should be able to deal with it." Among them, the hoarse voice of a young man rang out.

"Even without the two of you, my Hunting Wolf should be enough. I let you come just in case something happens." The male called Brother Zhou said.

"Of course, of course." Another voice immediately echoed.

Hiding behind the tree, Chu Mu peered through the twigs and looked at the youth walking over from amongst the three. His face turned dark.

The youth called Brother Zhou was Chu Mu's powerful enemy, Zhou Sheng Mo. His body was large, and he also had a high aptitude Hunting Wolf that was foreboding to everyone. As the contest approached, there was no doubt that he would obtain first place.

As for the two youths beside Zhou Sheng Mo, Chu Mu had a vague inkling that one was called Luo Chen and the other was called Ma Zhi. Luo Chen's strength ranked within the top ten and Ma Zhi was around the middle. Not strong enough to take note of, but not something to ignore.

Chapter 19: Ripping Apart The Hundred Eyed Palm

Chu Mu desperately wanted to find an opportunity to kill Zhou Shenmo. After all, ambushing had a higher chance of success than duelling, but he never got the chance. Now that Zhou Shenmo had two people beside him, Chu Mu had to bide for another opportunity.

The sound of conversation became distant along with their silhouettes into the thick forest. Watching them disappear completely, Chu Mu came out of cover, glanced in their direction one last time, and continued on his path towards the Gyokuro Pungen.

To conserve energy, Chu Mu avoided fighting any soul pets he met while following the marks he left last time. After half an hour, Chu Mu finally found the Gyokuro Pungen under several trees, with a Hundred Eyed Palm beside it.

The Hundred Eyed Palm was big and thick, as if multiple banana leaves were piled together. On them were many eye-like patterns, realistic yet slightly scary.

“The leaves of this Hundred Eyed Palm should have a rank two skin layer, so the leaves will be very tough. Mainly attack its stem.” Chu Mu warned little Mo Xie quietly.

The clever little Mo Xie nodded, her silver eyes watching the

Hundred Eyed Palm intently.

Chu Mu had been feeding Mo Xie with purely beast type soul cores the past two months, so Mo Xie's teeth, claws, and limbs were now more powerful.

The Moonlight Fox's main attack method was still with its claws. Its teeth were just supplementary, and the Moonlight Fox didn't have any abilities involving teeth either.

"Let's start!" Chu Mu climbed onto a branch nimbly and commanded little Mo Xie to attack the Hundred Eyed Palm directly from above.

Little Mo Xie's movements were, as always, agile. Climbing the twenty meter tall tree was like walking on flat ground. Upon running to the edge of a branch, she stomped hard and launched herself swiftly through the green leaves.

"Ceng!!" Sharp claws extended from her paws, slicing a few nearby leaves in half!

With a cold gleam, Mo Xie fell quickly. Charging up her claws, she nimbly evaded the big leaves of the Hundred Eyed Palm and went straight for the stem!

Ripping Claw! Mo Xie was now very skilled at using Ripping Claw. Her movements finished in one swift motion, and were both quick and violent.

However, the Hundred Eyed Palm immediately lowered its shield-like leaves in defense, blocking Mo Xie's attack and successfully protecting its fragile stem!

"Shua!!" Ripping Claw ripped open the Hundred Eyed Palm's leaf, leaving deep gouge marks on the shield-like leaf, extending from the middle all the way to the edge, oozing out a thick sap!

This Stage 8 Hundred Eyed Palm already had three shield-like leaves . Having one leaf hurt by Mo Xie, the Hundred Eyed Palm didn't falter, immediately spinning its stalk, causing its sharp leaves to become a deadly turbine!

"Tripetal Blade, Mo Xie, stay 5 meters away!" Chu Mu immediately commanded.

Mo Xie lightly landed. Bouncing immediately, she leaped twice more, spun around mid air, and landed, sliding a small distance while staring at the Hundred Eyed Palm cool-headedly with her silver pupils.

"Huahuahuahua!!!"

The Hundred Eyed Palm's casted Tripetal Blade, causing its petals to spin quickly, creating chaotic turbulence and lifting any rubble nearby into the air.

With the spinning of the Hundred Eyed Palm's stalk, Tripetal

Blade could extend to up to four meters. A tree within this range quickly fell with a thundering crash under the might of the petals.

The Hundred Eyed Palm only lasted a moment. Sensing Mo Xie leaving its range, it stopped casting the ability.

“Now’s the time!” Chu Mu caught the opportunity perfectly, giving the command the moment that Tripetal Blade ended.

Receiving the command, Mo Xie dashed abruptly, fast as thunder, with her claws extended while running an unpredictable zig zag. Leaping, she casted Ripping Claw again!

“Shuashua!!!” Criss crossing, Mo Xie’s claws landed very accurately onto the Hundred Eyed Palm’s stalk, cracking it distinctly!

“Be careful of its Hundred Eyed Poison Needle!” Chu Mu glanced at the eye patterns on the half-bent Hundred Eyed Palm, and immediately warned.

Sure enough, as the Palm was about to fall, the eyes on its three leaves suddenly opened, revealing rows upon rows of black needles!

The Hundred Eyed Poison Needles locked onto Mo Xie, and the needles on the first leaf shot out, densely packed and sharp!

“Pupupupupu!!”

Mo Xie leaped back, and all the needles nailed the ground where she just stood, riddling the ground with thousands of holes!

The second leaf suddenly fired, and little Mo Xie was forced to dash up a tree, needles chasing closely after her tail, leaving a clean row of needles behind her!

“Gezhi”

The tree was very fragile. After being pierced by the needles, it immediately snapped, emitting a crisp noise before falling.

The third leaf had the most needles, and there was no cover for Mo Xie within 10 meters; she was completely exposed within the attack range of the needles!

“Pupupupupupu!!”

Hundreds of needles swept across like thundering hail, frenzily seeking to hit something!

“Moon Shadow.”

Mo Xie seemed to sit calmly, but a vague shadow started to appear on her body……

All the poison needles flew threw the blurry shadows as if it were

fog, encountering no resistance.

Moon Shadow was the Moonlight Fox's evasive ability. Even without the moon, she could cast it, but its effects would be slightly discounted.

Of course, with good control, even without moonlight, Moon Shadow could easily avoid many strong attacks.

Little Mo Xie's knew Moon Shadow since she was Stage one. Now that she mastered it, even without moonlight, dodging an ability like that was still no problem.

"Alright, finish it!" A confident smile appeared on Chu Mu's face.

Little Mo Xie's silhouette slowly became defined again. Crouching and dashing quickly, she slashed the Hundred Eyed Palm's stalk without any ability.

The body of the Palm was already bent. With the swipe of a claw, the stalk was finally ripped from its leaves, swatted down violently by Mo Xie.

Chu Mu jumped down from the tree. Looking at the corpse of the Hundred Eyed Palm, he petted Mo Xie and smiled while he said, "You bring me the soul core while I dig out the Gyokuro Pungen."

Chapter 20: A Crisis Appears

Gyokuro Pungens were relatively expensive; when Chu Mu dug it out, he had to be extremely cautious. If the stem was damaged at all, its value would completely diminish and today's hard work would be wasted.

Little Mo Xie's movements were rather quick and her claws slashed across a few times until she found the location of the Hundred Eyed Palm's flower bud and retrieved its Soul Core.

The plant world's Soul Cores were similar to the amber-sparkling and translucent ones. Its size was only as big as an adult's thumb. A majority of Soul Pet's Soul Cores were extremely small, but the energy inside was exceptionally large.

Currently, Chu Mu had only allowed Mo Xie to eat Beast type Soul Cores and Demon Spirit type Soul Cores. The other Soul Cores would not be eaten if possible.

In reality, Soul Pets eating Soul Cores that didn't belong to its attribute didn't have that large of an impact. However, if it only ate Soul Cores that belonged to its attribute, there definitely would be a few beneficial changes.

Little Mo Xie obediently stood to the side with the Hundred Eyed Palm's Soul Core hanging between its teeth. She waited for Chu Mu to dig out the Gyokuro Pungen.

“Okay, okay, don’t put on that pitiful face. This item is definitely for you to eat, but you have to wait until I find the Heavenly Blue Grass and combine them together before you eat it. It will be extremely beneficial for you.” Chu Mu caressed Mo Xie’s small head.

Mo Xie squinted her eyes. She enjoyed Chu Mu stroking her like this and let out a few whimpers…

“Let’s go. You should be hungry, so let’s go find a Beast Type Soul Pet for your meal.” Chu Mu put away the Gyokuro Pungen, stood up and looked into the depths of Mao Forest.

Mo Xie nodded her head and affectionately jumped into Chu Mu’s bosom in an attempt to make Chu Mu carry her.

Chu Mu was overcome by helplessness and said: “Right now you are only in the first evolution, so I have no problems carrying you. However, when you get to the higher evolutions…”

“Sha sha sha”

Chu Mu was in the midst of speaking when the cyan bug on his shoulder suddenly let out a soft noise.

“What, is there something?” Chu Mu immediately put down Mo Xie and asked in a soft voice.

“Sha sha sha” The small cyan bug only used an extremely soft

noise to reply; it's gaze fell on the area in front of Chu Mu.

"Learning Natural Heart would be the best. At the very least, I would be able to understand you." Chu Mu said.

The information the small cyan bug gave Chu Mu wasn't about danger, but instead a warning. The cyan bug was only trying to tell Chu Mu that there was something in front.

Chu Mu originally wanted to keep walking forward, so he brought Mo Xie and walked into the depths of Mao Forest.

After walking a few minutes, Chu Mu understood why the small cyan bug let out the noise. Approximately one hundred meters in front of Chu Mu, he had encountered one of those three people from before, Ma Zhi.

To Ma Zhi's side was another youth. This youth didn't make a large impression on Chu Mu and he didn't know his name.

"Truly excessive. He unexpectedly wanted us to stay here and defend. He told us that he was afraid of other Soul Pets and other groups obstructing his task, but he's clearly more afraid of us suddenly attacking him!" Ma Zhi indignantly said.

"Then what are we to do? Who let his Hunting Wolf be so strong? Even if a few of our Soul Pets combined forces, we still wouldn't be his opponent. All the benefits will naturally fall to him alone." The adjacent youth said.

“Aih, it’s not like you don’t know… in five days time, it will be the time of our deaths. Unless what Zhou Mo Sheng said was true, where he would help us inflict heavy losses to the other groups and thereby give us one of the 10 spots, we will definitely die.” Ma Zhi said.

“What are you insinuating?” The adjacent youth quickly caught on and lowered his voice.

“I haven’t said anything so don’t go arbitrarily thinking. I would much rather test my luck in the competition than to work with Zhou Mo Sheng. He’s even more ferocious than those foremen!” Ma Zhi immediately said.

“That’s right, that fellow will kill if he says he will kill. If it wasn’t for my strength being insignificant and that I didn’t had a chance of surviving on my own, there’s no way that I would’ve entered his group.”

Not far away, the hiding Chu Mu heard their discussion and rubbed his chin.

On the island, the matter of life and death was very crucial. At the very beginning, a majority of people would choose to act alone and search for High Ranking Soul Pets. However, in the end, there were some with inferior luck and strength, causing them to have obtained unsatisfactory Soul Pets. After going through the training stage, they would be even more inferior to others.

In this way, even if the Life and Death Contest had yet to arrive, many people knew that they were definitely going to die. Therefore, these people would have naturally choose to join and depend on a particularly strong Soul Pet Master. By doing this, they may still have a sliver of an opportunity to live

“After this time, there will no longer be anyone capable of being Zhou Mo Sheng’s opponent. He has already reached the Seventh Remembrance and obtained three Soul Pets…” Ma Zhi soliloquized.

“Indeed, he is actually too strong. There are definitely a plethora of people who still don’t know that he has three Soul Pets. Moreover, this is a Ninth Stage Soul Pet. If it’s actually subdued by him…”

Hearing this, Chu Mu’s eyebrows immediately creased and his expression turned gloomy.

On the island, everyone’s first Soul Pet was the Cyan Nightmare. The second Soul Pet was the one going to be used in the upcoming fight. As for those who managed to obtain a third Soul Pet, there simply wasn’t one. After all, the requirements for a Soul Pet Trainer’s Soul Power had to have reached the High Remembrance level.

A Soul Pet Trainer’s cultivation was divided into Nine Remembrances. The first three remembrances were Low Remembrance, the middle three were Mid Remembrances and the last three were High Remembrances.

Low Remembrance could only sustain one Soul Pact, a Mid Remembrance could have two Soul Pacts and a High Remembrance could have three Soul Pacts.

On the island, all Soul Pet Trainers were situated around the Fifth Remembrance and those with relatively high talent had reached the Sixth Remembrance. As for Zhou Mo Sheng, he had currently reached the Seventh Remembrance and his Soul Power was enough to sustain three Soul Pets!

An additional battle Soul Pet wasn't a small matter, even if they couldn't be simultaneously summoned!

"His current attack should definitely be at the high stage. If Zhou Mo Sheng is to obtain that ninth stage Soul Pet..." Chu Mu quickly realized the crisis' existence.

Chu Mu could be certain that if Zhou Mo Sheng were to encounter him in battle, he would kill him. The current Zhou Mo Seng was about to obtain three Soul Pets, so even if Chu Mu's control of the battle was strong, he was definitely still not his fellow's opponent!

"I definitely have to stop him." Chu Mu's face turned dark.

"I'll start by attacking these two."

Ma Zhi and that youth's Soul Pets were by their sides, so sneak

attacking them was extremely difficult. However, since they said they were guarding the exterior, Zhou Mo Sheng was most likely situated a ways away. Even if a fight were to break out, he probably wouldn't notice it, or wouldn't have the inclination to pay attention to it. After all, a ninth stage Soul Pet wasn't easy to deal with.

Chu Mu proceeded to walk out. He brought Mo Xie towards the two people with an apathetic look in his eyes.

Chapter 21: Murder, The Indifferent Fox

“Ha, if it isn’t Lady Chu! Walking around alone in the forest is dangerous, so go hide back in your hut and groom your little pet!” Ma Zhi saw Chu Mu walk up slowly, but immediately started jeering at him.

News of Chu Mu and Zhang Luo’s battle had been suppressed by Ge Qin, so no one knew the power of Chu Mu’s Moonlight Fox. Even if they did, no one would mind Chu Mu. After all, Zhang Luo wasn’t anyone formidable; him losing wasn’t abnormal.

“Stop stop, who let you pass through here? If you don’t wanna die, get your ass over to that side.” The grey-shirted boy beside yelled when he saw Chu Mu walking into the territory they held.

“Bastard, did you not hear what I said? If you don’t get lost, I’ll kill you!!” Seeing Chu Mu ignore him, the boy got even angrier.

Although the foremen forbade soul pet trainers to kill each other before the match, no one would know if someone was killed in the wilderness.

Chu Mu slowly raised his head, glancing coldly at the kid who was making a big fuss. Eyes suddenly sharpening, he said, “I don’t talk to dead people.”

Just as Chu Mu finished, his body slid back strangely, and a silver blur flew past him, leaping over Chu Mu’s shoulder and straight

towards the grey shirted boy!

Ripping Claw!

Criss crossing, sharp claws reflected a dangerous light, cutting a few loose falling leaves.

The grey shirted boy stopped talking, eyes widening in disbelief. Gargling frighteningly, he fell down on the ground, splattering thick blood onto the tree nearby.

Ma Zhi's mind went blank. Chu Mu killed that boy within two seconds, and within these two seconds Ma Zhi couldn't even see the movements of the Moonlight Fox!

Swift! The Moonlight fox was terrifyingly quick, its attacks vicious, killing with one blow. The boy didn't even have time to summon his soul pet!

Finally, Ma Zhi recovered from the fear, staggering back and summoned his own soul pet.

Ma Zhi's soul pet was a Rock Monster, Elemental World - Rock Type - Rock Monster Species - Medium rank. Standing 1.3 meters tall, it was humanoid, with a strong build and particularly bulky arms.

And from its appearance and color, it should be stage 6. The Rock Monster was a Defense and Power type soul pet. After reaching

stage 6, the rock skin should be at least advanced stage.

Rock skin itself's defense was already stronger than most other soul pets' skins. If little Mo Xie's claws were also only at the advanced stage, without any abilities, she wouldn't be able to break through this Rock Monster's defense.

"Rumble~~"

The Rock Monster was surprisingly heavy, causing the forest ground to shake with each step.

Chu Mu had already left the battlefield and immediately turned his attention onto Ma Zhi's Rock Monster.

"He-….Here….."After summoning his soul pet, Ma Zhi immediately tried to call for his comrades.

"Shashasha~~"

But just then, a white silk-like web suddenly fell from above and went straight into Ma Zhi's throat, almost completely blocking off Ma Zhi's windpipe, rendering him unable to speak and restricted his breathing.

"Mo Xie, kill him!" Chu Mu gave a command.

When fighting, Mo Xie personality revealed an entirely different

side-cold, cruel, and ruthless. After killing that boy, Mo Xie started speeding towards Ma Zhi!

Ma Zhi's throat was blocked, but he could still command the Rock Monster with his thoughts. When Mo Xie dashed towards him, Ma Zhi commanded the Rock Monster to crash into Mo Xie.

Mo Xie approached the Rock Monster head on, running at least three times faster!

The Rock Monster was definitely superior to Mo Xie in both power and defense, but it has no advantage in speed. Mo Xie's agile body continued to change irregularly, silver fur seemingly creating phantoms.

The Rock Monster took a big stride, jumping suddenly and charged straight at Mo Xie's tiny body!

Seeing the Rock Monster's movements, Chu Mu unexpectedly smiled, and stared at little Mo Xie.

The Rock Monster didn't jump too high. Extending his body, he covered quite a bit of range. If the fragile little Mo Xie got pinned underneath, she would die on the spot. However, just as the Rock Monster's shadow fell over Mo Xie, she suddenly quickened!!

"Sou!!"

A silver blur passed by. In the shadows, Mo Xie's speed increased

drastically, passing right under the Rock Monster's body!

"Dark Assault!" Ma Zhi was immediately startled. This ability to speed up under a shadow was an ambush ability that many beast type soul pets had!

A rank six Moonlight Fox not only casting this ambush ability, but using it in the short instant it was under the Rock Monster, was completely out of his expectations!

"Peng!!"

The Rock Monster toppled over, splashing dirt and grass everywhere and caused a tremble in the forest floor.

However, this didn't affect Mo Xie at all. Mo Xie was still speeding up as she ran, dashing straight towards Ma Zhi without any stop.

Ma Zhi stared blankly, not expecting the Moonlight Fox to be this strong. He hurriedly hid behind a tree while grabbing at his throat.

"Heng, how would hiding help?"Chu Mu laughed coldly.

Dark Assault brought Mo Xie's speed to an extreme, and jumping to cast Ripping Claw now would maximize its power!

"Shua!" A claw flew past!

“Ga Zhi!!”

The ten centimeter wide tree fell with a crash. Behind the tree, Ma Zhi was rigid, his tanned throat revealing a line of blood. When Mo Xie landed, the line started to spray strikingly crimson blood, and his body landed with the tree!

Ma Zhi’s pupils were opened wide, staring at the leaves covering the sky, eyes full of fear and shock!

The entire killing process took less than a minute. The two boys who were contemplating if they were going to be eliminated would never have thought that, the Chu Mu that seemed to be in the same situation as them had such terrifying power and killed them within a moment.

Chapter 22: Stage Nine Flametail

Viscous blood splattered onto the grass. The metallic scent was spread by the rampant winds, permeating the dense forest.

Mo Xie extended her claws while watching the two corpses, and simply licked her claws to clean them.

Chu Mu walked out from the surroundings, and gazed attentively at the dazed Rock Monster.

If the Soul Pet Trainer died, the Soul Pact with the Soul Pet would become null. The Rock Monster was free from Ma Zhi's control, so the previous commands given to it were naturally voided as well.

"Huo, huo……"

The Rock Monster stood there blankly, rubbing its head sillily. After some pointless wandering, it finally saw Mo Xie, but the cold stare emanating from her caused the Rock Monster to start panicking. It quickly escaped into the dense forest with large strides.

Soul Pets and their trainers were bounded by Soul Pacts, meaning that Soul Pet Trainers could command their Soul Pets to do anything. Once this pact was gone, the Soul Pet could then regain their freedom. Without the telepathic connection with their trainer, they would lose the special consideration that they had for

their trainer.

However, usually, once Soul Pets have been with their trainers for a long time, some feelings are formed. If the trainer was killed, the trainerless Soul Pet would very likely take revenge on the killer. The fact that this Rock Monster ran away meant that it didn't have any emotional attachment with Ma Zhi.

"You didn't expend too much energy, did you?"Chu Mu walked up to Mo Xie and asked.

"Wuwu~~"Mo Xie's eyes showed gentleness once again, but she still looked to be full of fighting spirit.

"Go rest in the space for a bit. Once there's a battle, I'll summon you again." Chu Mu said. Mo Xie had only used about 20% of her energy. Though it shouldn't affect her condition too much, they were fighting against strong enemies, so it was better to be in the best state possible.

Chu Mu then sent Mo Xie back to the Soul Pet space. Climbing onto the tree, he carried the cyan bug down and fed some rations to it. "You've deserved this too."

"Shashasha" The little cyan bug happily wiggled around, munching down on the rations that Chu Mu gave it.

Bringing the special little bug, Chu Mu kept walking deeper into the forest, where the woods were more dense. Chu Mu

remembered that the inner island was past a small patch of deciduous trees.

Now, Chu Mu had already entered the deciduous forest. The crunching sound of fallen leaves was especially sharp in the silent forest.

Chu Mu didn't dare to walk too quickly. After all, the opponents had Soul Pets too. If the opponents had a very perceptive Soul Pet, he would be easily discovered.

Chu Mu suddenly stopped, and gazed intently towards the deciduous trees further in. "Check ahead, I think I hear some sounds." He addressed the little bug on his shoulder.

The little bug was very smart, and was able to understand Chu Mu. With a small bounce, it shot itself onto a branch and then disappeared into the leaves.

Chu Mu advanced slowly. After another hundred meters, through the thinning branches, Chu Mu saw Luo Chen in a white outfit.

After a while, Chu Mu's little scout returned. Signalling with very interesting body language, it told Chu Mu there were three people and four Soul Pets ahead. Two people and their Soul Pets were fighting another Soul Pet, while the third person and his Soul Pet was just harassing from aside.

“It seems like Zhou Shengmo and another person are fighting the stage nine Soul Pet. The one that isn’t fighting is probably Luo Chen. I’ll have to get rid of him first.” Chu Mu thought.

Zhou Shengmo had a lot of people. Chu Mu would have a greater chance of success if he struck them one by one.

Chu Mu walked even closer. Just like he imagined, Zhou Shenmo’s Hunting Wolf was fighting the stage nine Flametail.

With Zhou Shengmo was Tang Xian, who had a stage eight Steel Teeth.

“It’s Tang Xian! Seems like this battle will be tough. But that Flametail seems pretty strong…” Chu Mu muttered to himself.

A Flametail was classified as Beast World - Demon Type - Flametail Species and had a species rank of High. It had a flaming tail, with a body shaped like a fierce hound. One could then deduce the stage of the Flametail from the color and depth of its flame.

The Flametail’s species rank didn’t lose to a Hunting Wolf’s, so if Zhou Shenmo’s Hunting Wolf was only at stage eight, it would be hard for him to win. No wonder he partnered up with Tang Xian and his stage eight Steel Teeth.

The battle was very intense as the stage nine Flametail was very strong. No matter its speed, strength, or defense, it was all better than Zhou Shenmo’s Hunting Wolf and Tang Xian’s Steel Teeth.

Coupled with the ability to use fire magic, Zhou Shenmo and Tang Xian were going to take a while to defeat the Flametail.

Luo Chen's Soul Pet was a Devil Wood Demon, so he didn't battle. The nemesis to most Plant World Soul Pets were fire type organisms. If his Devil Wood Demon caught even a spark of the Flametail's fire, it would lose the ability to fight.

"What's that sound!!" Zhou Shenmo said. As a Seventh Remembrance Soul Pet Trainer, he had a distinctly stronger awareness than the others.

"Sounds? You sure it's not a misperception?" Tang Xian was clearly focused on the troublesome Flametail, not aware of other things.

"I heard footsteps." Zhou Shenmo said.

"Ao!"

The Flametail emitted a roar and swiped its tail to create a brilliant ring of fire. The ring of fire quickly lit up nearby plants, creating a flame wall and separating the Hunting Wolf and Steel Teeth.

"Don't let it escape!" Zhou Shenmo shouted. He then glanced at Luo Chen and said, "You stay aware of the surroundings, there's something abnormal nearby."

“Sousousou”

Graceful footsteps sounded on the dry leaves, darting quickly from the branches!

Mo Xie appeared beside Luo Chen in a split second, her claws gleaming with danger!

“Humph, you want to sneak attack me?” Luo Chen laughed coldly, but closed his eyes.

The moment Luo Chen closed his eyes, the Devil Wood Demon extended its old hand-like branch,and protected Luo Chen.

“Shua!!”

Mo Xie’s claws swiped past, leaving a deep gouge mark in the branch, nearly snapping it in half!

Luo Chen stared blankly at the deep mark and began to sweat profusely! If the claws had penetrated just a bit deeper, then they would’ve sliced his throat!

“Who is it!!” Luo Chen shouted angrily. Though he had already expected a sneak attack, he didn’t expect that a slight underestimation of the enemy almost cost him his life!

Chu Mu stopped hiding and walked out of the trees, his eyes

staring coldly at the furious Luo Chen.

Mo Xie has already returned to Chu Mu's side. Man and fox. They stood quietly in the shadows of a tree, painting a strange and almost demonic image.

Chapter 23: The One Who Died Was Luo Chen

"Someone who wants your life!" Chu Mu coldly said.

"Who do you think you are? You're looking to die!" Luo Chen's expression turned gloomy and he unwaveringly stared at Chu Mu. Just now, Mo Xie's one claw strike had made his heart palpitate.

"Luo Chen, get rid of him. Don't let him become a hinderance!" Zhou Shengmo fiercely swept his gaze over Chu Mu and spoke to Luo Chen.

"You don't need to say that to me!" Luo Chen was clearly angry and quickly jumped onto the Devil Wood Demon's arm. He directed his Soul Pet to kill both Chu Mu and Mo Xie!

The Devil Wood Demon was a Plant World-Wood Type-Devil Wood Demon race, High Ranked species. From an external view, it seemed to have stage seven strength.

The Devil Wood Demon's stature was close to three meters. It most likely was the largest Soul Pet of the Soul Pet Trainers on this island. Its long and withered arm that hung down from the treetop could touch the ground.

When the Devil Wood Demon moved, it would completely rely on these two long arms. In terms of speed, the Devil Wood Demon

was much slower than even the Rock Demon, but its strength was greater than that of the Rock Demon. It wouldn't be easy to deal with the Devil Wood Demon.

Moreover, Luo Chen seemed to be an extremely knowledgeable Soul Pet Trainer. He understood how to use a Soul Pet in the midst of a battle in order to completely protect himself. If it were someone else, Mo Xie's Dark Assault would definitely have taken his life instantaneously.

"Hmph, I didn't think you would be able to raise a trash fox to such a level. Nonetheless, what difference does it make? Trash is trash and will still die!" Luo Chen towered above and looked down on Chu Mu and Mo Xie!

"Mo Xie, retreat." Chu Mu quickly retreated while Mo Xie slowly stepped backwards while baring her fangs. Her two silver eyes unwaveringly stared at the massive Devil Wood Demon.

"You can't retreat anymore. You sought a path to your own death, so I can only help you with that!" Luo Chen sneered.

As soon as Luo Chen's voice dissipated, one of the Devil Wood Demon's arms suddenly extended. Its withered fingers were like four rusty lances as they abruptly thrusted towards Chu Mu and Mo Xie.

Chu Mu's movements were not slow; in a flash, he had dodged the attack. As for Mo Xie, her movements were even more agile. With a few light hops, she dodged as well!

“Jump up!” Chu Mu said.

Mo Xie’s movements were still much quicker than the Devil Wood Demon, and as it wasn’t able to retract its arm in time, Mo Xie had already climbed onto its arm. She quickly rushed up the arm and proceeded to pounce towards Luo CHen.

“Wooden Sting!” Luo Chen yelled. Once his voice faded, six javelin like, withered branches abruptly appeared on its torso. The pointed ends all locked onto Mo Xie and suddenly pierced towards her!

Mo Xie’s path in front was closed off and she had no option but to relinquish the attack. She jumped off of the Devil Wood Demon’s arm and leapt onto an adjacent large tree!

“Weng!!”

A sharp tree branch ferociously followed Mo Xie’s tail and nearly pierced both Mo Xie’s tail and the adjacent tree!

Flames continued to spread, igniting the surrounding plants, turning this forest into a fervent red color of heat.

Tang Xian swept his gaze over Luo Chen, who was in the process of chasing, and said: “Why haven’t you dispatched of him yet?”

“That piece of trash, Luo Chen’s Soul Pet is too slow. It’s normal for it to take longer to kill that crafty fox. Ultimately, though, that fox will die.” Zhou Shengmo nonchalantly said.

“That fox is probably hiding its strength. Just now, that sneak attack nearly killed Luo Chen.” Tang Xian said.

“Hpmh, there are many people who are hiding their strength, but what difference does that make?” Zhou Shengmo waved his hand and didn’t bother paying attention to the sudden appearance of Chu Mu. He focused his attention on the stage nine Flame Tail and said:

“It already doesn’t have much physical strength left. Let your Steel Teeth continue attacking it.”

Tang Xian glanced at the arrogant and apathetic Zhou Shengmo and the corner of his mouth twitched . Throughout the entire battle with the stage nine Flame Tail, it seemed to have only been his Steel Teeth attacking while Zhou Shengmo’s Hunting Wolf preserved its strength from the beginning.

Although Zhou Shengmo was arrogant, he wasn’t the least bit stupid. He was currently the publicly accepted strongest soul pet trainer. No matter if it was his circle’s people or others, in order to have a better chance at surviving, they wouldn’t hesitate to attack him if they had the chance. Zhou Shengmo was clearly aware of this fact, so during the battle, he continued to preserve his best fighting strength while he let other people’s Soul Pets use their all in the battle.

“It’s over!” A smile appeared on Zhou Shengmo’s face. He found an opportunity and instructed his Hunting Wolf to launch a Dark Assault!!

A stage eight Hunting Wolf’s pouncing speed was quite terrifying. The Flame Tail was in the midst of confronting the Steel Teeth when the Hunting Wolf quickly and violently launched a sneak attack. The Flame Tail was fundamentally unable to react!

“Boom!!” The Hunting Wolf ferociously struck the Flame Tail’s flank. The Flame Tail let out a miserable shriek and flew a few meters before striking the ground and rolling away. It spat out a captivatingly red color of blood.

The flame on its tail began weakening. Like a light breeze brushing over a candle, it would be extinguished. The stage nine Flame Tail curled its body and its eyes stared at the Hunting Wolf and Steel Teeth in an unreconciled manner…

“Stand beside me and protect me. I’m going to give you another comrade.” Zhou Shengmo laughed, and after patting his Hunting Wolf, he slowly walked in front of the Flame Tail.

Tang Xian called the Steel Teeth in front of him and coldly stared at Zhou Shengmo. He seemed to harbor another intention. However, the moment he saw that the Hunting Wolf was still full of fighting strength, Tang Xian ultimately had no choice but to stifle his intentions.

“Ah!!”

Suddenly, a wretched cry rang out from the forest. The yell reverberated around the forest and expressed a rather terrified voice!

Zhou Shengmo turned his head and glanced at the forest. He laughed and said to Tang Xian: “Truthfully speaking, I would still much rather watch the death of Chu Mu.”

“You have a grudge with him?” Tang Xian only twitched the corner of his mouth. He didn’t have a good impression of Chu Mu. As a person who arrived to the island as the same time as him, Tang Xian despised his weak and small figure. Truthfully, Tang Xian looked down on everyone, including Zhou Shengmo who he was currently working with. However, Zhou Shengmo’s strength was currently stronger than him and he had no option but to suffer in silence.

“Of course there is. If it wasn’t for him, I wouldn’t be here. His Chu Clan is comprised of a bunch of people who should die!” Zhou Shengmo’s expression changed.

“Hmm, once you obtain this Flame Tail, you can go over to his dead body and whip it a few times.” Tang Xian said.

“Obviously… however, it would be best if Little Meng was here.” Zhou Shengmo let out a loud laugh.

“Who is Little Meng?” Tang Xian asked.

“That’s none of your business. Carefully look over Luo Chen; that person isn’t very sincere!” Zhou Shengmo said.

Tang Xian was about to say something when he heard footsteps. Thus, he turned around and looked at where the origin of the shout was.

Tang Xian opened his mouth and said to the approaching person: “Luo Chen, that brat…”

Tang Xian finished half of his sentence when he was suddenly startled. His gaze was incomparably stunned as he stared at the black clothed youth and yelled: “Chu Mu!!!! The one who died was Luo Chen!!!”

Chapter 24: Soul Technique, Chong Mei

Tang Xian's face changed. Zhou Shengmo also turned around and displayed an extremely monstrous expression as he stared at Chu Mu!!

Chu Mu stood silently with a dagger covered in red blood in his hand. His gaze was cold as he stared at the other two people. Standing beside him was Mo Xie. Her eyes held the same coldness as Chu Mu and the blood on her claws had yet to dry. It fell onto the green grass drip by drip.

"Luo Chen is truly careless. He clearly knew that it was a life and death battle, but believed that you would only use Soul Pet attacks." Seeing the bloody dagger in Chu Mu's hand, a smile gradually emerged on Zhou Shengmo's face.

"However, the death of such a piece of trash is also fine. This way I don't have to be vigilant of him."

Tang Xian's expression turned even more gloomy. In order to dispose of Luo Chen who was ranked in the top ten in terms of strength in such a short period of time, Chu Mu, who had always been low key, was definitely hiding his strength.

Moreover, up until now, Ma Zhi and the other one who were both standing guard on the outside hadn't appeared. One didn't even need to make a guess to know that Chu Mu had already disposed of them.

A continuous slaughter of three people! Among them was also Luo Chen with strength in the top ten! This sort of strength and ferociousness exhibited by Chu Mu truly made one shiver!

“Tang Xian, get rid of him.” Zhou Shengmo ordered!

“My Steel Teeth no longer has much fighting strength left...” Tang Xian’s eyebrows creased as he spoke. It was pretty much only him who had fought the last battle, so his current Steel Teeth didn’t even have one half of its fighting strength.

“His trash fox also doesn’t have much fighting strength. Kill him and when you reach the Seventh Remembrance, I will help you obtain a third Soul Pet.” Zhou Shengmo still didn’t want to fight himself.

Tang Xian ground his teeth and coldly glared at Chu Mu. He stepped forwards towards Chu Mu and the Steel Teeth adjacent to him displayed an extremely ferocious appearance as it bared its fangs and exposed its sharp hunting teeth. It seemed to be able to rip apart the prey in front of it at any time.

Chu Mu calmly watched Tang Xian and his Steel Teeth as he slowly hid the dagger in his sleeve.

Mo Xie adopted a half-crouching position and her claws had already sunk into the muddy ground. She was like a fully nocked bow, ready to release at any moment!!

Tang Xian was aware that his own Soul Pet's battle strength was already attenuated and didn't dare to treat Chu Mu with any sort of contempt. He very meticulously made his Steel Teeth slowly creep closer.

Chu Mu didn't have much patience and pre-emptively brandished his hand. Mo Xie was like an arrow flying out of a bow and quickly leapt forward violently. The weeds in the ground were suddenly like ripples in water as they flew up into the air on both sides.

The Steel Teeth was also classified as an agile type beast, and after Mo Xie suddenly charged at it, the Steel Teeth reacted extremely quickly. Its long teeth abruptly headed towards Mo Xie's neck as it threw itself forwards in an attempt to bite her.

"Moon Shadow!"

Whilst in battle, Chu Mu and Mo Xie's thoughts seemed to be interconnected-Chu Mu's thoughts were Mo Xie's exact thoughts!

As Mo Xie was rushed forward, a few blurry images arose around her alacritous silhouette. The Steel Teeth's hunting teeth abruptly bit down, but only managed to bite off a piece of Mo Xie's fur as Mo Xie's claws streaked across the side of the Steel Teeth's body. A bloody gash was left on the Steel Teeth's slightly scorched body!

"Moon Shadow while moving, it's already at the late stage!" Tang Xian's face immediately darkened. After the first confrontation,

his Steel Teeth was already at the disadvantage.

Zhou Shengmo unhurriedly released his Soul Pact and proceeded to calmly spectate from the side. He fully adopted the attitude of a winner.

Chu Mu knew that his greatest opponent was Zhou Shengmo, and that if he expended too much physical power during his fight with Tang Xian, it would be extremely hard for Mo Xie to defeat the eighth stage savage Hunting Wolf.

“Mo Xie, Charm!” Chu Mu said.

Mo Xie fought with the Steel Teeth for a few bouts before immediately jumping backwards. Her two cold, silver eyes suddenly released a magnificent luster like it was projecting the image of stars-it was aesthetic to the max!

When the adjacent Zhou Shengmo saw Chu Mu’s Moonlight Fox unexpectedly release its Charm ability, he couldn’t help but let out a loud laugh.

Zhou Shengmo laughing was quite normal. Charm was a mental ability that was quite common. This sort of an ability was not able to directly injure the opponent during a battle, and could only barely restrict the opponent for the briefest of moments.

More importantly, the Charm ability wasn’t something that could be used on all Soul Pets. Low level Soul Pets were unable to

charm high level Soul Pets.

Although Chu Mu's Moonlight Fox was uncommon, from its external appearance and aura, one could guess that it was approximately at stage six. At the very most, it didn't surpass stage seven.

As for Tang Xian's Steel Teeth, it was at stage eight. Tang Xian himself was a Sixth Remembrance Soul Apprentice. Therefore, even if his battle strength was somewhat exhausted, his willpower was definitely not weak enough to be charmed by a stage six Moonlight Fox.

The instant Mo Xie released Charm, a strange silver and white colored luster appeared in Chu Mu's eyes. Then it blossomed!!

Chu Mu's mental ability was stronger than every person on the island. Mo Xie's Charm ability not only stemmed from her own mind, but was also supplemented with Chu Mu's mental strength!

The silver eyes were even more bewitching and both Tang Xian and the Steel Teeth were completely attracted by it. Unexpectedly, they were unable to break their gaze and their eyes were filled with inconceivable fear and desolation!

The moment an identical change appeared in Chu Mu's eyes, Zhou Shengmo's smile immediately froze and he suddenly swept his gaze over Tang Xian and the Steel Teeth who had seemed to lose their souls.

“What happened!! Tang Xian!!! Hurry and wake up!!” Zhou Shengmo angrily yelled.

With Zhou Shengmo’s loud shout, Tang Xian abruptly shook his head and his eyes immediately returned to normal.

“It’s too late-die!” Chu Mu’s bewitching pupils slowly condensed into a cold sword that shot towards Tang Xian’s Steel Teeth.

Tang Xian had returned to normal, but his Steel Teeth was still in a desolate and despondent state.

“Sou sou sou!!!” Mo Xie abruptly charged forward the moment Chu Mu’s eye beams condensed.

Ripping Claw!!!

Two streaks of cold light seemed to interweave with Chu Mu’s silver light eye beams-a graceful display of both light and shadow, with blood droplets flying everywhere!

Deep and bloody wounds astonishingly appeared on the Steel Teeth’s vital areas, causing the already injured Steel Teeth’s body to completely split open!

The Steel Teeth’s body suddenly began twitching, but its eyes still remained desolate and despondent. Ultimately, it slowly collapsed into a pool of blood!

The bloody scene occurred right in front of Tang Xian. Having just recently recovered from his despondent state, he immediately changed into a stiff and rigid statue. His two eyes that gradually changed red were full of appellation!!

“This…how did this happen…your Soul Power…” Tang Xian pointed at Chu Mu. His voice had already started trembling.

Chu Mu demonically and charmingly gave a smile. His two silver eyes gradually returned to their normal state. His entire being was incomparably nefarious.

“Soul Technique, Chong Mei!” Zhou Shengmo’s expression instantly darkened and the veins in his forehead were bulging!

“You… you’re not a Soul Apprentice, you’re a Soul Soldier!” Tang Xian retreated in a fright, but pathetically tripped over the tree roots!

Soul Technique!! The ability only Soul Pet Masters were able to use!

As for the Soul Technique-Chong Mei, it was the Chu Clan’s most outstanding ability! Soul Pet Masters could consume their own Soul Power in order to perform Soul Pet Techniques!

In order to truly control Chong Mei, at the very least, one had to reach the Soul Soldier level! In other words, one had to step past

the Soul Apprentice realm’s Nine Remembrances!

Chapter 25: Pitiful Appearance, Mo Xie's Disguise

Zhou Shengmo's expression became worse and worse. Glaring viciously at Chu Mu, he grudgingly said, "No wonder you can withstand the torture of a White Nightmare, you're already a Spirit Soldier!"

Chu Mu glanced at him apathetically, slowly extracting a dagger hidden in his hand and flicked it carelessly. The dagger morphed into a streak of silver and accurately pierced Tang Xian's forehead, impaling itself deeply in his skull.

A line of blood slowly oozed out of Tang Xian's forehead. Tang Xian had just propped himself up, but slowly fell down again, eyes completely white, facing upwards……

Upon Tang Xian's death, Zhou Shengmo did not display any emotion and as before, said, "But, so what? The White Nightmare is completely restricting your soul power. Casting one soul technique is your limit. You'll be useless in battle now!"

"For you, my Mo Xie is enough." Chu Mu walked to Tang Xian's corpse and pulled his dagger out of Tang Xian's forehead, staring at Zhou Shengmo's vicious Hunting Wolf.

"Enough? A stage six, trash soul pet, even with good ability usage, is still just a piece of trash!" Zhou Shengmo said with somewhat mockery.

Zhou Shengmo waved his arm and immediately his stage eight Hunting Wolf rushed forward straight at Chu Mu!

Chu Mu backed up slightly and Mo Xie immediately dashed forward, figure graceful, moving forward erratically with elegant steps.

“Awoo!!!” The Hunting Wolf approached Mo Xie, and its long claws viciously slashed forward, twinkling with cold light while uprooting vegetation!

Little Mo Xie’s defense was very weak, so she was unable to take any attack from the Hunting Wolf. As a result, she had to twist her body mid-sprint to avoid the Hunting Wolf’s attack, flanking the Hunting Wolf.

The Hunting Wolf was very quick as well. When it landed, it forcefully turned its body, opened up its maw, and lunged towards Mo Xie’s neck.

Without a choice, Mo Xie had to cast Moon Shadow and quickly duck under a tree shadow while jumping consecutively to evade the imminent Hunting Wolf.

“Violent Wolf’s Demonic Strike!!”

Zhou Shengmo was good at seizing opportunities. Just as Mo Xie was midair from a leap, he suddenly ordered his Hunting Wolf to

use the ability.

The Hunting Wolf spun around, its blue eyes locked onto Mo Xie, and it pounced forward with its meter long body, striking in fast succession!

“Shua shua shua shua shua shua!!!”

Six strikes!!! The foremen’s Hunting Wolves could only use a four strike Violent Wolf’s Demonic Strike, yet Zhou Shengmo’s stage eight Hunting Wolf could already use six!!

Mo Xie backed up and cast Moon Shadow again at the cost of exhausting her stamina. However, the six strikes were not easily avoided, and the last strike slashed a bloody wound on Mo Xie which immediately oozed blood!

“Heng, you asked for your own death!” Zhou Shengmo stared coldly at the fight between Mo Xie and his Hunting Wolf. His Hunting Wolf’s claws and teeth were already final stage. If he hit the fragile fox directly, it would be fatal. If not for a tree blocking the hit, the Moonlight Fox would be dead already!

“Your garbage fox is at most late stage, and my Hunting Wolf’s fur is already late stage. Even with abilities, you can at most leave a scratch. Chu Mu, you’ll definitely lose, haha! Why not try using a soul technique, maybe you still have a chance!” Zhou Shengmo guffawed and said.

Chu Mu stayed calm. He couldn't use Chong Mei anymore, or his soul would be eaten by the Nightmare like Zhang Luo.

"Can't break its defense? Let's see about that!" a smile emerged on Chu Mu's face. Seizing the opportunity of Zhou Shengmo's carelessness, he immediately ordered for Mo Xie to attack!

Mo Xie's petite body, though wounded, jumped easily through two trees and suddenly appeared behind the Hunting Wolf! She flipped over and clawed upside down!

"Shua!!" Mo Xie didn't use any ability. Her claws swept past and immediately left a wound on the Hunting Wolf's rear, deep enough to see muscle!!

Blood oozed out of the Hunting Wolf and it let out a furious roar and turned around to pounce at Mo Xie.

Mo Xie's jump, attack, landing, and evasion were all done fluidly. When the Hunting Wolf finally turned around to pounce using Shadow Assault, Mo Xie had already dashed into a bush. The Hunting Wolf's attack only broke a tree.

Seeing his Hunting Wolf get hurt, Zhou Shengmo's brows furrowed. The Moonlight Wolf was only at stage six with late stage claws. Even with its speed, there was no way it could contend against his Hunting Wolf. But now, the outcome of the fight was no longer clear!

Chu Mu was still very confident, properly using Mo Xie's slim body to constantly hide in brushes, backing off after attacking once, and incessantly circling the Hunting Wolf.

Zhou Shengmo's expression got even gloomier, as he realized that something was off about Chu Mu's Moonlight Fox!

"Shadow Assault, Ripping Claw!"

Chu Mu ordered. Mo Xie unpredictable dashed out of the shadows, fast as lightning, and her claws ripped into the Hunting Wolf's waist!!

The Hunting Wolf already reacted, but Mo Xie's attack range was very wide. Her claws instantly tore a long gash along the Hunting Wolf's skin!

"Awoo!" The Hunting wolf let out a grieving howl and furiously spun around to headbutt Mo Xie away.

After Mo Xie was headbutted away, she spun around in mid air and landed with ease, sliding a distance.

"Damned Pitiful Appearance! How could I have forgotten that this garbage fox had this ability!!" Zhou Shengmo suddenly shouted, staring furiously at Chu Mu!

"Truly incurably stupid, realizing only now." Chu Mu smiled with disdain.

Pitiful Appearance. It was the Moonlight Fox's special disguise ability that utilized its pretty and delicate appearance to confuse foes.

It was a status displaying ability. No matter how strong the Moonlight Fox was, as long as it kept its Pitiful Appearance, it would always look weak and delicate to others.

Zhou Shengmo didn't know Mo Xie's real power. Even Ding Yu, whom Chu Mu always interacted with, didn't notice.

Chu Mu's Mo Xie, under the effects of Pitiful Appearance, kept the appearance and the aura of a stage six all along. However, Mo Xie has already reached the pinnacle of its level, stage nine!

The reason Ding Yu could never win against Chu Mu was not simply because of a matter of counters. Her Thorny Rose Demon and Chu Mu's Mo Xie were not even on the same level!

"Mo Xie, get rid of Pitiful Appearance and let them see our real strength!" Chu Mu smiled. Now that it had been discovered, there was no point in disguising it. What was needed more was the strength of a stage higher than eight!

Standing within the mottled tree shadows, Mo Xie rose her head and let out a cry that echoed through the forest above!

Chapter 26: Lethal Moonlight

A violent gust brushed past, stirring countless auburn leaves and caused them to constantly flutter around Mo Xie!

Mo Xie's silver fur waved frenzily in the wind. A radiance appeared near her fur. As if it was growing, the silver whiskers became even brighter and more beautiful!

After Pitiful Appearance was removed, with a slender body, powerful limbs, noble fur, and a cold glare, not only did Mo Xie become more beautiful, but she also obtained a hint of severity, like that of a royal cold beauty who rejects people from afar, with eyes full of calculated killing intent!

As a stage nine Moonlight Fox, when she released her aura, the Hunting Wolf immediately showed signs of panic, with his eyes fixated on Mo Xie, recognizing her as a major enemy!

"Free the wildness within you!"

Mo Xie arrogantly raised her head, and let loose a frigid cry that penetrated the forest!

"Awoo!!!" The Hunting Wolf immediately retaliated with his own howl.

The Hunting Wolf acted as if he was against an immense enemy,

and Zhou Shengmo's forehead similarly dripped with cold sweat. This Chu Mu seriously hid it too well. If not for today's constant battling that made him notice the Moonlight Fox's peculiarities, Zhou Shengmo would never have realized that Chu Mu's Moonlight Fox had always been using Pitiful Appearance. If they had met a few days later in the competition, this disguise would have definitely been fatal!

"Today, only one of us will leave here alive!" Zhou Shengmo clenched his teeth, knowing that he had to get rid of Chu Mu, especially since Chu Mu was already a Spirit Soldier. Once his Nightmare could battle, Zhou Shengmo would have no chance winning against Chu Mu!

With her final stage claws, after removing Pitiful Appearance, Mo Xie's claws were definitely not inferior to that of the Hunting Wolf's. Even when fighting claw to claw, she wouldn't fall into a disadvantage!

However, the Hunting Wolf still had a clear advantage in power, so Chu Mu would never let Mo Xie confront the Hunting Wolf head to head. Instead he chose to rely on an advantage in speed to attack the Hunting Wolf!

Once Pitiful Appearance was removed, Mo Xie's speed could be fully taken advantage of. The stage eight Hunting Wolf couldn't even catch Mo Xie's shadow!

"Dark Assault!"

“Shua!!”

The late stage fur of the Hunting Wolf couldn’t stop Mo Xie’s final stage claws at all. With the speed from Dark Assault, this hit still deeply wounded the Hunting Wolf’s foreleg, even without using Ripping Claw,!

Four gashes had already appeared on the Hunting Wolf’s body. Breathing heavily and with eyes full of anger, he constantly bared his fangs, wanting to break Mo Xie’s neck. Yet, the Hunting Wolf could never find a good opportunity to deliver a fatal hit to Mo Xie.

“Mo Xie, Charm!” Seeing Mo Xie pull away from the Hunting Wolf, Chu Mu immediately ordered.

Mo Xie’s stage nine Charm had a certain effect already. Although it couldn’t stun a Steel Teeth completely like when Chu Mu casted it, it could still momentarily faze the Hunting Wolf.

Mo Xie’s silver pupils swirled again, sending rays of light to pierce the Hunting Wolf’s eyes. The Hunting Wolf immediately covered its eyes with its front paws. Clearly Zhou Shengmo had guessed Chu Mu’s purposes beforehand.

“Heng, don’t think that your soul pet is the only one with special powers. This ability is useless against my soul pet!” Zhou Shengmo twitched the corner of his mouth. Eyeing his own Hunting Wolf, he laughed coldly and said, “I’ll let you see a Hunting Wolf’s true brutality!”

“Hunting Wolf, Blood Yearning!”

Just as Zhou Shengmo finished, the Hunting Wolf abruptly rose its head, emitting a shocking howl into the forest sky!

Both the Steel Teeth and Tang Xian’s corpse were flowing with blood. The Hunting Wolf itself was bleeding as well. The scent of blood had already permeated throughout the forest, and just when the Hunting Wolf howled, the bloody scent started aggregating around the Hunting Wolf as if it was being controlled!

Chu Mu furrowed his brows. Blood Thirst was the most difficult to handle out of a Hunting Wolf’s abilities.

Dark Assault!

After the Hunting Wolf casted Blood Thirst, its speed grew substantially. A blur flew forwards and quickly reached Mo Xie, with claws suddenly swiping towards Mo Xie’s head!

Mo Xie immediately casted Moon Shadow to evade the Hunting Wolf’s ruthless strike, but the Hunting Wolf’s fighting strength suddenly became terrifying. Once Dark Assault was finished, it immediately casted Violent Wolf’s Demonic Strike, swiping six times in quick succession!!

“Shua Shua Shua Shua Shua Shua!!”

Six claws swiped past, hitting Mo Xie at least twice. Two criss-

crossing wounds immediately appeared on Mo Xie's back, drenching her silver fur in crimson blood!

"Now, Ripping Claw !" Zhou Shengmo smiled cruelly, giving no chance for Mo Xie to take a breath.

"Shua Shua!!"

Mo Xie, though wounded, did not slow down. Quickly leaping to a tree and bouncing up, she put some distance between the Hunting Wolf and herself.

"Hide, hide! No matter how you hide, you'll still die!" Zhou Shengmo laughed, suddenly ordering the Hunting Wolf to pounce at Chu Mu.

Seeing the Hunting Wolf pounce towards Chu Mu, Mo Xie's eyes immediately became frigid and she dashed towards the Hunting Wolf.

"A death wish?" Zhou Shengmo laughed coldly, as if expecting Chu Mu's Moonlight Fox, he suddenly commanded the Hunting Wolf to turn around and swipe!

Mo Xie didn't evade in time, and suffered another bloody wound to her body. She lost her balance while moving, staggering to a fall beside Chu Mu.

Seeing Mo Xie deeply wounded, Chu Mu's heart trembled. Seeing

the Hunting Wolf lunge forward, he threw his dagger towards it without the slightest hesitation!

After using Blood Thirst, the Hunting Wolf became very frightening. Facing Chu Mu's dagger, it let the dagger impale his shoulder and continued to leap towards Chu Mu.

"Sila" (TL note: sound of stuff ripping) Chu Mu put up his hands to defend, but both hands were immediately ripped bloody with gashes. He fell backwards from the Hunting Wolf's pounce.

"Huhuhu"

"Die!" Zhou Shengmo shouted.

Even when exposed to the Hunting Wolf's teeth, Chu Mu was still very cool-headed, balling up to stop the Hunting Wolf from tearing his throat apart. He then glanced at Mo Xie.

The cold wind blew past, blowing apart the canopy, along with the clouds. A few rays of ghostly moonlight fell onto the forest, making the bloodied forest seem even more desolate.

"Mo Xie, Moonlight!!!"

"Wuu" Mo Xie lifted her head, and allowed the serene moonlight to splash across her silver fur, the radiance covering her like a luxurious set of armor. The shallower wounds on her body miraculously started to show signs of healing!

Chapter 27: Duo Type Soul Crystal

Silver moonlight, silver fur flowing in the wind, silver pupils shining coldly!

Watching the crescent that cast the moonlight, Zhou Shengmo suddenly realized something and shuddered, shouting out, “Shit!”

Moon Essence!

The Species Ability, Moon Essence!

This ability only worked under moonlight, so for most battle scenarios and settings, it was hard to utilize.

However, once bathed in moonlight, not only would the soul pet’s fighting strength recover quickly, the other attributes would also be improved as well!

“Mo Xie, Charm!”

Chu Mu, while still fending off the Hunting Wolf’s snapping jaw, yelled towards Mo Xie!

Mo Xie was already shrouded in moonlight. Charming rays suddenly blossomed out of her beautiful pupils, and pierced the Hunting Wolf’s eyes like daggers. Regardless of where the Hunting

Wolf was looking, it couldn't resist this mental attack!

The Hunting Wolf's gaze immediately blanked and its attacks stopped. It became motionless, as if its soul was stolen.

Dark Assault!

After collapsing the Hunting Wolf's mind, Mo Xie rushed forward under the moonlight!

Mo Xie's running speed was naturally fast. Dark Assault made her even faster, and with the addition of Moon Essence, her speed was raised to a new limit. Her body flew past the Hunting Wolf like a silver lightning bolt, unstoppable!

Ripping Claw!

Silver claws ripped through the murky night, dragging a cold glint through the dark, slashing right across the Hunting Wolf's head!

"Puchi"

A shocking amount of blood suddenly spurted out. As Ripping Claw passed through, the Hunting Wolf's head was brutally split from its neck!

Viscous blood poured out of its neck. The Hunting Wolf went rigid after a few seconds and, along with the dismembered head,

slowly fell to the ground.

The bloody wolf head kept on rolling until it finally came to a stop at Zhou Shengmo's feet. Seeing this frightening scene, Zhou Shengmo momentarily forgot to flee!

"Kill him, don't let him escape!" Chu Mu kicked the Hunting Wolf's corpse aside and gave a command to Mo Xie.

Only then did Zhou Shengmo suddenly realize that his death was imminent. His face blanched with fear and, without caring about the severed soul pact, he haphazardly ran deeper into the forest!

Without a soul pet and with an inability to cast any soul technique, how could Zhou Shengmo escape Mo Xie's vicious attempts for his life?

Chu Mu propped himself up with great difficulty. His arm was badly mangled by the Hunting Wolf. Not even his face was spared, which was scarred with a deep claw wound.

"AHH!!"

A blood-curdling scream suddenly echoed through the silent forest, startling a group of birds, who left their perch flapping frantically, adding panicked bird calls to the mix.

Chu Mu stared into the pitch black forest. From within, a pair of silver white eyes gradually came into view, slowly approaching

him.

These eyes showed a severe cold and apathy, but when they neared Chu Mu, they slowly softened, finally becoming docile.

“Wuwuwu~~” Mo Xie’s eyes twinkled and she started to lightly lick at Chu Mu’s bloodied arm.

“I’m fine, are you ok?” Chu Mu stroked little Mo Xie’s fluffy fur and let out a pent up breath.

“Wuwu~~”

“Come over, I’ll help you treat your wounds…It’s fine, it’s fine, you were the one doing all the fighting, these scratches of mine won’t be a hindrance.” Chu Mu slowly smeared the last of the healing herb onto Mo Xie’s wounds……

“Wuwu~Wu~~” Mo Xie laid down in Chu Mu’s embrace, the comfortable warmth from the healing herb slowly made Mo Xie slightly tired.

Battling continuously, Mo Xie was indeed exhausted. Though the Moon Essence had a certain healing effect, Mo Xie was still covered in wounds. Without a few days, it would be difficult to recover completely.

Chu Mu slowly treated every wound on Mo Xie. After dressing the wounds, Chu Mu muttered the incantation to withdraw Mo Xie

into his soul pet space.

Soul pet spaces also had a recovering effect. Mo Xie could get better rest in it.

After he finished handling Mo Xie, Chu Mu carelessly dressed the gashes on his arm with cloth strips. To Chu Mu, these wounds were nothing. As long as he wasn't dead, he could keep fighting.

Chu Mu retrieved his dagger and walked to the Hunting Wolf's corpse. Cutting open the body, he extracted its soul core.

The Eighth Stage Beast Type soul core would be enough to allow Mo Xie's fur to reach final stage. Then, Mo Xie's resistance could be improved. Chu Mu decided to feed it to Mo Xie when she woke up.

Finished with the Hunting Wolf's corpse, Chu Mu's gaze fell on the Ninth Stage Flametail.

The Flametail had died from loss of blood not long ago when Chu Mu was battling Zhou Shengmo, so Chu Mu naturally couldn't let this resource go to waste.

"Poor thing, but honestly, even dying is better than following that beast of a person." Chu Mu said while crouched beside the Flametail. Only after caressing its head did Chu Mu slowly pull out his dagger and start dissecting the body.

Chu Mu's wounds did not hit any major artery, so they weren't severe. He dissected the body fluidly, and the process was swift.

Soul cores were usually located where a soul pet's heart was. When Chu Mu opened up the Flametail's chest cavity, he quickly found the energy-filled organ.

"Strange, this soul core seems to be a bit different." When Chu Mu ripped aside the Flametail's ribcage, he suddenly discovered that the soul core was distinctly brighter than the Hunting Wolf's, with a different shape as well.

The soul cores of the soul pets of the Beast World were,in reality, their hearts. Because energy was gathered there, special changes happened to the heart, causing it to have energy.

However, the Flametail's heart was unlike all others Chu Mu had seen. This Flametail's soul core was like an asymmetrical crystal, more akin to a beautiful work of art than an organ.

Chu Mu carefully extracted it and wiped the blood off of it using his clothes. The crystal-like soul core promptly glimmered with a beautiful halo under the moonlight.

A brown one and a red one, two halos faintly undulated around the crystal-like soul core, moving exquisitely.

"Soul core……no, this is……this is a soul crystal!!"

“Don’t tell me this is the soul crystal that can directly alter and strengthen a soul pet’s type before it enters its next phase!! Brown and red, its a Beast and Fire Duo Type soul crystal!!” Chu Mu, holding this sparkling thing, couldn’t help but cry out in surprise!

Chapter 28: Devil Crying In The Night

Soul Pet Trainers cared a lot about their Soul Pet's nurturing. For example, between Chu Mu and Mo Xie, unless he absolutely had to, he wouldn't let Mo Xie eat a non-beast or demon type Soul Core.

Although nurturing a Soul Core didn't display very visible results, if a Soul Pet was slowly nurtured from an early stage, when the Soul Pet reached an extremely high stage, this subtle influence would then become extremely prominent.

Moreover, if one were to say that Soul Cores needed a long period of time to accumulate and nurture before it would undergo a change, then Soul Crystals would definitely make a Soul Pet's attribute stronger-so much so, in fact, that it could completely change a Soul Pet's attribute as well as amplify one of the Soul Pet's attribute.

Chu Mu's Moonlight Fox was a combination of beast and demon types, and could be said to have both a beast and demon attribute. Zhou Shengmo's Hunting Wolf was pure beast type, or in other words, solely a beast attribute. As for the Flame Tail, it was a beast type and had a natural beast attribute, but also had an auxiliary attribute of fire.

Mo Xie's attacks were very one dimensional; demon abilities could only confuse the opponent, and her only attack skill was Ripping Claw. This was usually a common problem of Soul Pets with low race rankings. In order to make Mo Xie stronger, amplifying her attribute was of extreme importance!

Fire attribute was one that Chu Mu was extremely pleased with. If it was able to become Mo Xie's auxiliary attribute, her battle strength would definitely increase a level. Moreover, Mo Xie's future mutated race would most likely head towards a mutated race with a fire attribute.

Chu Mu broke out into a smile. During these continuous battles not only did he completely annihilate his most problematic opponent, but he also obtained this enormous benefit. It was definitely worth it!

"When Mo Xie finishes recovering, I can start her training. In the future, Mo Xie's food will mainly be demon attributed, beast attributed, or fire attributed. This Soul Crystal is only at the first grade. Later, if I am able to obtain these sorts of dual-attributed Soul Crystals, I can make her attribute's innate skill even stronger."

This sort of a dual-attributed Soul Crystal had two uses. The first was to change Mo Xie's character and raise her beast attribute's innate skill to a higher level. In the future, during her growing period, her strength, speed and defense would then grow at an exponential rate. The second was to let Mo Xie obtain the fire attribute.

This time, after using the Soul Crystal to train, Mo Xie's strength would definitely increase a level!

Carefully putting away the Soul Crystal, Chu Mu slowly walked

to the center of the thick forest and found Zhou Shengmo's corpse.

Mo Xie clearly harbored a large amount of resentment towards Zhou Shengmo. His neck, back, and even the back of his skull were full of shocking claw marks, making him completely mutilated. His death was an extremely plaintive sight.

Chu Mu coming here naturally wasn't to beat the corpse, but to instead see if this person had any valuable items on him to take away.

"A few Soul Cores, he has absolutely nothing..." Chu Mu searched for a long while, but could only find a few items for Mo Xie's dessert. He didn't find anything else.

Zhou Shengmo's Soul Cores on him were all of the beast attribute. It was evident that they were used for raising his Hunting Wolf. In total, there were three pieces, and their quality wasn't bad. They complied with Chu Mu's standards for raising Mo Xie, and adding on the Steel Teeth and Hunting Wolf's Soul Cores, Chu Mu now had a total of five beast attributed Soul Cores.

After recovering a bit of his Soul Power, Chu Mu was able to use his Soul Power to fuse the five beast attributed Soul Cores into one high quality Soul Core. This was the equivalent of giving Mo Xie the most delicious food.

Amidst the rapidly falling night, the thick forest grew even more eerie and frightening, and yet Chu Mu walked alone.

Chu Mu didn't plan on returning to his wooden house. Both he and Mo Xie were currently in a weak state, and if they returned to the camp, there was a high probability that someone else would make a move against them.

He continued to walk towards the outside of the forest and arrived at the precipice where he was calmly reflecting at before. In front of him stretched the black ocean...

The black clouds were like the ocean water and quickly rolled through in the sky. The silver, cold moon stood alone high in the clouds, occasionally shedding its radiance, which dispersed over Chu Mu's body.

"It seems like the time has almost come... this devil..." Chu Mu lowered his head and gazed at the rushing ocean water as he muttered to himself.

Under the onslaught of the ice-cold sea breeze, Chu Mu closed his eyes and entered a quiet cultivation state. He prepared to make a stand against the devil in his body.

The White Nightmare's quantity of food was extremely large. Chu Mu had to feed his Nightmare once every two days. Furthermore, every time he did so, it seemed to consume all of his Soul Power.

It took two days for Chu Mu's Soul Force to be fully replenished from a depleted state. One could say that between this terrifying life and death equilibrium that Chu Mu was maintaining with this

devil, if Chu Mu wasted even a tiny bit of his Soul Power one day or if the White Nightmare advanced a stage one day, then this life and death equilibrium would be shattered.

The silver moonlight showered over Chu Mu's body making him seem as if he was draped in a hazy silver muslin.

If one were to carefully look, he or she would discover that within the moonlight's silver muslin, an indistinct black specter was enveloping Chu Mu's body. This specter was in the midst of absorbing Chu Mu's Soul Power incessantly, frantically sucking on it like a hungry infant and even more so like a avaricious devil!

"Nie!!!"

Suddenly, a plaintive and terrified shout rang out from Chu Mu's body. This palpitating ululation forged through the rumbling ocean waves, piercing through the mist and unceasingly reverberated across the ocean surface.

"How repulsive! Feeding you slightly less Soul Power will kill you!?" Chu Mu reprimanded. His was at the moment, incomparably pale and his entire body was clearly in exceptional pain.

"Nie!!" The Nightmare's cry once again rang out!

When Chu Mu used the Soul Skill Chong Mei, he expended one-quarter of his Soul Force. However, this White Nightmare's

quantity of food each time was ninety percent of Chu Mu's Soul Force!

"Nie!!" A piercing cry rang out once more. With each devil's cry, it was like a mental needle was stabbing at Chu Mu's spirit, causing him have a splitting headache!

"Nie!!" The cacophonous sound once again nearly caused Chu Mu to go mad!

"You wretch, shut up for your elder! If you don't let me quietly cultivate, how can I give you Soul Power!!" Chu Mu let out an indignant cry amidst the pain!

While in sharp pain, Chu Mu's cry was extremely resonant, masking the ocean's torrential noise. As for this indignant roar, it truly did have an effect. The starving White Nightmare suddenly quieted down and didn't exert any more pressure on Chu Mu.

Seizing this opportunity when the White Nightmare was quiet, Chu Mu immediately concentrated his mind and entered a quiet cultivation state, causing his Soul Power to quickly recover.

His Soul Power recovery was relatively slow and, generally speaking, after completely depleting it, he needed two days to completely recover. However, if he were to enter a quiet cultivation state, he only needed a day.

Cold sweat trickled down his back, and his heart was palpitating.

Just now, Chu Mu had already felt the White Nightmare's angry thought to devour his soul. If it weren't for the indignant roar somewhat subduing this fellow just now, there was a high chance Chu Mu would have had to bear a surge of soul devouring attacks. That sort of pain was simply unbearable!

Chapter 29: The Foremen's Anger

At the advent of dawn, Chu Mu finally suppressed the hungry state of the Nightmare.

Worthy of celebration, Chu Mu's own power had, through the countless battles and the Nightmare's torturing, finally improved to Third Remembrance Spirit Soldier.

Very soon, however, Chu Mu didn't know whether to laugh or to cry. He had struggled so hard to get to the Third Remembrance, but the Nightmare unexpectedly also levelled up, reaching Ninth Stage!

"Looks like without a good gap in strength between the Nightmare and I, I'll have to keep hiding behind my soul pets when I fight." Chu Mu said, feeling helpless.

"Let's see what this guy's appetite is like after reaching the Ninth Stage. Hopefully it isn't too excessive. At least leave enough power for me to use one soul technique..."

Chu Mu's own Remembrance was a lot higher than the soul pet trainers on Nightmare Island, but the White Nightmare inside him lowered him to the same level as the rest.....

"Cyan Nightmares can start fighting when they enter phase two. I'm not sure how much the White Nightmare needs to be fed to start fighting though."

Chu Mu sighed. If he could wait for the White Nightmare to battle, Chu Mu's power would undoubtedly increase substantially. It was a pity that the White Nightmare was even more special than the Cyan Nightmare. It wouldn't be able to enter battles any time soon.

Only when dawn arrived did Chu Mu slowly return to the camp.

"Yi, how did you get hurt?" Ding Yu asked, surprised at the wounds on Chu Mu's face and arm.

"It's nothing, I just need to rub some medicine on it." Chu Mu said while taking out some medicine.

"Let me help you……" Ding Yu took the medicine and said to Chu Mu.

Chu Mu nodded, turning the inside of his arm towards Ding Yu for her to treat.

"How did you get hurt? Don't tell me you went to the inner island!" Ding Yu continued asking.

"I wasn't paying attention in battle. and got ambushed by a soul pet. It was nothing serious." Chu Mu said.

"You sure are bold. It's almost a battle of life and death and you

still went ventured out. Can your little Mo Xie still fight?”

“En.” Chu Mu just nodded.

In reality, after the continuous fighting, Mo Xie didn’t have much fighting power left. Without a special recovering medicine, it would take at least five days for her to recover from her wound riddled state.

As for the Soul Crystal training, Chu Mu had to wait until Mo Xie completely recovered before carrying it out. The energy from the soul crystal would cause soul pets to enter into a hibernation state. As for how long it would last, even Chu Mu couldn’t guarantee it.

So, the most important thing Chu Mu needed to do was to let Mo Xie recover her fighting strength within the next four days. Without entering the top ten, Chu Mu would be eliminated!

“Weird, what’s up with the commotion outside?” Once Ding Yu finished wrapping Chu Mu’s wounds, clamorous sounds could be heard from outside.

Chu Mu looked out the window, vaguely hearing within the commotion that apparently a few of the early rising kids found many corpses in the forest.

“I’ll go check it out. You seem tired, so rest first.” Ding Yu was quite interested, so she quickly left the wooden room.

Chu Mu was indeed tired. Once his wounds were treated, he went to his bed and lay down, but not before tucking the little cyan bug inside his clothes on the bedside.

“Sleep well, timid little guy.” Chu Mu patted the little bug and fell asleep on his bed.

Chu Mu slept soundly, falling asleep almost the instant he lay down. However, not long after, he felt a sharp pain in his toes, waking him up suddenly!

“The foremen want us to gather up, get up quickly……” Ding Yu’s voice instantly sounded near his ear.

Chu Mu grabbed the little cyan bug on the bedside on the way and went to wash his face with cold water.

“Sii!!!” Chu Mu sucked in a breath, just realizing that he still had a gash on his face. When the water splashed it, it felt as if he got cut again!

These past three months, the foremen had always been in their base, taking little notice of the kids, and gave everyone a somewhat free environment.

However, those were just appearances; the foremen were constantly observing every soul pet trainer on the island. Which soul pet trainer was how strong, how many soul pets everyone had - they knew everything.

The Nightmare Palace's true purpose was definitely not to slaughter for fun. It was to raise and pick out, within the cruel environment, potential candidates to serve them.

Thus, the foremen strictly prohibited any mutual killing before the battle of life and death. After all, most soul pet trainers on the island had only one soul pet, so life and death battles could be decided by many non-strength related factors as well.

Zhou Shengmo captured a High ranking Hunting Wolf and became the first person on the island to become a High Remembrace Spirit Disciple, so naturally he was followed very closely. To the foremen, he was a very valuable, potential candidate.

As a matter of fact, the foremen had already made an approximate ranking list, with Zhou Shengmo at first place. People like Feng Gu, Tang Xian, Ding Yu, Ge Qin, and Luo Cheng were also on the list. Even before the battle of life and death began, the foremen could foresee these people on the top ten list.

However, as the final battle neared, the closely watched Zhou Shengmo died suddenly inside the forest!

Not only that, but the decently ranked Tang Xian and Luo Chen also died in the same place. This meant that three good candidates on the foremen's list were instantly erased!

When they heard of the news that morning, Cao Yi, the head of

the foremen, was absolutely livid and cursed vigorously at every single foreman on the island. Finally, he ordered for all the enslaved children to group up. He had to fully understand the situation!

"Boss Cao, the death of those two don't matter. Zhou Shengmo, Tang Xian and Luo Chen were of decent quality, so their deaths will be hard to explain……"

Cao Yi's face was still gloomy. In this part of the Eternal Ocean, there were many islands similar to their Cyan Nightmare Island. All these islands were totally isolated from the rest of the world. According to the Nightmare Palace's system, every island would hold these elimination competitions.

If the islands could help the Nightmare Palace to obtain many potentially highly talented members, said island's leader and foremen would all get the appropriate benefits like wealth, power, rewards……

It could be said that the island's foremen all rely on these young soul pet trainers to obtain benefits. Cao Yi and his foremen thought that the young trainers on their island were all of decent quality, and that they could get quite some benefits. Who could have thought that something like this would happen?

Chapter 30: Death Notice: The Decisive Battle Has Been Shifted Forward

---

“You guys sure have a lot of courage. Over these past three months, without any of our restrictions, you guys think that you’re completely free!” Cao Yi’s fierce looking face trembled. His eyes swept across the young Soul Pet Trainers. A threatening cold air. Even if he hadn’t summoned a Soul Pet, he still gave the others a form of fear.

“Yesterday night, five people died in the thick forest. Amongst them were Zhou Shengmo, Tang Xian and Luo Chen. Hmph, as long as we can still kill you, your lives are completely within our control . However, there was someone who didn’t listen and surprisingly violated our wishes…”

After listening to Cao Yi, an expression of shock appeared on all of the young Soul Pet Trainers’ faces!

Five people being killed definitely meant that their Soul Pets were also killed. Even if two of them weren’t very strong, simply Zhou Shengmo himself was someone that no one on the island could contend against. Moreover, amongst the dead were Tang Xian and Luo Chen, who were unanimously ranked within the top ten people!

The strength of these three people was very obvious, but within one night they were all killed within the outer island. This was simply too inconceivable!

The foremen all had strength that could kill these three people, but this was something the foremen simply couldn’t be bothered to

do. Moreover, there was no reason to call everyone together and criticize them after their deaths!

For a moment, the young Soul Pet Trainers looked at each other trying to figure out just who possessed such an incredible ability to kill these three people!

To the side, when Ting Yu heard this news, her first reaction was to look over in shock at Chu Mu who looked like he had experienced a large battle.

Ting Yu remembered that Chu Mu said that he was going to the thick forest when he left yesterday. As for this morning, the spread of such shocking news was too coincidental!

Chu Mu felt Ting Yu's gaze, but blankly shook his head and pretended that he knew nothing.

"Right now, you will each walk to the hut adjacent to us and summon your Soul Pets!" Cao Yi coldly said. He clearly had to make clear of the situation!

If the person who managed to kill five people in one night was one of these Soul Pet Trainers, then that meant that he was an absolute threat to these foremen and consequently had to be found!

The young Soul Pet Trainers were individually called to the hut for interrogation. Each person had a pale face when entering. After all, they had all witnessed the foremens' ruthlessness. As for those that exited, they all let out a large sigh of relief as if they had escaped a calamity.

Soon, it was Chu Mu's turn. He maintained his calm as he entered the hut.

Sitting in the main seat was the island foreman head, Cao Yi. To his side were Gu Lei and the red-haired Zeng Ze.

When the red haired Zeng Ze saw Chu Mu enter, the corner of his mouth twitched and he softly said to the adjacent Gu Lei: "This brat truly has a firm grip on life. Even now, his soul hasn't been devoured by the devil."

"It truly is strange, but Master Xia has given instructions..."

Cao Yi's gaze coldly swept over these two, indicating they should quiet down. His eyes then fixed onto Chu Mu. Using a completely apathetic voice, he asked: "Yesterday, where did you go? Summon your Soul Pet."

"My Soul Pet has sustained an injury and cannot be summoned right now. Yesterday I was on the outer island fighting with a few Soul Pets." Chu Mu responded

Cao Yi immediately creased his eyebrows. Recounting his suspicion that the target naturally wasn't in the camp last night and that his Soul Pet no longer had battle strength or had sustained an injury, Chu Mu's situation moderately conformed to such suspicions.

"Brat, you truly are audacious. Do you believe that what you do can escape our monitoring?!! If you speak another word of lies, I will immediately throw you into the sea to feed the Hunting

Sharks!!” Cao Yi abruptly stood up. His entire body was like a savage beast!

Chu Mu’s heart violently throbbed as he wondered if he left some sort of fatal evidence in the thick forest!

Soon after, he discovered Cao Yi’s strange expression and suddenly understood that Cao Yi was evidently putting on a false bravado in order to make the murderer confess. He immediately flusteredly retreated a few steps and said: “I... I didn’t do anything... I truly only sustained an injury after fighting with a Hundred Eyed Palm last night...”

Seeing Chu Mu’s flustered reaction, Chu Mu’s fiendish expression immediately disappeared and he returned to his original sitting position.

“Senior Cao, this brat has always kept to himself. His Soul Pet is merely a Moonlight Fox. It’s fundamentally impossible for him to kill those five people.” Zeng Ze softly said to Senior Cao.

“That’s right, that’s right...” Gu Lei said. However, this foreman with vicious intent didn’t say so in order to exonerate Chu Mu. In truth, he felt that questioning Chu Mu intensely was simply a waste of time. Someone raising a Moonlight Fox Soul Pet had absolutely no way of killing Zhou Shengmo.

In truth, the foremen didn’t believe that someone did it. They believed that it was most likely a certain group of people that suddenly launched a sneak attack on Zhou Shengmo at night in

order to increase their survival chance.

“Scram!” Cao Yi harrumphed towards Chu Mu.

Chu Mu immediately withdrew and as he turned around, his flustered face immediately darkened and his eyes became a bit more sinister. In his heart, he said: “When my strength is enough, I will definitely exterminate you!”

Chu Mu hid his strength very well and didn’t excessively handle Zhou Shengmo’s corpse, so it was normal that the foremen didn’t suspect him.

Very soon, all the interrogations finished and the foremen clearly hadn’t found the killer. Ting Yu and Ge Qing’s respective groups were relatively disciplined and were quite peaceful the previous night...

Ultimately, the foremen could only conclude that it may have been someone outside of Nightmare Island. However, the addition of this type of uncertain factor caused the foremen to heighten their alertness while simultaneously issuing a new decision.

“A person of unknown identity has infiltrated the island. In order to prevent more issues from occurring, the life and death battle with start tomorrow. The top ten places will leave this island with us and the others...”

After finishing the interrogations, Cao Yi announced this

decision to everyone.

“Scram back to your dens to rest. Tomorrow, you either live or die!” Cao Yi coldly said!

Hearing this news, Chu Mu’s face immediately changed. Moving the life and death battle forward clearly didn’t give Mo Xie enough time to recover her battle strength!

With only one day, Mo Xie could at most recover forty percent of her original state. Moreover, the wounds on her body wouldn’t heal immediately. Fighting in this sort of a situation, and needing to win against two consecutive opponents to obtain a top ten spot was extremely difficult.

“Since it’s been moved forward, you’ve lost a few days to live. Truly unfortunate, Chu Mu.” An adjacent, not too friendly voice resounded.

Chu Mu creased his eyebrows as he glanced at Ge Qing. His expression was clearly quite gloomy.

If it was the past, Chu Mu would have desired to run into Ge Qing and get rid of this fellow who kept trying to start something with him, so as to not feel annoyed.

However, currently, Chu Mu didn’t wish to encounter this fellow. Ge Qing’s stage seven scaled snake was truly a bit troublesome to deal with.

Chapter 31: Chu Mu: The Strongest, Hidden The Most Deeply

Currently, there were approximately forty Soul Pet Trainers on the island. The fighting method was very simple. Each fight would be a one on one fight, leaving behind twenty winners. Of these twenty, another round of one on one fights would leave behind approximately ten people.

Since there was two fights, Chu Mu didn't believe that he would encounter this fellow. Of course, Chu Mu also hoped not to run into Feng Gu, whose strength wasn't much lower than that of Zhou Shengmo's. He had a stage nine rock monster whose defensive ability was extremely shocking. With Mo Xie's situation, if he were to encounter this fellow, his chances of winning were even more uncertain.

Chu Mu was currently very tired and ignored Ge Qing. After disbanding, Chu Mu quickly returned to his hut and planned on sleeping.

Before sleeping, Chu Mu still put the small cyan insect on the headboard. There was a reason for doing so-the small cyan insect's vigilance was very high, and if any danger were to come close, the small cyan insect would bite Chu Mu, waking him up.

"Chu Mu... You killed the five of them, right?" Ting Yu looked at the tired-looking Chu Mu, but still couldn't resist asking a question.

Ting Yu wasn't stupid. Chu Mu's stage six Moonlight Fox could defeat her seventh stage Thorny Rose Demon. Mo Xie's strength was definitely not inferior to Tang Xian's stage eight Steel Teeth. Although she felt that Chu Mu being able to kill Zhou Shengmo was a bit far-fetched, Ting Yu still felt that this event was directly related to Chu Mu.

Chu Mu still shook his head and in a somewhat weary voice, said: "We have to fight tomorrow. You should rest up earlier."

Seeing that Chu Mu didn't want to talk to her any longer, Ting Yu was instead even more suspicious. She glanced at the tired-looking Chu Mu before returning to her own bedside.

Ting Yu didn't leave the wooden hut and slowly waited. It wasn't until Chu Mu let out a light snoring that Ting Yu's expression slightly changed.

Ting Yu slowly stood up and carefully walked to Chu Mu's bedside. Her eyes displayed a bit of nervousness as she meticulously and slowly stretched out her hands...

"Si!!" Suddenly, Chu Mu sucked in a breath of air and abruptly woke up from his deep sleep. His two eyes covered in wisps of blood glared at Ting Yu.

Austere killing intent, a malevolent complexion. It was was like a destitute, fierce and extremely evil empty person suddenly let out its terrifying savage nature!

Ting Yu was scared pale by Chu Mu's appearance, and she stood blankly in place. Beads of sweat rolled down her head.

"What is it?" Chu Mu's eyes rigidly stared at the approaching Ting Yu as he used an ice-cold tone to speak!

"I... I wanted to borrow your... your <<Pet Encyclopedia>>... to look at..." Ting Yu's hand was half clutched onto the book on Chu Mu's bedside, but she didn't dare to actually take it.

Chu Mu saw that Ting Yu didn't have a sharp weapon and didn't summon her Soul Pet and his mood gradually calmed. A while later, his expression also eased and after seeing that Ting Yu was extremely frightened, he waved his hand and said: "Take it. I just had a nightmare. I didn't scare you, right?"

Seeing that Chu Mu had already returned to normal, Ting Yu let out a sigh of relief and grabbed the <<Pet Encyclopedia>> book. She quickly left Chu Mu's window side and returned to her own bed.

"You were very scary just now..." After getting further away, Ting Yu still had lingering fears as she spoke.

"Of those on the island, which one isn't scary?" Chu Mu bitterly laughed and shook his head. Having been shocked by Ting Yu, Chu Mu didn't have any more intentions of sleeping.

Half lying on the bed, Chu Mu closed his eyes and began focusing

his mental strength on entering a quiet cultivation state in order to speed up his Soul Power recovery process.

Yesterday night, Chu Mu's cultivation increased by one Remembrance and the White Nightmare's strength also increased by one stage. According to his conjecture, Chu Mu's increase in Soul Power should have exceeded the White Nightmare's increased need for food. If he was able to max out his Soul Power, perhaps he would be able to perform a crucial Soul Technique.

After Chu Mu entered his quiet cultivation state, the adjacent TIng Yu cautiously looked at Chu Mu. After awhile, she opened the <<Pet Encyclopedia>> book in her hands.

Zhou Shengmo's death caused Ting Yu to believe that Chu Mu wasn't as simple as he seemed. She took the <<Pet Encyclopedia>> to help understand what ability the Moonlight Fox had.

After flipping to the Moonlight Fox page in the <<Pet Encyclopedia>>, the introduction for the Moonlight Fox wasn't much. It only gave a brief description and outlined a few common abilities.

Skimming through, Ting Yu didn't discover anything particular from the introduction.

"Weird, there isn't any special area. Could it be that the deaths of Zhou Shengmo and the others didn't have anything to do with Chu Mu?" Ting Yu soliloquized softly.

After speaking, Ting Yu's gaze inadvertently fell onto Mo Xie's basic abilities: Charm, Pitiful Appearance, Moon Shadow...

"Pitiful Appearance... this skill..." Ting Yu didn't understand this ability very well and only knew that it could weaken the opponent's willpower.

In order to make clear of this situation, Ting Yu purposefully sought out the <<Soul Pet Battle Abilities>> book and found information regarding the Pitiful Appearance ability.

"Pitiful Appearance-an ability of some special demons. In its beginning stage, it is able to weaken the battle will of certain low intelligence Soul Pets. At the middle stage, it can become a method to hide and conceal strength. At the late stage, the pretense will be even stronger. At the final stage, it can disguise the Soul Pet as a different stage."

Ting Yu looked at this part and at the beginning, didn't feel anything was wrong. She only skimmed through it, but gradually, her small mouth began to drop and her expression turned from tranquillity to shock!

"Disguise, conceal strength, a stage six Moonlight Fox able to defeat my stage seven Thorny Rose Demon..." Linking it all together allowed one to see the truth!

TIng Yu closely gripped the book and her gaze fell onto the quietly cultivating Chu Mu. A huge wave suddenly arose in her heart and for a while, it wouldn't calm down!

Chu Mu finished one round of breathing and felt that he was hungry. He opened his eyes and planned on simply eating some rations to fill his stomach.

However, after opening his eyes, Chu Mu noted Ting Yu's stare and put on a light smile. He said: "What's the matter?"

"Ah....ah....nothing..." Ting Yu hastily shifted her gaze, but her heart continued to violently beat.

What strength ranking? What uncontested strongest? What unstoppable Hunting Wolf? At that moment, in Ting Yu's opinion, this was preposterously laughable because the actual strongest person was on the opposing bed-this calm, proud and shrewd youth-Chu Mu!

Normally insignificant, with one feat he shocked everyone! In one night, he successively killed five people and on the second day he was still able to very calmly receive the foremen's interrogation!

Ting Yu was scared: if it wasn't due to her own consciousness, she wouldn't have been able to discover that this youth who shared a room with her possessed such a deeply hidden and terrifying strength, so strong that it made others tremble!

Chapter 32: Fear Wolf, The Foremen's Ruthlessness

When night fell, Chu Mu didn’t sleep at all, and remained in a state of silent cultivation.

Many Soul Pets had limited mental strength and mana. The regeneration of the two relied on both rest and certain special medicine.

A Soul Pet Trainer’s Soul Power could be said to be the combination of mana and mental strength. Its method of regeneration was based on resting, meditating, and silently cultivating. However, the increase in a Soul Pet Trainer’s own cultivation absolutely could not be achieved by depending on such meditative cultivation methods.

“One more Remembrance before reaching Mid Remembrance. Then I can get another Soul Pet.” Chu Mu muttered to himself.

He slowly opened his eyes. A radiant ray of sunlight spilled across his bedside, dazzling him slightly.

A Soul Pet Trainer’s cultivation refined the soul, also known as the Remembrance soul by Soul Pet Trainers. The reason why it was named that was because in the process of cultivation, Remembrances and souls defined the stages of cultivation.

Every increase in Remembrance would increase Soul Power, and every three Remembrances would allow the trainer to control an additional Soul Pet.

Under normal circumstances, Low Remembrance trainers had one Soul Pet.

Mid Remembrance trainers had two Soul Pets.

High Remembrance trainers had three Soul Pets.

On Cyan Nightmare Island, the majority of young trainers were Fifth Remembrance Spirit Disciples, the result of Nightmare Palace authorities' selection. The more talented, higher cultivation Soul Pet Trainers were mostly distributed to bigger islands.

Chu Mu's appearance on this Nightmare Island was in itself an accident. It's just that Boss Xia underestimated Chu Mu's strength, so he threw Chu Mu, a Fifth Remembrance Spirit Soldier, along with a group of Third Remembrance Spirit Disciples.

Of course, though Chu Mu's cultivation was higher than everyone else, he was suppressed to the same level as the Spirit Disciples by his White Nightmare, so their starting line could be considered the same in this battle of life and death.

Soul Pet Trainers' souls had special pacts with their Soul Pets. The only way for a Soul Pet Trainer to refine their soul and increase their cultivation was to let their bonded Soul Pets battle.

Soul Pet battles were what refined a trainers' Remembrance soul. The increase from Second Remembrance to Third Remembrance last night was, in the same way, the result of Mo Xie's continuous battling!

"How is your recovery going?" Ting Yu, seeing Chu Mu waking, asked.

"Not bad. When does the battle start?" Chu Mu glanced at Ting Yu. He suddenly felt something changed in the way Ting Yu was looking at him, but he couldn't quite put his finger on what it was.

"Noon." Ting Yu, while speaking, brought out a fragrant piece of food wrapped in banana leaf and passed it to Chu Mu.

"You must be hungry. Have this, it's a plump rabbit I hunted yesterday……"

The smell of meat floated up towards Chu Mu. Chu Mu hadn't eaten meat for a long time, so after seeing this delicious, barbecued rabbit meat, his eyes shined.

"Shashasha~~" The gluttonous little cyan bug moved even quicker than Chu Mu. Without considering why Ting Yu would suddenly deliver such a big delicacy, it quickly ripped a piece of meat off and happily started chewing, getting itself all greasy.

"Haha, what an interesting little guy." Ting Yu, watching the little cyan bug, couldn't help but be amused.

Chu Mu too didn't act polite with Ting Yu. Using a silver dagger to cut a piece of meat off, he quickly checked the color of the dagger and then started gobbling down the meat.

Only after finished enjoying the delicacy did Chu Mu notice the change in Ting Yu's attitude. Clearly, Ting Yu has become more cordial. Though she was very nice before, it was never as straightforward.

At noon, the foremen started to gather all the Soul Pet Trainers towards the original stamina training base camp.

The campground was split into three areas, each with a battling field set up. Every field was separated by wooden pikes facing inwards.

There were 41 Soul Pet Trainers grouped by the battling fields in total. The foremen still apathetically stood near the edge of the camp. They didn't summon any of their Soul Pets, but if anyone showed signs of disobedience, their Soul Pets would definitely appear instantly, ripping apart the disobedient person!

The battle of life and death had finally come. It could be seen that everyone was very nervous, especially those who weren't as powerful. After all, this battle could be the last battle of their lives.

"The weak will be eliminated, and elimination means death!" Cao Yi eyes swept across everyone coldly, saying unhurriedly.

“You think we’re cruel and cold hearted! But we gave you many opportunities, opportunities to make yourself stronger.”

“When you’re eliminated, the target for complaint shouldn’t be us, but you. It is your weakness and cowardness that guided you onto the road of death!”

“Now, this is your last chance. Whether or not you survive will depend on if you can rip your opponent to shreds!”

Cao Yi’s speech quickly stimulated the young trainers from a mood of fear and anxiety to one of animosity and cold bloodedness. Indeed, whether or not they would survive was solely dependent on their own strength!

“Ok, lets begin!”

“Ge Qin and Zhang Feisheng!”

“Lan Yu and Qi Xin!”

“Huang Ruyi and Chen Zhuo”

“Start at my command. Those who defy my commands, DIE!” Cao Yi said coldly.

Hearing Ge Qin’s name, Chu Mu’s brows furrowed together, his

eyes naturally falling upon the guy walking into one of the battle fields.

Ge Qin's opponent wasn't at all familiar to Chu Mu, so he was presumably a person of no significance.

When the youth named Zhang Feisheng knew that his opponent was Ge Qin, his face became incomparably pale, with his body shaking before he even entered the battlefield.

Death! Inevitable death! It could be seen from other people's eyes that the person named Zhang Feisheng was destined to be eliminated!

"Stop dawdling!" Gu Lei roared at the terrified Zhang Feisheng!

Knowing that his opponent was Ge Qin, Zhang Feisheng had already given up all hope. This despair also caused him to lose all reason!

"I……I don't want to die! DON'T WANT TO DIE!"

Suddenly, Zhang Feisheng stood up and leapt off the fields, running frantically towards the base's exit!

"Escape?" Cao Yi seemed to have already expected that under desperate circumstances, someone would be driven into desperate action. Shouting an incantation, he almost instantly summoned a huge wolf-like beast!

“Awooo!!!” Piercing killing intent immediately permeated the entire base, raising a gale that recklessly buffeted everyone’s face!!

The three meter long Fear Wolf dashed forwards murderously, almost instantly pouncing onto the escaping Zhang Feisheng. It’s gaping maw unexpectedly bit off the escaping Zhang Feisheng’s head whole!

Blood spurted out from Zhang Feisheng’s severed neck, painting a ghastly image!

Chapter 33: Elimination, Death

Zhang Feisheng's body slowly fell to the ground. The bloody head was spit out by the terrifying Fear Wolf, spilling crimson blood everywhere……

"Try to escape, and your fate will be like his! Humph, you people have already been through multiple selections and have been sentenced to this island. Giving you 10 spots to live is already very charitable of Nightmare Palace!" Cao Yi spoke mercilessly, not even glancing at the dead body.

With a stature of three meters, the Fear Wolf with its piercingly vicious eyes padded around arrogantly, slowly walking from the base exit to beside Cao Yi. Just a mere stare from it would cause the young trainers to tremble with fear!

Feeling the appalled looks of the young trainers, Cao Yi only twitched the edge of his mouth. Rubbing the Fear Wolf's head and with a hint of pride, he said, "You must be very surprised, right? This is my second main pet-the Fear Wolf, High Warrior rank. Even if you added up all of your soul pets, they wouldn't be able to fight it!"

Chu Mu remained calm and watched the Fear Wolf emit a strong aura.

Both the Fear Wolf and the Hunting Wolf were of the same species, but the Fear Wolf was an entire rank higher than the Hunting Wolf. The Hunting Wolf was of the High Servant Rank,

yet this Fear Wolf was of the High Warrior Rank.

The fact that Cao Yi could own a Warrior Rank Fear Wolf showed that he was at least a Spirit Soldier!

The higher the Species Rank, the greater the potential. Even from just its size and appearance, it could be seen that Cao Yi's Fear Wolf had already transformed through many phases. Like he said, even if all the soul pets here were added together, they wouldn't be able to fight against this Fear Wolf!

"You, get off. Your opponent is dead, so I'll count it as a victory!" Cao Yi pointed at Ge Qin and said with a commanding voice.

Ge Qin stood on the battlefield with a strange look on his face. Evidently feeling that Cao Yi's Fear Wolf was a height that he would never reach, he could only lower his head and walk off the field.

"Cao Yi's Fear Wolf is formidable, no one can beat him right……" Ting Yu said very quietly to Chu Mu beside her.

Chu Mu only shook his head slightly and said, "He's just playing king on this isolated island. Even the High Warrior Rank Fear Wolf isn't the strongest being……"

"Oh……" Ting Yu slightly nodded.

Species Rank was an important means of determining whether a

soul pet was strong or not. The reason why Chu Mu was so unperturbed and confident was that he had a soul pet that could mutate species. So what about the Warrior Rank? As long as they constantly became stronger and constantly battled, reaching ranks above Warrior wasn't a problem!

"You four, continue!" Cao Yi waved his hand, gesturing for the other four people to continue fighting.

Lan Yu and Qi Xin, Huang Ruyi and Chen Zhuo, their four soul pets were respectively Fur Monster, Evil Spider, Snake Tailed Monster, and Sword Stalked Grass Demon. All of them were around the Medium Rank Sixth Stage.

The four people's control and command of their soul pets were nothing outstanding, but their battles were unusually fierce! Both soul pets and soul pet trainers, early on in the battle, were totally bloodied.

Lan Yu, victory, you can get lost and go to your place to rest."

"Chen Zhuo, victory, leave. Wounded like this, you'll lose tomorrow for sure!"

Those who won could go rest, and prepare for the next round. Those who lost, like Qi Xin and Huang Ruyi, were directly dragged away by the foremen. Nobody knew where they were brought, but what was known for sure was that the end of the battle would mean the end of their lives.

“Next three matches, Feng Gu and Suo Zi, Ting Yu and Lian Shen, Mao Chang and Ding Chen……”

Hearing Ting Yu’s name, Chu Mu glanced at her and said, “Against this type of opponent, try to conserve your energy.”

“En.” Ting Yu nodded, slowly walking towards the battlefield.

Ting Yu’s Thorny Rose Demon’s strength spoke for itself. When the youth named Lian Shen found out that his opponent was Ting Yu, his face blanched and he stood foolishly in place, too scared to move forward.

Similarly, Suo Zi’s expression was on par with Lian Shen because his opponent was Feng Gu. Feng Gu had a Ninth Stage Rock Demon, and ever since Zhou Shengmo and Tang Xian died, no one was his match!

“You’re dawdling, do you want to die?!” Cao Yi saw those two people standing dazed and couldn’t help but scold them.

With this shout, both people jumped. Remembering Zhang Feisheng’s fate, how could they have any other thoughts but obedience?

Lian Shen and Suo Zi’s fighting strength were both average. Feng Gu and Ting Yu’s fighting methods were similar: they both, no matter how hard the enemy fought, would very cooly stand their ground.

The battles had no suspense. Lian Shen, Suo Zi, and Ding Chen were all eliminated, their soul pets dead, who were then dragged away ruthlessly by foremen.

“Next match……”

“Drag him away!”

“Get lost!”

“Next match……”

“Drag him away!”

Miserable shrieking, struggling, and begging were useless. The foremen executed their orders apathetically. Even the young trainers looked on with indifference……

The smell of blood permeated the area. A dozen of soul pet corpses were casually thrown out of the fields, emanating death.

Half a year ago, there were 300 young soul pet trainers. Four months ago, only 100 remained, and the other two hundred were devoured by their own Nightmare because they couldn’t feed it.

Three months ago, in the stamina training, the numbers went down to fifty. Within the fifty, there were accidental deaths, death

by soul pets, death by assassination, and death from trying to escape……in the end, only 41 people participated in the final battle.

Today, there will be only 21 left……

“Li Zhi wins, next match, Chu Mu and Hong Dan……”

When Chu Mu heard his name, without seeing who his opponent was, he simply gazed apathetically at the foremen who were cleaning up the battle field.

Those that Chu Mu worried about had already fought, so Chu Mu had no reason to be afraid of anyone else.

Beside the field, the girl named Hong Dan instead let out a huge sigh of relief, her eyes gleaming with hope.

“Sister Ting Yu, that Chu Mu has a Moonlight Fox as a soul pet right? It seems like I’ve got a chance!” Hong Dan said.

When Ting Yu finished battling, she didn’t leave. Instead, she walked over to the female trainer circle she created.

Only, since the start of the match, of the seven female soul pet trainers, three had already been eliminated……

And now, Hong Dan was clearly going to be eliminated as well……

But, Hong Dan had no idea, and while gazing at the apathetic Chu Mu, a gleam of killing intent rose up in her eyes.

“Try your best.” Ting Yu really didn’t know what to say, so she patted Hong Dan’s shoulder.

Hong Dan, as if cheered, walked towards the field with confidence and a hint of menace.

Ting Yu watched Hong Dan’s back and sighed lightly. In reality, Ting Yu herself was restless all along because the person she was afraid of going against the most was definitely not Ge Qin nor Feng Gu. It was Chu Mu, who stayed under the same roof as her!

Chapter 34: Victory: Ruthlessness When Least Expected

“Ting Yu, why do you look so worried? Are you worried for your roommate?” An adjacent young girl softly asked.

Ting Yu looked back at the young girl and softly said: “Hong Dan will be eliminated…:”

“How? Hong Dan’s strength isn’t that bad. It shouldn’t be too much of a problem for her to beat a Moonlight Fox, right?” The young girl asked.

“Xin Xue, just watch, and you will understand…” Ting Yu didn’t want to say anymore. Since Chu Mu hid his strength so deeply, he definitely had a reason for doing so. Ting Yu also didn’t want to rashly speak about it, because she was afraid she would suffer from Chu Mu’s reaction.

The young girl called Xin Xue still felt somewhat confused, and her gaze fell onto Chu Mu. She didn’t understand why Ting Yu felt that this fellow with a Moonlight Fox could beat Hong Dan.

On the field, Chu Mu silently stood in place as he gazed attentively at his opponent, Hong Dan. Hong Dan was a young girl about fifteen years of age with short black hair, and slightly yellow skin. Even though she couldn’t be considered good looking, her gaze contained quite a bit of drive, giving one a feeling that she wasn’t someone to be trifled with.

On Nightmare Island, no matter if it was a boy or girl, they all had common characteristics-callousness, ruthlessness and selfishness. In Chu Mu's eyes, there wasn't a difference between boys and girls. There only existed a difference between enemies and friends.

"Begin!" The foreman issued his command!

Chu Mu continued to stand in his original position and didn't make any movements. He only stared intently at Hong Dan.

"Don't blame me for being merciless. I am also only doing this to survive." Hong Dan stared at Chu Mu, and a cold smile emerged on her face as she slowly spoke.

After speaking, Hong Dan began to chant an incantation.

A motley radiance, vague and indistinct, slowly formed into a blue design on the ground. In the middle of the design, a faint green-colored soul pet gradually appeared!

"Her summoning speed is so slow. She will definitely suffer a loss from this." The young girl, Xin Xue, muttered.

From the moment the foreman issued the start, Chu Mu didn't read out the Soul Pact Incantation, and instead stood in place like a blank statue.

……

Hong Dan also noticed Chu Mu's sluggishness and a smile immediately emerged on her face. She looked at the Cyan Faced Demon slowly emerging from her design.

"Shua!!"

Suddenly, a sonic boom rang out!!

An indigo colored dark ray of light abruptly flew out from Chu Mu's sleeve. It seemed to form a straight line that flew directly towards Hong Dan's neck!

Hong Dan's attention was still on the Cyan Faced Demon that she just summoned and she was still in the process of issuing a command to her Cyan Faced Demon. Why would she be mindful of a deadly dagger currently flying towards her?!!

"Pu!!!"

The extremely accurate cold dagger nailed Hong Dan's yellow neck, nearly passing right through it. A captivating red colored blood immediately blossomed!

Hong Dan still maintained the smile born through luck as her body suddenly stiffened before heavily falling onto the ground. Fresh blood sprayed all over her Cyan Faced Demon's body!

Killed on the spot!!!

In this instant, the entire camp went silent!

All the soul pet trainers, including the foremen, didn't think that such a shocking scene would occur on the battlefield!

Not summoning a Soul Pet, and instead using the time the opponent was being careless and focusing her mental strength on summoning her soul pet to throw a dagger!

Originally, this should have been a fight between Soul Pets, but Chu Mu's method of handling it was too strange. Nobody would have thought that he would suddenly use such a ruthless and strange method!

Ting Yu's eyes ghastly stared at Chu Mu. As for the adjacent Xin Xue, she was even more shocked. Suddenly, she found that the youth standing on the field gave others a cold feeling!

"What.... What... what sort of battle is this!?"

"Senior Cao... look at this..." The foremen all displayed shocked expressions and for a while didn't know how to decide if Chu Mu won.

Cao Yi stood there and looked at Chu Mu. After a while, he suddenly let out a laugh and said: "Very good, very good. Brat, you really understand the principle of surviving!"

Chu Mu expressionlessly looked at Cao Yi, but didn't say anything. He only swept his gaze over Hong Dan's Cyan Faced Demon. With Hong Dan's Death, the Cyan Face Demon quickly shifted its anger towards Chu Mu. However, Chu Mu naturally didn't have to fight with a masterless Soul Pet. Hong Yi was already eliminated!

In reality, if it wasn't for the competition being moved up, Chu Mu wouldn't have had to use such a method to obtain victory. After all, this method only had an effect when it was not expected. In the future, in order to deal with the others, he had to be even more vigilant.

Of course, Chu Mu also believed that only people like Hong Dan would neglect to defend their own body. Soul pet trainers with even a bit of awareness wouldn't have given Chu Mu this sort of opportunity.

"Chu Mu wins!"

The foreman finally announced Chu Mu's victory. Chu Mu slowly walked out of from field and felt the gazes of Ting Yu and the young girl beside her. Chu Mu only broke into his customary grin and insipidly said: "Your friend was too careless..."

Xin Xue and Ting Yu were subdued by Chu Mu's action just now and their gazes were still sluggish. Chu Mu's discourse just now made them feel as if a vicious devil was smiling at them. It made them feel as if their blood had run cold.

After a while, Ting Yu woke up. Somewhat flustered, she hesitated a while before immediately following Chu Mu.

Xin Xue stood to the side, and she recalled the ruthless scene. She wondered in her heart that, if it was her, whether she would be able to dodge that deadly dagger!

Not only Xin Xue, but many other soul pet trainers who weren't conscious of this had a feeling of lingering fear. Simultaneously, they silently rejoiced that they didn't encounter this fellow with such strange thinking. Otherwise, their departure would have been like Hong Dan-death before even fighting!

"I truly didn't think that using such a method could obtain victory. However, only stupid girls like Hong Dan would fall for it..." Coldly looking at each other, Ge Qing saw Chu Mu leave the field, but had an expression of ridicule.

Chu Mu's action truly did surprise Ge Qing, but he was confident that this move would be ineffective against him.

"Hmph, don't think that you'll be able to live if you don't encounter me on the field. After killing my younger cousin, I'll make you die in an even more miserable way than him!" Ge Qing pointed at Chu Mu and the expression of ridicule immediately turned even more sinister!

Chu Mu only indifferently twitched the corner of his mouth, but didn't say anything. He continued to walk towards the resting

camp.

Tomorrow is the crucial point of the competition. I hope that I don't encounter you…" Ting Yu walked besides Chu Mu and softly spoke.

Chu Mu looked at her and insipidly said: "The probability is relatively low…"

"Are you truly not afraid of Ge Qing? Is killing him also very easy?" Ting Yu asked.

Currently, only Ting Yu knew of Chu Mu's real strength. Just now, after seeing Ge Qing act arrogantly in front of Chu Mu, Ting Yue felt that it was a bit preposterous and ridiculous. Ge Qing said that Hong Dan was a schmuck, but in reality, Ge Qing was even more stupid. Or perhaps it could be said that, on this island, every one including the foremen had been deceived by Chu Mu's appearance…

Chapter 35: The Last Fight

Since Mo Xie was heavily injured from the fight that night, Chu Mu using this method to obtain victory was so that Mo Xie could obtain more time to recover.

The healing medicine had already been completely used. By the second day of the competition, Mo Xie would still mostly likely only be able to recover 50 percent. Right now, Chu Mu could only resign himself to fate. If he were to encounter anyone on Ge Qing, Ting Yu, or Feng Gu's level, Chu Mu would have a big problem. If he were to encounter a normal opponent, Chu Mu would be able to safely survive this crisis!

"If I were able to learn a Soul Technique that allows soul pets to recover fighting strength quickly, I wouldn't be in such a difficult situation..." Chu Mu said to himself.

Soul pet trainer skills had many different categories. Among them were assisting type Soul Techniques, which included giving Soul Pets a special recovery state. This allowed Soul Pets to recover their fighting strength quicker. However, this sort of a high level Soul Technique seemed to be controlled by a few large powers, and obtaining them was exceptionally difficult.

Noon of the second day was the last day of the competition.

Soon, noon time was about to arrive. The remaining twenty one people entered the field again. A trace of cold air coagulated on everyone's faces, and their eyes displayed both a killing intent and

merciless desire to survive!

The format of the competition was completely up to the foremen to decide. The foremen wouldn't make two people with decent potential to fight each other. This also meant that they had already decided internally the ten who would pass and the ten who would be eliminated. Therefore, there wouldn't be too much suspense or luck involved in the fights.

It was also due to this that, of those surviving, they and their soul pets didn't expend too much fighting strength. After killing their opponents, they didn't immediately leave and instead stood at the side of the field, waiting for the competition to end to hear the foremen's instructions for them.

"The last battle: Chu Mu versus Ge Sen!"

Even if the foreman didn't say it, Chu Mu already knew that his opponent would be Ge Sen. After all, they were the only two who had yet to fight.

Chu Mu remembered back when he encountered a Mandy Monster while walking towards the inner island. At that time, Ge Sen seemed as if he had obtained a priceless treasure while Chu Mu held him in contempt!

"You can only blame your luck not being good enough. Your trick yesterday won't have any effect on me!" Ge Sen stood not far behind Chu Mu. On the eve of battle, Ge Sen still held a smile on his face.

Ge Sen captured a Mandy Monster which strength couldn't be considered weak and could be ranked around the tenth spot.

Ge Sen had been afraid of encountering an opponent stronger than him. After all, he was very clear of his own strength. If his luck was good, he would live, if not, then he would die. In his opinion, having Chu Mu as an opponent was his good fortune. God was still caring for him...

"Another tragedy..." Noting that Ge Sen believed he would live, Ting Yu insipidly spoke and felt sorrowful in Ge Sen's place.

"Today he shouldn't have any way of winning like yesterday. However, you still seem to think that he will definitely win..." Xin Xue, who had survived, whispered to Ting Yu.

Ting Yu looked at Chu Mu calmly standing on the field and a faint smile appeared on her face as she said: "He won't lose. There isn't anyone here who can beat him..."

Xin Xue felt that Ting Yu's words just now were extremely unfathomable. She intentionally looked at the strongest person, Feng Gu, and inwardly muttered: "Could it be that Ting Yu likes this fellow called Chu Mu? Otherwise, why would she say such a thing? After all, the strongest people here are Feng Gu and Ge Qing. As for Chu Mu, if it wasn't for that action yesterday, there wouldn't be anyone else who would pay attention to him.

Standing on the field, Chu Mu silently waited for the foreman's

order. Practically just as the foreman's voice faded away, Chu Mu summoned Mo Xie.

Mo Xie's body still had scars and her battle strength also hadn't completely recovered. However, Mo Xie's fighting resolve, from the beginning to the end, was still ignited. Those two silver eyes displayed a proud and battle-loving radiance!

"That's weird, the Moonlight Fox seems to be out of form?" When Chu Mu summoned Mo Xie, the adjacent Yu Ting immediately felt that Mo Xie was a bit different from her normal acute self.

"Why is that?" Next to her, Xin Xue asked.

"His Moonlight Fox's fighting strength seems to not have recovered yet. It should still be in a weak state..." Ting Yu whispered.

"Weak state? Then... then won't he definitely lose..." Xin Xue said,

"Not necessarily..." Ting Yu shook her head.

Standing next to Ting Yu and Xin Xue was Feng Gu who was considered the strongest among the ten people.

By chance, Feng Gu heard the soft conversation between the two female soul pet trainers and was extremely interested in Chu Mu.

He stared at Chu Mu deeply, wanting to know how this always quiet fellow would find the courage and countenance to fight with the not weak Ge Sen!

"Kill them!" The second the fight started, Ge Sen immediately ordered his Mandy Monster to attack Chu Mu and Mo Xie!

Extremely calm, Chu Mu retreated and commanded Mo Xie to first draw support from her speed advantage and then contend with the slow Mandy Monster.

When Chu Mu had previously met a Mandy Monster, he had given an assessment to the Mandy Monster. Its strength and defense weren't bad, but its speed was too slow. When it encountered a fast soul pet, it could be easily restrained!

Mo Xie's fighting strength wasn't even fifty percent recovered, but with her stage nine strength, dealing with a stage seven Mandy Monster shouldn't be too large of a problem!

"Idiot, it's behind you. Turn around!!" After a round of fighting, Ge Sen had already clearly discovered that in terms of speed, his Mandy Monster completely did not have the advantage. After fighting a while, it surprisingly hadn't even attacked Chu Mu's Moonlight Fox!

Chu Mu employed battle tactics very well, and from the very beginning, he didn't let Mo Xie attack. Instead, he incessantly made Mo Xie dodge while letting the Mandy Monster use up a plethora of physical strength as its abilities all missed!

“He’s very good at finding his opponent’s weakness…” Feng Gu slowly spoke. Having watched until here, Feng Gu truthfully was already able to guess the winner of this fight.

In fact, many people could see that Ge Sen’s Mandy Monster had been led around the nose by the Moonlight Fox this entire fight. As time passed, the Mandy Monster was already gasping for breath. It seemed that none of its abilities could hit the extremely quick Moonlight Fox. In everyone’s opinions, this silver Moonlight Fox was simply like a nimble and elegant dancer putting a show on the field to her content !

“Mo Xie, Charm!”

Up until now, Chu Mu made Mo Xie endure silently, and it wasn’t until now that a technique was used. As for using it now, it truly was at the Mandy Monster’s weakest moment and the point where the Mandy Monster was already exhausted fundamentally. It had no way of resisting this mental technique!

Calm and decisive! Calm to maintain a good condition and attacking to take a life!

Chapter 36: If You're Courting Death, Let Me Help You

A stage nine Moonlight Fox's wisdom was far superior to of a Mandy Monster-a soul pet with low intelligence and mental resistance. Mo Xie's silver pupils circulated a gorgeous luster as the Mandy Monster's gaze immediately turned a bit infatuated. It unexpectedly swayed its awkward body and vacantly and unknowingly crawled towards Mo Xie.

Mo Xie's claws slowly extended from her pads. Her dense white, final level one claws were abnormally sharp under the sunlight, reflecting a brilliantly cold light!

"Wake up!! Hurry and wake up!!!" Ge Sen was aware that his Mandy Monster had been infected and began shouting at the top of his lungs.

However, with the two level difference and mental strength discrepancy, the Mandy Monster was fundamentally unable to recover its consciousness from Mo Xie's Charm ability in such a short period of time!

Looking at the Ge Sen who was indignant to the point that he had lost himself a bit, a smile appeared on Chu Mu's face. Soul pets like the Mandy Monster could be affected by Mo Xie's Charm for up to half a minute, which was enough to kill the Mandy Monster many times over!

“Get rid of it.” Chu Mu didn’t waste any more time and immediately ordered Mo Xie to attack.

Mo Xie also carried Chu Mu’s austere disposition, and when she found the right opportunity, there was no way that she would give the opponent any chance of surviving!!

Mo Xie’s body was hidden by the dark before abruptly charging out. The Dark Assault technique raised her speed to the pinnacle and in an instant, she seemed to appear in front of the Mandy Monster’s body!

“What fast speed!!” Those outside the field could only see a silver light flash by; they couldn’t even see Mo Xie’s figure clearly!

Ripping Claw!!

The flickering cold light only flashed once!

A bloody florid splattered everywhere. Even as the Mandy Monster’s vitals were being ripped apart by Ripping Claw, its eyes were still vacant. It seemed as if it simply didn’t feel any pain!

Seeing the Mandy Monster’s vitals being ripped apart, Ge Sen seemed to lose his soul as he stood about foolishly!

Knowing that he was going to die, he had prepared in his heart. Perhaps he could accept it, but he had clearly already had hope for a chance of surviving. However, he didn’t think that his Mandy

Monster brought up with his own utmost care would lose to a petite fox. This sort of instantaneous drop into a ravine coupled with the fear of knowing death right afterwards could truly and immediately break down a person's spirit!

"Chu Mu wins!"

The foreman apathetically announced the end of this competition.

Quickly, two foremen dragged the completely broken Ge Sen. From the beginning to the end, Ge Sen didn't say even a single word and didn't struggle at all. He was exactly like a dead person...

Chu Mu retracted Mo Xie, and slowly walked off the field to stand with the group that had survived. During these two fights he didn't encounter anyone on Ge Qing's level. Chu Mu sighed a breath of relief.

Mo Xie held the complete advantage over soul pets like the Mandy Monster with slow speeds. Even only 50 percent of fighting strength was enough to deal with it, but if she were to encounter a soul pet even stronger than that, then it would be a fierce battle.

The remaining eleven people stood in the bloodstained field and looked up at the merciless master of this island, Cao Yi.

Although the remaining ten people could be said to have been decided before the competition, there were some soul pet trainers

who hid their strengths.

A youth called Lei Jina standing with Ting Yu and Xin Xue defeated someone who the foremen thought would survive and thus managed to obtain a surviving rank. Of course, Chu Mu was also someone who distinguished himself.

“The island rules are that only ten people can live. However, there are currently eleven people, so one person must be eliminated!”

Cao Yi’s gaze swept over the remaining eleven people and a cruel smile appeared on his face. He opened his mouth and said: “This last person to die will be difficult to pick out…”

Twenty one people were supposed to fight today. Since Feng Gu’s strength was the strongest, the foremen didn’t arrange for him to fight anyone and allowed him to directly become the leader of the 10 surviving soul pet trainers.

As for the other twenty, they fought one battle and if they won, they survived; nevertheless, there was clearly one extra person!

Eleven gazes looked at each other and silently guessed how the eleventh person would be eliminated and who it would be.

Cao Yi didn’t immediately indicate how they would eliminate the eleventh person. He only swept his gaze over the young soul pet trainers. A slightly playful intention was in his eyes.

Just at this time, from among the 11, someone walked forwards, bowed and then deferentially said:

“Senior Cao, Senior Cao, yesterday night, my opponent Zhang Feisheng was killed by your strong Soul Pet meaning that I didn’t have to fight a round. Today, after looking at all the fights, I feel that Chu Mu has the most qualifications to be the eliminated 11th person…”

“Eh? You want to help me eliminate someone?” A rare smile appeared on the grotesque natured Cao Yi.

“If I can do something for Senior Cao, Ge Qing would even walk through fire to do so. As for the trifling matter of eliminating someone, there’s no need for Senior Cao to worry about it. Senior Cao, what do you think? This small person would like to engage in a life and death fight with Chu Mu. If he loses, he will be the eliminated person. If I lose, then I will be eliminated.” Ge Qing prudently said.

Cao Yi raised his eyebrows and looked at Chu Mu before looking at Ge Qing. He stroked his sloppy beard and said: “This idea doesn’t sound bad…”

After hearing Ge Qing, Chu Mu’s eyebrows creased. Originally, he had thought he was fortunate enough to smoothly overcome this crisis. However, he didn’t expect Ge Qing to unexpectedly do this much!

“Chu Mu, do you have any objections?” Cao Yi swept his gaze over Chu Mu and asked him a question.

Chu Mu obviously had an objection. During this battle, Mo Xie was already heavily injured. Chu Mu didn’t have the heart to make it fight once more. This Ge Qing was truly pushing him too far, but for the sake of Mo Xie, Chu Mu had to silently bear it!

“Nightmare Palace needs strong people. Those who survived through luck like Chu Mu don’t have the qualifications to become a member of Nightmare Palace. Senior Cao, aren’t I correct?” Ge Qing’s flattery and his appearance while doing so caused others to feel disgusted!

“It’s not easy for someone to fall as low as you!” Chu Mu sneered.

Ge Qing’s action right now was truly extremely contemptible!

“So then, do you dare to have a life and death contest with me? If you don’t, what qualifications do you have to mock me. If it wasn’t for the foremen, you would have already died many times over!” Ge Qing mocked in retort.

Chu Mu sucked in a deep breath of air. At this time, he really did want to kill Ge Qing and let this fellow know how stupid his actions were. However, after thinking of Mo Xie’s injury, Chu Mu had no option but to silently bear with it.

“Wuwuwuwuwu”

From within the space, the recuperating Mo Xie could clearly feel her master being humiliated. Being a haughty and battle-loving soul pet, she immediately let out an angry shout, and requested Chu Mu to summon her to fight with Ge Qing's Scaled Snake!

"If you have resentment, then you should settle it. I, Cao Yi, have always been an extremely fair person. Coincidentally, I need to eliminate person, so we should pick this person from the two of you. Chu Mu, I really admired your action yesterday. Do you have the guts to accept today's life and death challenge? Haha..." Cao Yi laughed.

Ge Qing also sneered and stared at Chu Mu, wanting to force him into an impasse.

"Chu Mu, say something!" Cao Yi ordered.

Chu Mu suddenly sucked in a deep breath of air and raised his head. His two black pupils emanated a hint of savagery as he coldly said: "If Ge Qing wants to court death, let me help him!"

Chapter 37: Advanced Level Battle Technique And A Moon Blade

“Hahahaha, good! Then it’ll be up to you two to decide victory or defeat!” Cao Yi began laughing.

Chu Mu slowly walked onto the field. He wasn’t the least bit afraid of Ge Qing, but he also knew that his current strength was in no way close to being a foreman’s opponent, especially the grotesque-natured Cao Yi. Chu Mu thus didn’t want to directly contend with Cao Yi,

Ge Qing held an expression of schadenfreude as he walked onto the field and one could see the innermost excitement in his eyes. It seemed as if he would finally be able to take revenge for his younger cousin, Zhang Ge, today!

The additional battle caused others to feel quite excited. They all wanted to know the outcome of this battle between the dark horse Chu Mu who suddenly killed his way through, and Ge Qing.

“Take out your soul pets!” Cao Yi instructed. The battle had begun!

“Listen to my summon, Scaled Snake!” Ge Qing’s summoning speed was extremely quick.

Chu Mu immediately chanted his incantation and rapidly

summoned Mo Xie in front of him!

"You and your fox will become my Scaled Snake's food!" Ge Qing pointed with his hand and immediately issued a mental order, instructing the Scaled Snake to immediately dive at Mo Xie.

The Scaled Snake was already three meters long and its entire body was covered in scales, with various monstrous, decorative designs on them. When its ferocious mouth opened, a dense cold air proliferated. It was incomparably malevolent, and when feeble soul pets opposed it, they would even lose their fighting courage!

Mo Xie, with a soft outside but sturdy inside, didn't have any fear when facing the Scaled Snake. She unexpectedly went after the Scaled Snake's open mouth!!

"Keng!!"

Almost as if she collided against metal, Mo Xie's claws fell against the Scaled Snake's Teeth causing sparks to fly. One could see how sharp both the teeth and claws were!

The Scaled Snake's direct attack didn't work so its body curved in a sudden attempt to circle around!

Coiling Snake!

Using its superior body, it would coil around and tightly squeeze its prey. This Snake Race battle technique was able to strangle its

prey alive!

“Mo Xie, fight from a further distance. Don’t give it a chance to constrict you!” Chu Mu immediately ordered.

When it came to fighting with physical bodies, the petite Mo Xie didn’t have the slightest of advantages. Therefore, Mo Xie used her speed advantage to restrict this thickly scaled poisonous snake!

The Scale Snake’s Coiling Snake hadn’t finished yet when the vigorous body of Mo Xie quickly jumped away. After a few consecutive, graceful jumps, Mo Xie created a ten meter gap and the clumsy Scaled Snake only ended up coiling its own body!

“Splashing Venom!” Ge Qing coldly yelled.

The Scaled Snake uncoiled its body and suddenly opened its mouth, where it spat out a green-colored corrosive venom. The venomous liquid seemed to corrode the air as it flew in an arc towards Mo Xie!

“Pupu”

The venomous liquid splashed onto Mo Xie’s fluffy tail. A black smoke emerged from her tail like it caught on fire. Moreover, a small corroded wound quickly appeared!

Chu Mu felt a burst of fear. This Scaled Snake’s corrosive venom was extremely strong. Even with her late first stage resistant fur,

Mo Xie was unable to resist it!

“Xia!!” The Scaled Snake obviously wouldn’t give Mo Xie any opportunity to catch her breath as another Splashing Venom immediately flew towards Mo Xie!

“Beng!!”

Dirt flew everywhere as the ground was smashed. The Scaled Snake’s body full of scales had an incredibly terrifying pouncing strength. If it hit Mo Xie and followed up with a Coiling Snake, it would signify the end of this fight.

Mo Xie consecutively hopped away from the Scaled Snake’s attacks. Her two silver eyes rigidly stared at the Scaled Snake’s every move. Occasionally, she would launch her own attack.

“What a laughable Ripping Claw. It simply cannot break apart my Scaled Snake’s defense!” Ge Qing mocked.

Chu Mu swept his gaze over Mo Xie’s claws. After that night of consecutive battles, Mo Xie’s claws were clearly injured. Despite reaching the final stage, she couldn’t even exhibit the strength of her late stage claws. This impacted Mo Xie quite heavily.

Ge Qing stared at Mo Xie and suddenly a ruthless grin appeared on his face. He issued an order to his Scaled Snake!

Chu Mu suddenly found that the bottom half of this malevolent

being's body had abruptly coiled up and he immediately realized that the Scaled Snake was about to use a technique!

Vicious Devour!!

The Scaled Snake's three meter body suddenly uncoiled and rapidly flew out like an arrow. It's ferocious mouth opened wide and a black demonic gas clouded around the Scaled Snake's body. As it pounced forward, the black demonic gas unexpectedly formed an imitation of the Scaled Snakes ferocious mouth!!

Vicious Devour allowed both the Scaled Snake's attack range and bite strength to momentarily increase, and this coldly and threateningly surged towards Mo Xie and Chu Mu's faces.

Covered by the black demonic gas, the Scaled Snake appeared to be several times larger. It seemed like it was going to devour the entire fighting field, causing Mo Xie to have no escape route!!

"I've said it before, you'll become my Scaled Snake's food!!" Vicious Devour had never been used by Ge Qing before. It could be said that he was intentionally saving it for Chu Mu!

"Vicious Devour-people and soul pets devoured by it will firstly have their skin bitten apart before the overarching venom pours inside,causing their body to ulcerate!" Feng Gu watched the field attentively and indifferently narrated the ability's ruthlessness.

An unpleasant stench flew out, and the audience almost felt as if

fermentation was coming from the Scaled Snake's stomach!

"Xia!!"

Facing the Vicious Devour attack, Mo Xie's body immediately became blurry and, faintly, one could see two small Mo Xie silhouettes!

"Hmph, trying to use late stage Moon Shadow to dodge my Scaled Snake?" Ge Qing sneered. He had already predicted that Chu Mu's Mo Xie would use the Moon Shadow technique!

"Xia!!!"

The enormous demonic mouth continued to charge towards Mo Xie's two indistinct silhouettes making it completely impossible to dodge!!!

"The Moonlight Fox didn't dodge!"

"Chu Mu is also done for!"

At this moment, in other people's opinions, it seemed that the outcome had been decided!

"Since you can't dodge, then die!!" A merciless expression appeared on Ge Qing's face!

“Hmph, why do I have to dodge?!” Chu Mu let out a cold harrumph. His expression was focused, almost as if he had been waiting for this moment!

Just as the the Vicious Devour’s terrifyingly strong jaw chomped together, Chu Mu unexpectedly propped up the corner of his mouth: “Mo Xie, Dark Assault, Moonlight Slash!”

The second Chu Mu issued his command, Mo Xie’s blurry silhouette instantly became distinct. Just as the vicious large mouth closed together, it abruptly and unexpectedly charged towards the Scaled Snake’s throat!

In the middle of the darkness, a fleeting sword-like silver light rushed directly into the vicious large mouth!

The dim and fading black demonic gas suddenly expanded rapidly. The only ones left on the field were Ge Qing and the Scaled Snake!

However, in the next moment, a moon-white luster suddenly emanated from within the turbidity like an emerging daybreak. It formed into an incomparably gorgeous and refined moon blade that broke through the black demonic gas!

“A moon blade, it’s Moonlight Slash!! It’s a Moonlight Fox high level battle technique!!!” Seeing this scene, someone from the spectators yelled out!

This shout was astonishingly met with an explosion of a black florid of blood that burst out from within the cold moon blade. Subsequently, someone saw that inside the turbid field, Ge Qing's Scaled Snake was split into two pieces!!

Chapter 38: Murderer, Chu Mu

A gust of violent wind poured down from above, hurrying into the campground, dispersing the black and sinister aura!

What emerged from the field, however, was an astonishing sight! The three meter long Scaled Serpent, from the throat all the way to the tail, was thoroughly ripped apart, splitting the snake into two bloody halves as if a sharp blade chopped through it with an unstoppable force!

The entire camp suddenly went silent! All eyes fell dumbstruck one by one onto the blood-drenched and fierce Moonlight Fox!

The Moonlight Fox was known for its beautiful appearance, becoming the favorite of many noble young ladies. However, the Moonlight Fox in front of them gave everyone a chill! In particular, its pair of silver pupils, at the moment of violence, bursted with a savage glint!

“Kill him!”

Just when everyone was stunned by the scene in front of them, Chu Mu suddenly issued a command to Mo Xie!

Ge Qing’s previous humiliation and provocation also evoked Mo Xie’ wrath. As Chu Mu commanded, Mo Xie swiftly turned around and cast her abilities!

Dark Assault!

The ten meter distance was closed instantly as a bloodied silver blur flit across the field!

Late stage Dark Assault was so fast that Ge Qing couldn’t even see it. Before Ge Qing could even recover from his shock, a lethal claw shockingly swiped across his neck!

“Shua!!”

Ge Qin, without any preparation, couldn’t dodge at all. Blood splattered out of his throat. He frantically pressed his hands onto his neck and staggered backwards a few steps!

“Your……your fox……how……how……” Ge Qin covered his neck, but his major artery was cut already. The blood couldn't be stopped, continuously flowing out between his fingers……

“I see, Pitiful Appearance, this trash fox’s disguise ability……Well hidden, very well hidden. Haha, interesting, HAHA!” Just then, Cao Yi suddenly started laughing loudly, from finally seemingly seeing an interesting fight!

When Cao Yi spoke, everyone was abruptly enlightened. The Moonlight Fox had a disguising ability. If it was able to cast an advanced ability such as Moonlight Slash, this Moonfox was at at least the Ninth Stage!

Ge Qin's face become increasingly pale, even slightly turning blue. Blood still unceasingly flowed from his neck.

Staring at Mo Xie with unparalleled fear, he stiffly uttered a few words, "Dis……Disguise……"

"How does asking for death feel?" Chu Mu slowly walked in front of Ge Qin, his eyes shining with a demonic glint.

Ge Qin's hands clutched at his spewing neck, eyes quickly spinning around, face twitching.

Chu Mu extended his hand and apathetically gave Ge Qin's head a push. Ge Qin, already at the verge of death, fell over with this push, slamming heavily onto the ground!

A burst of shaking and spasms later, Ge Qin was void of any signs of life. Eyes white, mouth open, and blood contained in his throat……

A disguised Stage Nine Moonlight Fox! If not for Ge Qin's death-wish like actions, no one would have thought that Chu Mu hid his strength this deeply!

Stage Nine. That meant that Chu Mu was definitely not inferior to Feng Gu. Chu Mu went from the least conspicuous to instantly becoming a trainer that could contest with Feng Gu!

Chu Mu retracted the very tired Mo Xie and slowly walked off the

field.

Chu Mu didn't mind everyone's astonished gazes, but stared straight at Cao Yi!

Cao Yi kept a monstrous smile on his face. Sights of this smile made people uncomfortable all over, as if Cao Yi would turn into a cruel hoodlum any time!

Suddenly, Cao Yi's monstrous smile vanished, his mouth uttering a few notes!

Chu Mu creased his brows, because he felt a slight ripple of mental strength from where Cao Yi was!

"Mental Restraint!" Cao Yi uttered these words as his expression instantly turned ice cold.

Soul Technique!!

Mental Soul Technique!!

A weird mental wave quickly swept past, as if the shockwave after an explosion, swiftly digging into the mind of the leaving Chu Mu!

Chu Mu's steps abruptly ended, face instantly turning pale. A head splitting pain made him want to scream out loud!

The sudden, unexpected event made everyone surprised again. Staring frightenedly at Cao Yi, they didn't understand why Cao Yi wanted to suddenly ambush Chu Mu. Didn't Chu Mu already win?

"Chu Mu, you've got some nerve!" Cao Yi shouted coldly!

The power of Mental Restraint caused Chu Mu constantly feel the pain of his mental strength being crazily compressed, as if a pair of Herculean hands were crushing his skull.

Chu Mu fell half kneeling onto the ground, the unstoppable mental strength causing his breathing to be laboured!

"I'll give you one last chance, if you say even the slightest of lies, I'll immediately rip you into pieces!" Cao Yi glared coldly and arrogantly at Chu Mu.

Chu Mu still kept his head down, breathing heavily. At that moment, Chu Mu felt the threat of death!

"Wuwuwu!!!" Feeling Chu Mu in danger, Mo Xie immediately started crying out, signalling for Chu Mu to summon her.

"Mo Xie, don't worry, his Soul Technique won't affect me much. Don't worry, I'll be fine." Chu Mu telepathically told the furious Mo Xie.

“Zhou Shengmo, Tang Xian, Luo Chen and two others, were they killed by you?” Cao Yi screamed with wrath!

Just as he said it, the remaining nine people, including the two foremen Gu Lei and Zeng Ze stared at the half kneeling Chu Mu, stunned!!

Could it be that the person who killed the five people in one night was Chu Mu?!

Unbelievable! No one could relate a powerful murderer with Chu Mu and his Moonlight Fox. However, Cao Yi’s wrath and Chu Mu’s previous display led them to believe, however unlikely, that the murderer who struck fear within everyone was Chu Mu!!

“Speak!!” Cao Yi screamed again, his eyes filled with scary killing intent!

Chu Mu slowly raised his head and answered difficulty, “No!”

“You still dare to lie?” The wrath on Cao Yi’s face became even more extreme. He casted Mental Restraint again. This time, the nine people nearby clearly felt a strange coldness piercing into their brains!

Chu Mu kept his head down the entire time. Just as Cao Yi cast Mental Restraint again, a dark light flashed through his eyes!

The next moment, Chu Mu let out a muffled grunt, shaking

slightly!

“Wuwuwu! Wuwuwu!!”

Feeling Chu Mu being ravaged, Mo Xie immediately emitted a heart wrenching cry! The frenzied Mo Xie unbelievably started using her fragile body to ram the soul pet space, attempting to break through the restrictions of the space with her own power!

Only, Mo Xie was only a Ninth Stage Moonlight Fox. It was impossible for her to break through the confinement of Chu Mu’s soul pet space!

Chapter 39: Evolution: The Second Phase

Cao Yi let out a deep breath and coldly harrumphed. He was clearly equally afraid of Senior Xia and had just then, the anger had rushed into his head. Right now, he had no choice but to forcefully suppress it.

Whoever is living with him, carry him back. Listen, your lives are all in my control. The only person who can expropriate your lives is myself! All of you scram back to your huts. We will leave here in three days!" Cao Yi roared before immediately walking towards the outside of the camp!

The other foremen immediately followed Cao Yi, leaving the bloody field.

"Senior Cao, why were you so angry? This brat should actually have strength since he was able to nurture the White Nightmare for such a long period of time..." Gue Lei followed beside Cao Yi and spoke in an extremely soft voice.

Cao Yi let out a cold snort, but didn't say anything and continued to walk forward.

The adjacent Zeng Ze looked at Cao Yi. He suddenly pulled at Gu Lei, indicating for him to stop.

When Cao Yi walked further away, Zeng Ze glared at Gu Lei and said: "After following Cao Yi for so long, you still don't know his

temper? Cao Yi's envy is extremely strong. He definitely doesn't want someone who he has disciplined to end up in a position higher than him. This Chu Mu has nurtured a White Nightmare for such a long period of time and still hasn't died. Perhaps one day Senior Xia may look favorably upon him, remove the White Nightmare Soul Pact, and give him a Blue Nightmare or something like that..."

"Senior Xia... at that time we still believed that the child was a piece of trash. I didn't expect his strength to be this strong." Gu Lei said.

"This child truly has potential. In my opinion Senior Xia won't let him die, and in the future there is a high chance of him receiving a high ranking spot in Nightmare Palace. Gu Lei, think about how long we've been on these broken islands for..." Zeng Ze spoke in an even lower voice.

Gu Lei wasn't stupid and quickly understood Zeng Ze's idea. He whispered: "Then we..."

"Cao Yi definitely wants to kills him. If he wants to kill Chu Mu, we will protect him. If we have a chance, we will report to Senior Xia that Cao Yi also died very miserably. As for us..." A smile appeared on Zeng Ze's face.

Gu Lei also began laughing!

Inside the camp...

Previously, Cao Yi flaring up into such a terrible rage caused everyone's faces to turn unsightly. It wasn't until Cao Yi left that they felt relieved from the burden.

"Chu Mu... Chu Mu..."

Ting Yu walked to Chu Mu's side and pushed him a few times to see if she could wake him up.

As for the others, they only stood to one side. Once Cao Yi left, they all had lingering fears as they looked at the unconscious Chu Mu. Ultimately, they all left. Whether Chu Mu lived or died had nothing to do with them; or perhaps they all wished for Chu Mu to die here.

Ting Yu alone wasn't enough to carry Chu Mu. She read her incantation and summoned the Thorny Rose Demon to carry Chu Mu back to the wooden hut.

"Hmm? You've awaken. Sorry about this, but I cannot carry you by myself so I can only bundle you back... " Ting Yu made the Thorny Rose Demon carry Chu Mu into the wooden hut where he finally opened his eyes.

Chu Mu nodded his head before wracking his brain, trying to remove the remnants of the Mental Restraint from his mind.

Truthfully, Chu Mu himself didn't faint. Cao Yi was a Soul Soldier and Chu Mu was too. His Mental Restraint could at most

give Chu Mu a headache, but couldn't knock him out. The reason for "fainting" was naturally to alleviate himself from the crisis this time.

"Are you ok?" Ting Yu poured a cup of water for Chu Mu and asked a question.

Chu Mu swatted the dust on his body and indifferently replied: "I'm ok."

Ting Yu saw that Chu Mu didn't really want to speak and knew that he needed calm down. She didn't ask anything else and went to do her own things.

Chu Mu took a shower and changed clothes before sitting on the bed where he began silently cultivating. When Cao Yi performed Mental Restraint on Chu Mu, Chu Mu used up a bit of Soul Power to secretly resist. This bit of Soul Power had to be immediately replenished because Chu Mu wasn't sure when the ninth stage White Nightmare would need to eat.

When nighttime fell, Chu Mu left the campsite alone. Just as before, he walked towards the precipice hanging over the roaring ocean.

"Wuwuwu" Mo Xie silently stood beside Chu Mu. The silver moonlight that dispersed over her body caused her slender and beautiful body to look many times more demonic.

Chu Mu sat next to the precipice and gently caressed Mo Xie's supple fur. He slowly opened his mouth and said: "Back then you were too extreme. Right now we aren't his opponent and must silently endure..."

"Wuwuwu~~" Mo Xie let out a prolonged howl. Her two spirited pupils stared at the silver curved moon hanging above the sea surface.

"Don't worry, I will never let today's affair happen again!" Having to silently endure today also caused Chu Mu to feel humiliated! Currently, Chu Mu's heart was like a surging and barrelling ocean wave that unceasingly rose up. It had a thirst to become even stronger!

Mo Xie and Chu Mu's thoughts were interlinked and she could also feel Chu Mu's inner anger back then.

When her master was humiliated, how could she not fight for her master!? Chu Mu's two eyes stared at the silver moon eyes that were equally full of the most intense bloodthirst!

"Wu!!" Mo Xie raised her head and let out a howl at the silver moon above the sea!

"Three days later we are going to a different place..."

"Wu!!"

Chu Mu was about to say something, but was cut off by Mo Xie's extremely high pitched howl.

"What, Mo Xie... Mo Xie..." Chu Mu turned his head and stared at Mo Xie. However, in the next moment, something the expression in his eyes changed!

The silver moonlight fell onto Mo Xie's body, illuminating her fur that was willfully fluttering in the air as she faced the sea breeze. It was a truly majestic appearance.

A motley radiance flickered around her furry body, condensing together in a rather unexpectedly dazzling manner!

This change caused Chu Mu to stare blankly. He was incomparably stunned as he watched Mo Xie's body undergo an evident change!

"This... this is an evolution!!!" Chu Mu called out in surprise!

From their birth, every Soul Pet would undergo countless stages of evolutions as they grew. Powering up after the ninth stage was one evolution!!

At this moment, Mo Xie was in the process of experiencing an evolution, evolving from the first phase to the second!!

Differing from strength increasing due to growing, evolution could be considered an extremely thorough power boost. No

matter if it was the physical build, fighting position, strength, speed, defense, or various other attributes, they would all undergo a large increase!

“Wu!!”

Mo Xie let out another high pitched howl that collided with the ocean water. Instead of dispersing, it condensed and unceasingly reverberated across the ocean surface!!

The divine light around Mo Xie grew more and more intense. Her body was enveloped by the moonlight, and the claws inside her pads suddenly extended and slowly grew longer while turning even more sharp and tenacious!

Chapter 40: Training - Heading Towards A Ninetails Transformation

---

Mo Xie's transformation didn't end. Her body began to grow larger and her figure grew even more elegant, simultaneously filling with an even larger feeling of strength. Her supple silver tail emitted an even more grand and icy arrogance!

"Wu!!!"

In the blackness of night, an edge of a precipice hung over an ocean. Mo Xie, immersed in the brilliant dawn of transformation, unfurrowed her body and let out a cold howl towards the moon. The sound crashed against the sea waves, reverberating with the ocean's scream!

Chu Mu knew that Mo Xie's current transformation pertained to her form, and she would thus enter a period of deep sleep afterwards to truly change her inner essence. As for this period of deep sleep, it was the most optimal time to use Soul Crystals to instruct her.

Presently, Chu Mu was unable to change whether or not he had Soul Power and immediately retrieved the precious Soul Crystals from his carrying bag.

"Mo Xie, eat this!" Chu Mu used his Soul Power to seal the Soul Crystal's energy to ensure that the energy would be released only after Mo Xie ate it.

The energy within the Soul Crystals was absolutely enormous. This sort of energy needed to be slowly absorbed. Trying to do it all in one go would render a soul pet unable to absorb it all.

Soul pets were unable to control their own slow absorption of this sort of Soul Crystal Energy. Therefore, while absorbing Soul Crystal Energy, soul pet trainers had to be extremely attentive, while also prudently completing this training phase.

“Beast type as the primary and fire type as an auxiliary. The soul crystal’s energy should persist for three days. Mo Xie, these three days are crucial for your strength to increase. After completion, even if you don’t change to a different race, your strength will definitely not be inferior to that of a High Rank soul pet!” Chu Mu’s confidence instantly increased; there was nothing that was more important than growing stronger and of more value than the inner waves surging in his heart!

“Wu!” Mo Xie let out a howl. After transforming, the tiredness slowly crept up and she very obediently went back into the soul space to receive Chu Mu’s Soul Crystal training.

A soul pet’s training was chosen extremely carefully!

Chu Mu didn’t immediately return to his wooden hut. He poured his mental ideas into the soul space and slowly controlled the dual element Soul Crystal which he had already put Soul Power into.

The more more elements there were, the harder it would become

to properly control the energy's release. What Chu Mu had to currently accomplish was to allow the beast type energy to slowly be released first in order for Mo Xie to first receive the most pure beast type energy's baptism!

Fortunately, Chu Mu was a Soul Soldier and his Soul Remembrance was strong enough to achieve this sort of meticulous control.

When inputting his Soul Remembrance into a Soul Crystal, soul pet trainers were able to see the Soul Crystal's Crown. The Soul Crystal's Crown was like a gorgeous and fascinating halo that rotated around the center of the Soul Crystal's inside, and it represented the Soul Crystal's energy.

When Chu Mu entered the inside of this Soul Crystal, he saw two layers of different colored Soul Crystal Crowns-brown and red.

The brown-colored attributed indicated the beast type while red signified the fire type. These two Soul Crystal Crown layers of brown and red colors respectively, signified that this Soul Crystal was dual attributed.

Chu Mu slowly locked his Soul Remembrance on the slightly unstable brown colored Soul Crystal Crown and began to slowly draw this energy into Mo Xie's body.

Only 20% of the 100% beast type Soul Crystal Crown's energy was drawn out by Chu Mu before slowly pouring into Mo Xie's body.

……

After Mo Xie's body experienced the transformation baptism, another change occurred: The flesh of her four limbs and trunk clearly expanded…

Simultaneously, Chu Mu's Soul Remembrance locked onto the red colored Soul Crystal Crown, drawing out about 10% of the energy before slowly pouring it into Mo Xie's body.

The introduction of fire type energy caused Mo Xie's body to change immediately. An unexpectedly beautiful sun-setting red luster appeared on her silver white fur. This sort of luster was hidden within the silver fur and only when one moved his eyes would one be able to see it!

The energy needed to be slowly absorbed. Chu Mu couldn't be overhasty, so today's training could only go so far. He had to wait until Mo Xie's body completely absorbed the twenty percent beast type energy and the twenty percent fire type energy before continuing training…

"Nevertheless, I hope that the training this time will succeed." Having completed this extremely essential training which focused on mental strength, Chu Mu also let out a light sigh of relief.

Soul pet trainers paid an extreme amount of attention to their soul pet's training. For instance, a moonlight fox had a primary demon type attribute and an auxiliary beast type attribute. In reality, if a soul pet trainer used a Moonlight Fox to fight, he or she would primarily train the demon attribute and the beast type

attribute secondarily. Ordinary food was two demon type Soul Crystals and one beast type Soul Crystal. After all, the innate demon skills of a Moonlight Fox were stronger, and this sort of feeding method allowed their demon abilities to be exhibited to their limit.

Another example was a Hunting Wolf. A Hunting Wolf was a purely beast type organism and increasing other attributes was essential. For example, fire and ice-water could make a Hunting Wolf's attacks even more dangerous. However, the taboo was that the fire and ice attributes absolutely could not become the primary way of raising the Hunting Wolf. A Hunting Wolf's innate gift for magic was extremely low and trying to enhance magic properties was equivalent to teaching a deer the ability to hunt. It was up to the soul pet trainer himself to determine how much a soul pet's respective attribute proportions should be trained in order for the soul pet to exhibit the largest possible strength.

It could be said that training a soul pet was an extremely profound study conducted by soul pet trainers. Different soul pets required different training methods. Even if it was an identical soul pet, there could still be different training methods.

Chu Mu and Mo Xie were relatively special existences. If Mo Xie was simply a Moonlight Fox, Chu Mu's training method focusing on the beast attribute primarily, fire attribute secondarily and demon attribute forthwith would absolutely throttle the Moonlight Fox's demon ability. It would thereby be extremely implausible for Mo Xie's attacking power to increase.

Once this sort of training ended, this soul pet would simply

become insignificant. Its beast type energy wasn't as good as a few Hunting Wolves, the effect of its fire attribute would also be inferior to fire ability soul pets, and the demon type that itself was naturally good at would become completely abandoned.

However, the reason why Chu Mu was so adherent to Mo Xie using this method to increase her offensive ability was because Mo Xie was a Soul Pet that could change races. Chu Mu doing such training was actually equivalent to laying the foundations for Mo Xie's race changes, causing Mo Xie's fighting abilities to equal the terrifying Ninetailed Demon Fox transformation and not the cowardly Silver Moon Fox or Demon Moon Fox!

Chu Mu himself was unable to completely ensure that Mo Xie would definitely transform into a Ninetailed Demon Fox, so this sort of training method required Mo Xie to strive for it herself when she trained in the future, as well as a bit of luck.

There were innumerable methods for soul pets to train as well as innumerable transformations. No matter which training method the soul pet trainer picked, the most important goal was to make the soul pet even stronger, with better adaptability in fights!

Chapter 41: New Battle Technique: Flaming Awn

After returning to his wooden hut, Chu Mu could finally go to sleep.

Nightmare Palace's rules meant that as long as one could survive this sort of competition while simultaneously not being devoured by the Nightmare, he would then have the qualifications to become a Nightmare Palace member.

Currently, Chu Mu could already be said to be a Nightmare Palace member. Three days later he would go to a few islands with towns on them and then he would no longer have to live like a slave.

The only thing that Chu Mu was worried about was Cao Yi, whose temperament was hard to judge. Previously, if Senior hadn't been mentioned, Cao Yi may have killed him right then and there.

"If I have the opportunity, I must get rid of this Cao Yi!" Chu Mu was able to discern the killing intent that Cao Yi harbored towards him. This sort of hidden danger could bring him a lot of trouble.

Upon returning to his wooden hut, Chu Mu didn't sleep immediately. His training had expended around thirty to forty percent of his Soul Power. Taking advantage of the fact that the White Nightmare hadn't eaten yet, Chu Mu needed to recover his Soul Power as soon as possible.

He silently cultivated from daybreak until approximately dusk when the White Nightmare finally awakened. It asked Chu Mu for food for the first time after entering stage nine.

Chu Mu's expended Soul Power had already been completely recovered by then, and he used it to feed the White Nightmare. In Chu Mu's consciousness, the White Nightmare let out a shout indicating that it had eaten enough and once again entered a deep sleep.

"Eighty percent. I still have twenty percent left, so I'm still fine." A smile finally appeared on Chu Mu's face.

After his strength reached a Soul Soldier's third Remembrance, he should have drawn apart a definite gap with the stage nine White Nightmare. Chu Mu was now able to have twenty percent of his Soul Power at his disposal.

The Soul Technique - Chong Mei expended approximately forty percent of Chu Mu's Soul Power. In a crucial moment, Chu Mu could still use it. Furthermore, once he left the Cyan Nightmare Island and became a Nightmare Palace member, Chu Mu would be able to access other Soul Techniques. The depletion of those Soul Techniques shouldn't be as large.

The remaining Soul Power left by the White Nightmare could be considered to have unhinged some of the locks restraining Chu Mu. After fights, Chu Mu no longer had to hide.

When night arrived, Chu Mu began training Mo Xie once again.

He continued to follow the same sequence of training-using twenty percent of the beast Soul Crystal Crown energy to baptise Mo Xie, and ten percent of the fire type Soul Crystal Crown energy to increase her attribute.

“A transformation happened?” When Chu Mu finished today’s training, he immediately discovered a few changes with Mo Xie’s body.

The most evident was that the claws hidden in her pads were no longer simply becoming sharper, but instead these Young Claws fell off and now new claws grew from her pads!

“Second stage claws, Punishing Claws!” Upon discovering Mo Xie’s change, Chu Mu immediately revealed an expression of extreme excitement.

Evolving from the first stage’s Young Claws to the second stage’s Punishing Claws generally required a long period of time with ceaseless practice. The transformation this time allowed Mo Xie’s claws to directly increase by a stage!

The sharpness of second stage Punishing Claws was an entire one times more than the final stage of Young Claws. Even if one continuously fought the whole night, abrasion would not occur like before!

Transforming from the first stage's Young Claws to the second stage's Punishing Claws caused Mo Xie's attack power to increase by a large margin. Perhaps her techniques would also transform as well!

During the third training session, Chu Mu's changed the attribute proportion and only allowed Mo Xie to use the fire attribute. At the last training session, Chu Mu once again drew out twenty percent of the fire attribute energy for Mo Xie before pouring in ten percent of the beast type attribute energy for Mo Xie.

Chu Mu did this to allow Mo Xie's transformation into the Moonlight Fox second stage to possess the fire attribute. However, what really surprised Chu Mu was that Mo Xie's silver colored fur had unexpectedly changed. The silver luster turned even more sparkly and fascinating, surprisingly entering the final evolution of the first stage of fur.

Chu Mu had continuously used beast type Soul Cores to feed Mo Xie throughout the duration of their training. When Mo Xie reached the ninth stage of the first form, her mainly attacked and her defensive fur was still stuck at the late stage.

However, this time after training, Mo Xie's defensive fur finally entered the final stage of the first stage of fur. Furthermore, from a growth perspective, it wouldn't be long before she could enter the second stage's annealed woolen fur state!

The second stage's annealed wooden fur was an extremely unique fighting fur of soul pets. While chasing something, the fur would

turn extremely soft, forming a fluent line and reducing air resistance.

On the other hand, while defending, the second stage's annealed wooden fur would become tenacious and its resistance capabilities would reach a terrifying state.

If Mo Xie was able to reach the second stage's annealed woolen fur, even if she encountered a stage nine Hunting Wolf's Demonic Wolf's Violent Attack, she would perhaps only sustain a light injury.

"Although the defensive fur has yet to reach the second stage, it's not a big deal. Take your time!" Chu Mu was extremely satisfied with the results of this training session.

With Mo Xie's current state, even if four of Zhou Shengmo's Hunting Wolves appeared, they definitely would not be Mo Xie's opponent. Moreover, what Chu Mu was looking forward to more was whether the addition of the fire attribute would give Mo Xie any new abilities!

Mo Xie's transformation was relatively obvious during the third training session. However, during the subsequent fourth and fifth training sessions, Mo Xie didn't undergo anymore distinct changes. This was because Mo Xie was currently at the first stage of the second form and her body had a limit, so her claws and fur could not excessively grow.

Another reason was because the quality of this Soul Crystal could

no longer satisfy Mo Xie's current stage. Any superfluous energy would pretty much become digested food .

It would be time to leave the island tomorrow. When night arrived, Chu Mu intentionally brought Mo Xie outside of the camp in order to see her abilities after the addition of the new attribute.

"Mo Xie!" Chu Mu chanted his incantation and summoned Mo Xie in front of him. A light blue radiance slowly condensed in front of him before slowly receding. In the middle of the Soul Pact design, the beautiful and grand Mo Xie appeared, with her wild nature.

"Wuwu" Mo Xie raised her head and let out a howl. The sound of the fox howl instantly echoed throughout the forest and startled a plethora of small birds into flying off!

"Zizizi~~"

From within a dilapidated tree inside the forest suddenly rang out an ear piercing shriek. Subsequently, a black flying soul pet abruptly circled around in the air as if it was complaining about Mo Xie making a ruckus in its territory.

"An approximately first form stage five Dark Night Bat? How perfect for practice." When Chu Mu saw the noisy soul pet, a smile appeared on his face.

Mo Xie raised her head, her silver pupils attentively watching the

bat. Suddenly, a trace of enchanting fire flashed across her pupils!

“Flame Awn!” In the first instant, Chu Mu grasped Mo Xie’s change in this regard.

Flame Awn was a fire type battle technique and was the most direct way to cause a burn injury. Although its burning effect wasn’t as effective as Conflagrate, its discharge speed held an absolute advantage.

Chapter 42: Leaving Cyan Nightmare Island

Flame Awn was like an obtrusive flame suddenly flickering gorgeously and magnificently in the night. The color of the flame closely resembled the sunset-a captivating red. The Dark Night Bat that was hit accurately let out a shriek!

“Zizizi…zi!!” The Dark Night Bat’s flimsy wings immediately lit up with a red color, and unexpectedly caught ablaze!!

The Dark Night Bat’s shrieks grew even more miserable. and the ear-piercing noise continued to ring out; it was acute and mournful.

With a burnt wing, the Dark Night Bat completely lost its battle power and transformed into a streak of red light that crashed into the grass. After painfully struggling a few times, its life gradually slipped away.

“Fire is extremely effective against wing type and dark type soul pets!” Chu Mu looked at the Dark Night Bat as he spoke.

Although Mo Xie had just grasped this Flame Awn technique, she was still able to kill this Dark Night Bat with one move. By coincidence, fire techniques were also super effective against the Dark Night Bat.

Dark Night Bats were part of the Demon World - Wing Attribute - Bat Race. It was very clear that this Dark Night Bat also harbored a

dark attribute. Organisms with wings were normally fearful of fire type techniques that could burn their wings. With the addition of the dark attribute, this Dark Night Bat was truly unfortunate. Even while dying, it didn't think that a Moonlight Fox would unexpectedly perform a fire type technique, its fatal weakness!

With the addition of the fire attribute, Mo Xie currently only possessed the Flame Awn technique. As Mo Xie continued growing, she would gradually master more stronger techniques.

After returning to the wooden hut, Chu Mu was able to sleep while being somewhat at ease. Over the past few days, Chu Mu was constantly agitated, and he rarely had the chance to truly rest.

Right after lying down, Chu Mu entered into a deep sleep.

The vast white brilliance on the sea surface gradually emerged and a slightly warm radiance illuminated the black ocean, giving way to wisps of a gorgeous sunrising red sea.

A thin mist followed the sunlight's illumination before languidly dissipating. On Cyan Nightmare Island, the sound of a myriad of bird beast chirps welcomed the new day.

At daybreak, a boat appeared outside Cyan Nightmare Island. The flag hoisted by this boat was the Nightmare Palace's symbol.

The boat wasn't that large, and seemed like it could only hold about 20 people. All four sides of Cyan Nightmare Island were

precipices and there was no place to dock, so the boat could only temporarily stop at the reef.

“Hang on. If you fall, no one can save you. The Hunting Sharks swimming around the reef’s shore enjoy eating stupid things the most.” Cao Yi stood by the precipice and spoke to the ten young soul pet trainers.

Astonishingly, standing next to Cao Yi was an enormous cyan feathered bird that was over three meters tall!

Back then, Chu Mu had encountered a tall Cyan Bird in the inner island. Cyan Birds were wing type soul pets and possessed the ability to control the wind.

That particular Cyan Bird’s build was probably not even half a meter and it was only at stage four. The Cyan Bird in front of everyone had already surpassed that young and feeble form.

Cyan Birds with this build were probably above the fourth form. As for what stage in the fourth form, it was hard to determine.

Mo Xie was currently only at stage one of the second form. Compared to this Cyan Bird, the delta was enormous. However, Chu Mu believed that it wouldn’t be long before Mo Xie would reach this level.

The fourth form Cyan Bird was able to completely sustain the weight of person. This sort of flying soul pet could easily become

an extremely effective means of transportation. Moreover, the feeling of freedom from flying high into the sky was presumably something many longed for.

Therefore, when everyone saw Cao Yi's enormous Cyan Bird, they all revealed revered and jealous expressions.

With the Cyan Bird making round trips escorting them, Chu Mu once again experienced the feeling of soaring above the ocean while facing the ocean spray's whistle. This was also a feeling of freedom...

There were 15 people in total transported onto the boat. There were the ten new Nightmare Palace members who survived from the cruel competition, and the five foremen including Cao Yi.

Hoisting the sails, they set off. After surviving on a completely isolated island for half a year, they were finally able to leave this island. The ten surviving young soul pet trainers were all emotionally moved. Especially when thinking of the future, where they would become a Nightmare Palace member, which was equivalent to completely breaking away from a life of slavery. As long as they listened to Nightmare Palace's orders, they wouldn't have to worry for their lives again. Furthermore, they could use the Nightmare Palace's resources to slowly increase their strength!

Amidst the boundless blue ocean, the Nightmare Palace's boat slowly drifted along. The ocean water was not terribly calm and the boat unceasingly rocked about amidst the ocean waves. After experiencing two to three days of rocking, the soul pet trainers on the boat were already dizzy, and simply weren't in any mood to

enjoy the ocean's charm.

Chu Mu's condition could still be considered good. The boat rocking didn't have much of an influence on him and he stood on the deck, facing the wind, gazing attentively at the sea waves ahead being parted by the boat.

"Don't stand there" A foreman glanced at Chu Mu and icily spoke.

Chu Mu looked at this foreman and a bit of confusion appeared in his gaze.

"The ocean contains many savage soul pets. Weak people like you standing near the edge of the boat is equivalent to suspending a piece of meat on the railings. You will easily attract the starving organisms in the water. They can easily jump up and swallow you in one bite before landing on the other side of the boat and returning back into the ocean..." The foreman said.

"Oh." Chu Mu expressionlessly nodded his head and immediately retreated a few steps without changing his expression.

A smile appeared on the foreman's face and a bit of arrogance appeared in his gaze. One reason was because he was looking down on the novice, Chu Mu, the other reason was that he appeared to be very old, older than Chu Mu.

"Hualala!!"

Just at this moment, a violent splash abruptly arose in front of the boat. Suddenly, the entire boat became incomparably rocky!!

From within the ocean spray, lines of sharp hunting teeth were revealed, which was followed by an enormous head!!

The head was a shark's and the body an enormous python. Such a fierce organism suddenly appeared and proceeded to launch itself at the haughty foreman!

That foreman's hair was blown back by the Python Shark's fishy smelling breath. Just before his head was completely bitten off, this foreman barely managed to squat down and perform a roll, dodging this fatal attack. He sat with a pale face on the deck.

"Really....really dangerous... a ten meter Python Shark..." This foreman was perspiring cold sweat while gasping for air.

Chu Mu's cultivation was fairly similar to this foreman, but his perception was slightly stronger. Just before the Python Shark appeared, Chu Mu had noticed this spatial fluctuation.

"Senior Cao, we have a large problem. It seems like we've been targeted by a group of Python Sharks!!" Just at this moment, a foreman somewhat flusteredly yelled towards Cao Yi!

Chapter 43: Water Sprite

Python Sharks, Beast World - Water Type - Shark Species, a Species Rank of High Servant Rank, were different from Hunting Sharks. These Python Sharks dwelled in distant oceans, and typically traveled in large numbers in order to prey on larger organisms or fleets for assorted types of food.

The Python Sharks who attacked fleets were generally grown to a certain degree, so the Python Sharks that were attacking were mostly second form and above. No first form infant sharks appeared.

Soul pets of second form and above, and also High rank, were simply not something the young soul pet trainers could handle.

Cao Yi still needed to rely on the new members such as Chu Mu in order to gain benefits from Nightmare Palace, so naturally he couldn't let anything happen to them.

"Get your asses down into the ship cabins!" Cao Yi yelled at everyone!

"Hualala!!"

(TL: Water splashing sound)

Just as Cao Yi finished, a more than ten meter high wave suddenly rose up. Within the frothing wave, a massive ten meter long organism unbelievably lept out and flipped straight over the

boat's center, crazily splashing water all the crew members' faces crazily!

"Pa!"

A frightening water snake tail swept past. Immediately, the tree-like flag pole snapped, falling over and crushing the deck!

"Damned beast!" Cao Yi was clearly furious. When the more than ten meter long Python Shark flew past, he unexpectedly grabbed ahold of the Python Shark's tail, and fell into the water with it!

When they fell into the water, water splashed up onto the dock again, splashing everyone on the boat!

"Long long long long"

The ocean water rolled unceasingly. All the young soul pet trainers went to hide in the cabin, slightly shocked from watching Cao Yi jump into the ocean area.

"Gu lu lu~"

The ocean water was bubbling. Suddenly a huge rumbling sound could be heard and the water abruptly exploded, revealing an upwards sucking whirlpool, spinning up the waters……

Within the spinning whirlpool, a deep blue water-formed

creature slowly floated into sight. This creature had a dark blue liquid torso, a somewhat humanoid head composed of water, a snake-like water whip for arms, and a semi-void, fog like lower body.

“Water Sprite!!” When the soul pet trainers observing from the hidden cabins saw this extraordinary soul pet, they were amazed!

Water Sprite is of Elemental World - Water Type - Sprite Species - High Servant Rank.

Water Sprites could be said to be the most typical Elemental World organism. Many trainers who came into contact with water frequently ranked Water Sprites as their first choice for a water type soul pet!

The Water Sprite displayed in front of everyone was dark blue, clearly free of the initial transparent infant form. It was a Third Form soul pet. According to Chu Mu’s knowledge of Water Sprites, the Water Sprite Cao Yi summoned should be of Third Form Eighth Stage.

“Cao Yi’s soul pets are almost all above the Third Form, I won’t be his match in the short term……” Chu Mu thought.

Mo Xie had just reached Second Form, and her Species Rank was still lower than the soul pets of Cao Yi. Without mutating, even if Mo Xie reached the Fourth Form, she still wouldn’t be Cao Yi’s soul pets’ match.

But thinking about it, Cao Yi was already a middle-aged man well into his forties, and Chu Mu was only fifteen. The gap of twenty something years wasn't easy to close within a short time.

"Heng, reckless scum, how dare you destroy my ship!" Cao Yi stood beside his Water Sprite. Underneath his feet emerged a special water whirlpool that kept him from sinking into the water.

"Kill it!" Cao Yi commanded his Water Sprite.

The Water Sprite showed no emotion. It raised its whip-like water arm and violently slapped the ocean water. Immediately, a major subsidence appeared exactly where the Python Shark was swimming!

"You want to escape?" Cao Yi's eyes went cold. Suddenly chanting an incantation, a snow white glow appeared around him, quickly forming into a ray of light and shooting into the ocean!

The Python Shark realized the power of the Water Sprite so he wanted to swim into deeper waters, but the water under him suddenly started to freeze, quickly turning into a sturdy ice wall!

"Peng!!!" the Python Shark rammed into the incomparably sturdy ice wall, distinctly shaking……

Seeing Cao Yi cast another Soul Technique, Chu Mu's creased his brows.

The Soul Technique Cao Yi casted was obviously of the Ice Type. Most trainers had their soul pets as their main attacking method. Of course, if some trainer could master a technique even better than their soul pet, they could become very dangerous too.

For example, Chu Mu's Soul Technique - Chong Mei. Chong Mei is an ability where the trainer, through his/her mental bond with their soul pet, mimics a soul pet's ability and casts it with their own Soul Power.

Chu Mu used the Soul Technique Chong Mei to mimic Mo Xie's Charm. As a Spirit Soldier, the effects of Chu Mu's cast were a lot stronger than the Ninth Stage Mo Xie. Not only could it completely daze a soul pet, it even affected Tang Xian, who was standing quite far away.

Charm doesn't count as a very dangerous ability, especially since it was only the Moonlight Fox's basic ability. If Chu Mu owned a stronger pet with even more terrifying abilities, and Chu Mu casted them with his own soul power, then the resulting strength would be quite formidable. At least Chu Mu had the confidence that if he used Flame Awn through Chong Mei, it would be three or more times stronger than if Mo Xie casted it!

Soul pet trainers made their soul pets fight continuously, causing them to constantly grow and evolve. Soul Pet trainers were the same, constantly increasing their Remembrance soul and making themselves stronger.

Cao Yi's Water Sprite was clearly stronger than the Python Shark, which only had a massive body. The battle didn't last long

before a captivating red spread within the waters.

The Python Shark Cao Yi killed was clearly the leader. Once it was dead, the other lower Stage sharks naturally lacked courage to trouble the ship further.

“Boss Cao is sure powerful, your Water Sprite is just getting stronger and stronger, worthy of its Level Six Water Talent.” The foremen, seeing Cao Yi bring his powerful Water Sprite back onto the boat, immediately welcomed him with flattering praise!

A smile floated onto Cao Yi’s face. Though his Water Sprite was only at the High Servant Rank, its ability to control water wasn’t any worse than even the higher ranked soul pets. It was one of the soul pets Cao Yi was quite proud of.

Chapter 44: Cyan Nightmare Main Island

The damage on the sail did not affect the voyage. After another day of travelling, the people on the boat slowly discovered an island gradually appearing on the horizon.

As the boat drew closer, the island slowly grew bigger. Flat, lush green and full of life, it looked as if they were nearing the edge of a continent.

“This is the Cyan Nightmare Main Island. In the future, most of your time will be spent here. If you do well, you may get dispatched to even bigger islands or even the mainland.” Zeng Ze pointed at the island and explained to these new members who had just escaped the clutches of death.

Going from an isolated, slaving island to an island with a small town, what they gained the most was liberty.

This emotion was indeed hard to put into words. The ten young trainers’ eyes all started twinkling, regardless of how ruthless, cruel, or selfish they usually were. Now, they all somewhat looked forward to the new environment.

Cyan Nightmare Main Island had a very large harbor. When their boat docked on the bay, there were still many ships bustling with activity, carrying around all sorts of goods.

The distance between the islands were huge, so Chu Mu

temporarily didn't see anyone flying into the island from the far seas with their own soul pet.

The Beast World - Flying Type soul pets were plentiful. However, those with the carrying capacity, flying stamina, size and other aspects that satisfy a soul pet trainer's transportation needs weren't common. Cao Yi's Cyan Bird could only carry someone in flight briefly. If the duration was longer, the Cyan Bird's modestly strong wings also wouldn't be able to handle it.

"Look, follow those two, they'll arrange everything for you!" Once off the boat, Cao Yi shouted at everyone, and he went off in an unknown direction.

Zeng Ze and Gu Lei lead from ahead while the ten new members followed behind closely.

The two foremen didn't explain anything about the Cyan Nightmare Main Island, and just told everyone to follow them. Glancing around and leaving the group was not permitted.

After entering the dock, a great path could be seen. The first sector of the path was straight, its sides decorated by harbor-styled stores and houses, seemingly not much different from some towns on the mainland.

The straight path stretched approximately two kilometers before rising, providing passage to a mild hill.

In reality, looking down the path from the docks would enable you to see the patches of granite structures at the apex. One of the buildings, as imposing as a palace, had a special tower shaped roof that could be counted as this island's symbol.

"This mountain is Cyan Nightmare Palace. There will be many clearly marked places that you are not allowed to enter. This Cyan Nightmare Palace is one of them, because you don't have the qualifications to enter it yet……"

Cyan Nightmare Palace's structures were distinctly more exquisite than those from the town downhill, but Zeng Ze and Gu Lei didn't bother bringing Chu Mu and the others within the Nightmare Palace's vicinity, and instead brought them to a circle of normal houses.

"You are now the lowest of servants, without any title. Other than being able to live on this island, if you, who have no power, are disobedient of orders, you will be sentenced to death!"

"In a few days I will bring you into the Nightmare Palace to let you fight against members of other islands. Jobs and responsibilities will be assigned according to your strength."

"With a job, you will receive corresponding resources. What's worth mentioning is, according to your Job Battle ranking, you'll receive certain rewards. Naturally, the better your ranking, the better your rewards. En…… I remember the reward some time ago for the top few was a high potential Warrior Rank soul pet!"

If Zeng Ze's previous words left everyone despondent, the possibility of getting a Warrior Rank soul pet brightened everyone's eyes again!

The lowest Species Rank was Servant Rank, which was split to Low, Medium, High.

Warrior rank was clearly beyond High Servant Rank. Soul Pets with a Warrior Rank, even in their infant Phase, were very expensive because, after proper training, at a certain Stage, both Medium and High Servant ranks wouldn't be their match at all.

"If only some of you could get a higher rank, and get a decent job……" Zeng Ze said with a strange tone.

"Now you live here. It won't be much different from your previous wooden room. These days, you won't be restricted much. You can walk around town, but what I need to tell you is that your status is of the lowest servant. Don't go to places you shouldn't go to and salute to everyone you need to!"

After Zeng Ze finished speaking, he gave everyone one gold to buy necessities in the town.

After receiving the gold, Chu Mu walked back into his own room. Unlike the previous mingled rooming, this time Chu Mu got his own room, and he was separated from Ting Yu by a wooden wall.

Chu Mu also liked this personal space. After all, he had many

secrets that he didn't want others to know.

Chu Mu didn't stay in his room for long. Right now he really wanted to know what resources were on this island that could quickly increase his strength.

First he naturally went towards the town's market place. Chu Mu changed his set of clothes and went towards the previous main pathway.

"Chu Mu." Just as he left, Feng Gu approached him from in front. Feng Gu amiably greeted Chu Mu.

Chu Mu just nodded. Ever since Cao Yi exposed that Chu Mu was the murderer, everyone treated him very nicely, including Feng Gu.

From the previous disregard and underestimation to the current deliberate friendliness, the reason was very evident.

The shops on the main street were generally focused on soul pets and their trainers. Chu Mu walked through roughly until he saw a medicinal shop, which he walked into.

The shop had many special medicinal ingredients on display. These ingredients were all kept in medicinal tubes and other containers to retain their potency.

"What do you need?" The shop assistant walked out from within

the shop, and sized up Chu Mu, and said calmly.

“Do you have any Heavenly Blue Grass?” Chu Mu asked.

Chu Mu obtained a Gyokuro Pungen before. Once he obtained some Heavenly Blue Grass, he could concoct the Third Rank medicine, Heavenly Blue Gyokuro Pungen.

This medicine could directly increase Mo Xie’s stage by around two. Right now, Chu Mu didn’t care about anything else, and put all his attention on how to raise his and his soul pet’s strength-how to become stronger!

“One gold per plant” The assistant replied.

Chapter 45: Not Enough Funds, Hunting Time

One gold per plant. Chu Mu immediately got a headache. He only obtained one gold in total from the foreman, and this gold was supposed to be used to buy living necessities.

The Gyokuro Pungen and Heavenly Blue Grass's mixture ratio was 3:2. Therefore, making the Heavenly Blue Gyokuro Pungen required at least two Heavenly Blue Grass, which mean Chu Mu had to pay two gold. Chu Mu had a total of one gold on him currently……

"You're a peon, aren't you?" The shop assistant saw Chu Mu's awkward expression and smiled strangely.

Chu Mu nodded, glancing at the assistant.

"Every year at around this time there's a big batch of people who enter the island. Before they receive a job, they're almost all penniless. In reality, even with a job, your salary isn't much and you need to rely on yourself to earn more." The assistant, looking like he knew a lot, said to Chu Mu.

"Is there anywhere that trades in Soul Cores, Soul Crystals, or other soul pet materials?" Chu Mu asked.

"Exit the door and turn right. In a hundred meters, you'll see an

old man with strange looks." The assistant replied.

Chu Mu nodded. He knew he didn't have the economy to buy the two Heavenly Blue Grass, so he could only rely on selling other items in order to earn two gold.

Walking out of the shop, he quickly found the strange old man mentioned by the assistant.

The strange old man's hair was pure white. He was just sitting by himself in the little shop. The room was very spacey, devoid of anything.

"Do you buy soul cores here?" Chu Mu walked in and asked, while staring at the old man.

"Yeah, how many do you have?" The old trader asked Chu Mu with a half-dead and dispirited tone.

A soul pet's food is very key. Many times soul pet trainers would all have to go to marketplaces to buy soul cores for their soul pets' food. This type of thing was very circulated on the market, almost similar to cash.

"No, I don't have any. I just wanted to ask where you can hunt for some, as well as how much you are willing to pay for one." Chu Mu said.

The soul cores Chu Mu had were virtually worthless. Relying on

them to get a gold was impossible.

And, in order to let Mo Xie develop towards a stronger direction, Chu Mu had to deeply consider the problem of feeding. He couldn't simply feed Mo Xie purely Beast Type soul cores like before. Even feeding Mo Xie with two Beast Type soul cores and one Fire Type soul core seemed inadequate, so he now needed to try his best to buy duo type soul cores for Mo Xie's food.

Since duo type soul cores' prices were definitely higher, Chu Mu had to think about his income so he could sustain his future food purchases. Therefore, becoming a hunter to earn some money was necessary.

"For single type soul cores, other than pure Elemental Types and Soul Types, level one soul cores will be bought with bronze, level two soul cores will be bought with silver, and level three will be bought with gold……" The old trader said.

Ten bronze was one silver, and ten silver was one gold.

This old trader's explanation of "bought with bronze" meant that for a single Type level one soul cores, the price ranged from one bronze to ten bronze.

First Stage soul pets' soul cores were all level one, meaning that Chu Mu's previous Beast Type soul cores were only worth a pitiful amount of bronze……

“Which places are fit for hunting soul pets?” Chu Mu asked.

“Exit the town from the south, you’ll find some everywhere. The further inland you walk, the stronger the soul pets you meet will be.” The old seller said listlessly, as if whether Chu Mu traded with him or not, he would still look spiritless.

Chu Mu nodded and didn’t go to any other place for idle shopping, instead going straight to the south of the city like the old trader said, hoping to quickly gain enough money to feed the Second Phase Mo Xie, and earn enough for the two Heavenly Blue Grass as well, to let Mo Xie quickly increase her power.

When walking out of the south gate, Chu Mu saw a few trainers riding strong-legged soul pets into the city. The feeling of being able to ride a soul pet and roam freely made Chu Mu have a few thoughts for himself……

After leaving the city, he saw a somewhat flat tropical meadow. Past the 100 meters of empty space was the island’s jungle.

“Come out, Mo Xie.” Chu Mu knew that when he entered the jungle zone, he might encounter some actively aggressive beings, so he must stay vigilant.

Since her Second Phase evolution, Mo Xie hadn’t truly battled yet, so Chu Mu could also gauge Mo Xie’s current fighting strength through battle.

“Bug Type Four Bladed Great Mantis, about Eighth Stage- shouldn’t be a problem to deal with.” Chu Mu quickly found his first prey within the jungle.

The battle thirsty Mo Xie, after entering Second Phase, had also become restless. Seeing the Mantis, without Chu Mu even purposefully commanding her, she strided forward swiftly and appeared in front of the Four Bladed Great Mantis!!

The Mantis only realized that danger was near when Mo Xie was already within five meters of it. Turning around sluggishly, it was too late, for Mo Xie has already pounced at it, her sharp claws fiercely swiping past!

“Shua!!”

The Mantis had a hard flesh armor, but this armor was only level one, so how could it withstand Mo Xie’s level two claws? A long wound immediately appeared on the Mantis’ body, oozing out a green liquid.

“Er!!” The Mantis became furious, its four arms became like four incomparably sharp scythes, directly casting Blade Slash towards Mo Xie!

Four hits swept down, whirling leaves everywhere and even cutting down a massive tree, but this Blade Slash didn’t even touch Mo Xie’s fur!

The Mantis's Blade Slash was completely not inferior to that of a Hunting Wolf's Violent Wolf's Demonic Strike. At the time, Mo Xie needed to use Moon Shadow to dodge that spell, but what Mo Xie needed now was merely a few simple movements and jumps to avoid it!

The Eighth Stage Mantis was no match for Mo Xie.

Mo Xie didn't even need to waste any strength in using an ability and effortlessly killed the Four Bladed Great Mantis.

"This Four Bladed Great Mantis' soul core is probably worth only five bronze. Seems like earning at least three gold in a short time will be quite difficult." Chu Mu extracted the Mantis' soul crystal and threw it into his bag.

"Huahua~" Just as he straightened up, Chu Mu immediately heard the leaves shaking. Looking for the source of the sound, Chu Mu locked his Soul Remembrance onto an organism on the treetop.

The jungle leaves are very dense, so through the leaves, Chu Mu could only see some greyish white fur.

"Wuwuwu" Mo Xie sensed the aura of another soul pet and immediately fox called towards the grey white furred creature to demonstrate her dominance!

"Huhu!!"

A slightly irritated sound came from that direction, as if provoked. The grey haired creature suddenly jumped down from the leaves, its big feet stepping on the ground, sending leaves and branches radially away from him!

“Fur Monster, High Servant Rank. From its appearance it seems to be under Second Phase Third Stage……”

“Mo Xie, this is perfect for your first real enemy post evolution!” The edge of Chu Mu’s mouth rose and his eyes gazed at the bad-tempered soul pet.

Chapter 46: Second Phase Soul Pet Battle

After being provoked by Mo Xie, the Fur Monster let out a raspy roar, waved its muscular arms around, and leapt straight towards Mo Xie!

“Use Flame Awn, attack its legs!”

Mo Xie first leaped backwards, creating distance between her and the Second Phase Second Stage Fur Monster. After landing, Mo Xie’s silver eyes immediately flashed with a bewitching red light.

A smear of captivating red quickly flashed past, shooting towards the Fur Monster’s legs. The Fur Monster had a pair of strong legs, so as the Flame Awn swept past, the monster jumped upwards, dodging the Flame Awn. Jumping five meters away, his arm muscles suddenly swelled up!

Barbaric Strength!

Numerous attack type soul pets had the ability to concentrate power into a certain body part in order to exponentially increase its attack power!

“Beng!”

The Fur Monster’s swelled arms violently smashed towards Mo Xie, who skillfully casted Moon shadow to dodge it, creating three

fuzzy shadows around her.

“Complete stage Moon Shadow, very good!” When Chu Mu discovered Mo Xie’s Moon Shadow created three shadows, the edge of his mouth crept up as well.

The Fur Monster’s power was very strong. If not for the Moon Shadow being cast at an opportune time, Mo Xie would’ve had to escape to outside of five meters to avoid damage. The Moon Shadow’s evasion was almost right next the Fur Monster, so once the Fur Monster finished the hit, Mo Xie would be able to immediately retaliate!

“Attack its legs directly!” Chu Mu immediately ordered and seized ahold of this opportunity when the Fur Monster slightly took a breather.

Without a dash to back it up, Mo Xie’s Ripping Claw’s power couldn’t fully be released, so Chu Mu simply let Mo Xie claw normally.

“Shua!!”

Mo Xie’s attacks were swift and efficient, her Second Rank sharp claws easily ripping through the Fur Monster’s leg muscles, tearing open a deep bloody gouge!

“Huhu!!” The Fur Monster instantly let out a pained roar, smashing his muscled arms straight towards Mo Xie’s body.

At such a close distance, it was hard even for Mo Xie to dodge. Her flank immediately suffered a heavy blow from the Fur Monster, causing her to fly a few meters away before rolling to a stop.

Seeing Mo Xie hurt, Chu Mu immediately started mustering his soul power to cast Chong Mei. However, Mo Xie also immediately stood up, while “Wu”ing towards Chu Mu, pridefully telling Chu Mu that she was capable of taking on this thug!

Chu Mu stopped his Soul Technique mid cast and nodded towards Mo Xie, “Continue attacking its legs!”

Mo Xie backed off a distance and when the Fur Monster approached, she suddenly accelerated, meeting the charging Fur Monster head on!

Mo Xie’s Dark Assault was still Late Stage, but her own speed had increased, making this Dark Assault’s speed even faster!

Springing upwards, a silver low arch gorgeously flit across the bush

“Shua!!”

The blood red razor was matchlessly eye-catching. The short shrubs were almost instantly sheared, as if a bloody sword had cut through them!

“Blood Splitting Claw!” Seeing this, Chu Mu showed an expression of amazement!

Blood Splitting Claw!

An ability even stronger than Ripping Claw! As the claw swept past, unless one had a very strong defensive skin layer, they would certainly suffer a bloody wound!

Chu Mu didn’t think that after Mo Xie transformed into Second Phase, she would grasp an advanced ability like Blood Splitting Claw that only Beast Type soul pets with higher species ranks and stages could own!

Blood started oozing out as the Fur Monster bent over. The wound on its leg previously was even scarier than before, as even its bones could be seen!

With its legs hurt, the Fur Monster’s fighting power was almost zero, making even escape hard to accomplish. Following, Chu Mu basically didn’t even need to command Mo Xie. Mo Xie only needed to swipe at the Fur Monster’s vitals to end the Fur Monster’s life!

“Seems like the soul crystal’s effects are quite profound. Not only did you gain the power to control flames, but you also learned a new Battle Technique - Blood Splitting Claw. Very well, very well, this way, as long as it's not a Warrior Rank soul pet, anything under Second Phase, Third Rank shouldn’t be your match!” Chu

Mu rubbed Mo Xie's soft fur and said.

"Wuwuwu~~" Mo Xie loved Chu Mu's petting, and she closed her beautiful eyes and let out a pleasant murmur.

"This Fur Monster's Beast Type soul core is probably worth two silvers……" Chu Mu retrieved the Fur Monster's soul core and started calculating his profit.

Afterwards, Chu Mu brought Mo Xie to walk around in the nearby forest to look specifically for soul pets above the First Phase Eighth Stage and below the Second Phase Third Phase to hunt.

Of course, Mo Xie's stamina wasn't infinite. After killing six First Phase soul pets and three Second Phase soul pets, Mo Xie was quite tired, possibly needing to rest for a day before being able to recover fully.

Chu Mu didn't linger within the forest, and immediately brought Mo Xie back into his soul pet space and returned to the city.

"Rank Two Beast Type soul core, two silver, Rank Two Wood Type soul core, 1.5 silver, Rank Two Bug Type soul core, three silver, the other six I'll just count as 3.5 silvers. Just enough to get one gold……" The old trader was still listless as usual.

Chu Mu nodded and gave his soul cores to the old fellow, finally receiving another gold.

The old trader glanced at Chu Mu, and seeing that Chu Mu was so happy for a gold coin, he let out a rare expression of strangeness and said, “Just saying, I rarely do such small deals. Next time come with ten gold's worth of soul cores before you come to me……”

Chu Mu looked at the old man and said, “In such a short time even I couldn’t gather that many soul cores, and I just arrived at this island, so I have very little knowledge of this place……”

The old trader raised an eyebrow and asked, “You’re a new peon?”

Chu Mu nodded.

Those living on the island weren’t all members of the Nightmare Palace. It was only the controller of the island that was from the Nightmare Palace.

Receiving Chu Mu’s definitive answer, the old trader revealed a slightly surprised expression, and looked over Chu Mu again before speaking, “The soul cores you sold to me today were all hunted today?”

Chu Mu nodded, “Any issues?”

“There are no problems. It’s just that I didn’t think that a Cyan Nightmare Palace peon could collect this many soul cores within such a short amount of time. Looks like you must be one of the best of those who arrived.” the old trader said.

“Hehe, I love those with potential, as doing business with people with potential is like an investment. Any soul cores you get in the future you can still sell to me, I’ll give you a higher price for it. Also, other than the soul core market, I delve in most other realms too, so if you have any needs, you can come here to ask me first. I may even be able to give you a good price.” The trader kept saying.

“Oh? Do you have Heavenly Blue Grass?” Chu Mu immediately asked.

“Yes. Heavenly Blue Grass is eight silver a plant.” The trader replied.

Chapter 47: Heavenly Blue Gyokuro Pungen

Chu Mu decisively retrieved one gold coin and six silver coins, and gave them to the old trader while saying: “I’ll take it immediately.”

The old trader nodded his head and walked to the back of the completely vacant store. A successive series of disorderly sounds arose, like he was rummaging through a pile of various goods.

A moment later, the old man’s beard had a bit more dust on it as he walked out. He passed over two extremely poor quality bottles of Heavenly Grass.

Chu Mu’s gaze was a bit strange as he looked at the two Heavenly Grass.

The old trader looked at Chu Mu and seemed to sense something. He laughed and said, “Don’t worry, the quality of these Heavenly Grass is much better than the Medicine Shop’s. The reason why I sold it to you for such a cheap price was because I am investing in you. The initial period for peons is always extremely challenging. Cyan Nightmare Palace will definitely not supply you with very many resources so purchasing goods in the marketplace is a necessity.

“Currently, the exchange between us is negligible to me, so much so that these two Heavenly Grass are like trash to me. Just giving them to you would also be fine, but I’m a merchant…”

“In the future your strength will only grow stronger. When you obtain any nice items, you can sell any of them to me. As for anything you need, even if I don’t have it, I can always use different ways to obtain it. Regarding the price, it’s naturally will not be a problem.

Chu Mu looked a few more times at the old man and suddenly found that this lifeless old man truly had the brains for business. He unexpectedly understood what it meant to fasten himself to someone new who had a good chance of becoming a large client in the future.

It was actually as the old man said. Right now Chu Mu would have to work very hard for these few gold coins, but before long they wouldn’t mean much to him. Instead, traded goods would be even more valuable.

“How about it?” The old man said.

“Ok.” Chu Mu nodded his head and proceeded to say: “Do you have Soul Techniques here?”

“Yes, my Soul Disciple Soul Techniques number many and I have a few Soul Soldier Soul Techniques, but their prices are definitely above what you can bear.” The old trader said.

“Which ones are they?” Chu Mu said.

“Soul Disciple Soul Techniques: Natural Affability, Remembrance Search, Demonic Beast Language… these are all two gold coins.”

“Blood-sucking Technique, Heart of Water, Transforming Skin into Rock, Conceal, Rapid Freeze… five gold coins.”

“Soul Soldier Techniques: Adhering Flame, Ice Ray Shield… fifty gold coins.” The old trader said.

After listening to the prices, Chu Mu’s eyebrows creased. It was clear that for even the cheapest two gold coin Soul Techniques that weren’t very useful, Chu Mu still didn’t have enough money to buy them.

The Soul Techniques introduced by the old trader still had use though. The one that Chu Mu was most interested in was the Soul Soldier technique-Adhering Flame.

Adhering Flame was a strong fire energy conjured through soul power by soul pet trainers that adhered to soul pet bodies. This soul pet’s control over the fire attribute would obtain a definite increase, and the might of its flame would become much stronger. By possessing this Soul Technique and using it on Mo Xie, she would definitely be able to challenge a peon level soul pet that was three levels above her.

After remembering the old trader’s position, Chu Mu wasn’t too reluctant to leave those few Soul Techniques that interested him and found another medicine store on the street.

First rank medicines had energy that could be extracted through Chu Mu's soul power. However, the configuration for second grade medicines was extremely complicated. Chu Mu wasn't a pharmacist and even if he knew the recipe, there was still a chance of failing due to a lack of skill. From a safer perspective, Chu Mu would naturally have to find a pharmacist to make the medicine for him.

"Five silver coins..." The young pharmacist bluntly gave Chu Mu a price.

"..." Chu Mu only had four silver coins on hand, but he was supplying the medicine ingredients. Furthermore, making a Heavenly Blue Gyokuro Pungen would only took a few minutes for a normal pharmacist. Five silver coins for a few minutes of brewing made more money than hunting soul pets!

"I only have four silver coins..." Chu Mu was embarrassed due to his lack of money and suddenly found that there were barriers for everything if one didn't have money.

"Four is fine, just give me the medicine ingredients." The young pharmacist let out an expression of patience and after receiving the medicine ingredients, walked over to the medicine table. Skillfully, he took the two different medicine ingredients and chopped them. He then extracted their liquid, purified them, blended...

Five minutes later, the young pharmacist handed over the bottle of blue medicine and insipidly said: "Immediately give it to a

second phase soul pet to drink and after convalescing for one day to half a day, it will be fine."

The young pharmacist finished speaking and turned around, ignoring Chu Mu.

Chu Mu didn't mind this pharmacist's arrogant indifference. In reality, this sort of occupation was largely composed of bigots.

From the very beginning, Chu Mu had spent time researching pharmacy. Later, he felt that investing time in this area was inferior to putting it all in increasing his strength. He believed that after his strength was enough, he would have enough resources to make those pharmacists make any medicines he wanted for free.

After receiving the Heavenly Blue Gyokuro Pungen. Chu Mu returned to his room, which was one of the many surrounding Nightmare Palace.

"Chu Mu, why didn't I see you at all today?" Ting Yu's voice came from an adjacent room.

"I walked around everywhere." Chu Mu replied.

"Today other Cyan Nightmare Island people came to challenge you. Those fellows were truly loathsome." Ting Yu said.

"Oh, they were probably here to probe." Chu Mu replied.

In a few days there would be peon fights. The higher one's rank was, the higher their position would be, and the rewards would be more generous. In order to obtain more resources and power, any peon with brains would definitely try and understand the strength of others on the island.

"Mhm, but they are truly very strong. I heard that they also harbored second phase soul pets. Moreover, there are some people who have three soul pets. No wonder the foreman Zeng Ze gave a sigh, it seems like he knew that we didn't have the chance of obtaining a rank..." Ting Yu said.

Mo Xie entering the second phase was something others didn't know. Ting Yu also believed that Mo Xie was still at stage nine. There existed an enormous gap between the first phase, even if one was at stage nine, and the second phase, thus causing Ting Yu to feel dispirited.

Chu Mu only let out a casual grunt in reply and didn't talk any longer with Ting Yu. Instead, he let the tired Mo Xie drink the Heavenly Blue Gyokuro Pungen.

After Mo Xie's nose smelled the Heavenly Blue Gyokuro Pungen, she opened her mouth and drank it all in one gulp.

Not long after drinking it, Mo Xie's eyes half-closed as she entered an extremely tired state. Chu Mu didn't even have enough time to call her back to her soul pet space before Mo Xie lay down on Chu Mu's bed and slept.

“Have a good sleep. Once you awaken you should be able to progress to second phase stage three.” Chu Mu stroked Mo Xie’s supple fur as he spoke.

“Shashasha”

When the small cyan bug saw Mo Xie, it immediately lept from the headboard onto Mo Xie’s body. The small cyan bug had an extreme fondness for the grandeur fur on Mo Xie’s neck. When Mo Xie appeared, the small cyan bug was like a small parasite that crawled on top of her head and fell into a deep sleep.

However, just as the small cyan bug lept into the air, Chu Mu returned Mo Xie to her soul pet space. The small cyan bug’s plan failed as it fell onto Chu Mu’s bed, its eyes rolling around in a dizzy state.

“Little fellow, why don’t you sleep as well.” Chu Mu put the small cyan bug behind the headboard while he leaned against the bedside and began using his soul power to feed the White Nightmare.

Chapter 48: Killing A Stage Two Gila Monster

After feeding the White Nightmare, Chu Mu didn't sleep at all during the night. Instead he continued to silently cultivate and recover in order to speed up his soul power's restoration.

It wasn't until the advent of dawn that Chu Mu lay down on his bed and took a short nap. However, even before the sky had completely lit up, Chu Mu had already sat up. After eating his shoddy breakfast, he left early and headed towards the jungle from yesterday.

Chu Mu currently needed to earn money for Mo Xie's food. Additionally, Chu Mu was relatively interested in the old trader's Soul Disciple Soul Technique.

Rapid Freeze was an ice type Soul Technique. According to Chu Mu's estimates, the Rapid Freeze Technique only consumed one tenth of Chu Mu's soul power. Therefore, this sort of Soul Technique was something that Chu Mu could still use.

The Rapid Freeze Technique required 5 gold coins, while 10 days of food to feed Mo Xie's dual attributed soul core needed one gold coin. In other words, Chu Mu had to earn 6 gold coins.

Chu Mu didn't rush into the jungle; after all, Mo Xie hadn't fully awaken yet.

After randomly walking around the town's surroundings, when the sun had approximately fully risen, the sleeping Mo Xie in the soul pet space finally slowly opened her eyes.

Chu Mu somewhat urgently summoned Mo Xie in front of him in order to see what changes the Heavenly Blue Gyokuro Pungen brought her after taking it.

While sleeping, Mo Xie had grown two stages; thus, Mo Xie had advanced to the second phase stage three!

"Wuwu." Mo Xie faced the multi-colored sunlight as she stood in front of Chu Mu, causing her silver fur to display a gorgeous and captivating red. The fur on her neck was graceful, making her appear even more noble and grand.

"You have transformed into the second stage, Flexible Fur. Very good, very good!" Chu Mu caressed Mo Xie's fur as a smile appeared on his face.

The second stage of defensive fur, Flexible Fur, would maintain a supple state when not fighting or when rapidly running, which would help to decrease air resistance and sudden air fluctuations. While defending, the Flexible Fur would turn incomparably tough to mitigate sure injuries!

The two areas of Mo Xie's body she could fight with were her fur and claws. Since Chu Mu placed particular emphasis on Mo Xie's attacks, it wasn't until she reached the second phase stage three that her defensive fur was upgraded to the initial second stage.

“The claws have also entered the second stage’s Fierce Claw’s middle stage. By the looks of things it will soon enter the late stage!” Chu Mu examined Mo Xie’s claws before nodding his head in satisfaction.

Aside from mastering battle techniques, a soul pet’s aptitude could also be discerned through the body parts that it used to fight. If it was simply a normal Moonlight Fox, the growth speed of its fur and claws would be extremely slow. Perhaps even if it was at the third phase, its claws would still be at the first stage’s Young Claws.

Mo Xie, as a Moonlight Fox who possessed a mutated bloodline, had a much higher innate talent than that of a normal Moonlight Fox. Coupled with Chu Mu’s meticulous nurturing, the growth and transformation of her body parts wasn’t slow at all.

“It shouldn’t be too strenuous to deal with those under the second phase fourth stage now. Let’s go and continue to fight!” Chu Mu was currently full of confidence.

Mo Xie looked very gentle on the outside, but she was haughty and warlike on the inside. She was like Chu Mu who loved ceaselessly fighting, ceaselessly practicing, and ceaselessly growing in strength.

Two days later.

At the south side of the jungle.

“Shua!!”

A captivating, red-colored awn of a blade magnificently streaked across the green jungle. In response, two trees standing abreast snapped apart!

“Luo!!” After a few seconds, a painful howl immediately reverberated around the jungle. The ear-piercing noise gave people a feeling of one’s blood running cold.

“Mo Xie, retreat, maintain a distance!”

The Blood Rending Claw swipe caused Mo Xie to leave a deep bloody scar on the Glia Monster’s body. Subsequently, she immediately lept far away.

Just as Mo Xie lept away, a striking flame abruptly flew out of the Gila Monster’s mouth. The streak of fire spread across the air causing the temperature of the slightly clammy jungle to instantly increase.

“Charm!”

Mo Xie maintained a distance of 15 meters with the Gila monster. A bewitching silver glint flashed through Mo Xie’s eyes, and a silver eye beam rapidly shot into the Gila Monster’s thoroughly red eyes.

The Gila Monster was in a state of indignant anger. However, it was a soul pet with weak intelligence. After being struck by Mo Xie's charm, its two red eyes immediately began to revolve around, turning a yellow color. Finally, it slowly turned lifeless...

"You can dispose of it now!"

Seeing the Gila Monster lose its consciousness, Chu Mu immediately ordered Mo Xie to attack.

Half of Mo Xie's body crouched down and in the next second, she suddenly launched into the air, passing through that streak of raging flames!

Dark Assault! Charm's duration was extremely short and Mo Xie had to perform Dark Assault immediately in order to close the distance of 15 meters before Charm expired.

Blood Rending Claw!!

The blood red terrifying battle technique was performed once more. Blood Rending Claws ripped apart the wound on the Gila Monster's neck again. The late second stage of defensive skin was already completely lacerated.

A blood clot was exposed, and a red liquid spilled out dying the ground filled with overgrown weeds in red.

Mo Xie slowly approached the Gila Monster's corpse. After

ensuring that the Gila Monster was already completely dead, she extended her claws and ripped apart its thick skin. She retrieved the Gila Monster's dual attribute soul crystal and proceeded to eat it as the meal for the day.

"Thank goodness for Blood Rending Claw, otherwise it would be extremely difficult for middle second stage claws to rip apart that soul pet's late second stage defensive skin." Chu Mu said.

A second phase stage three Gila Monster with identical strength was something that Chu Mu had originally encountered on Cyan Nightmare Island. At that time, the Gila Monster's terrifying aura rendered Chu Mu unable to even move the smallest bit.

Three months later, Chu Mu and Mo Xie had killed a monster that surpassed the ninth stage and was at the second stage. This feeling of steady growth couldn't help but put a smile on Chu Mu's face.

"We've stayed here for two days, it's time for us to return. We also have to treat the wounds on your body." said Chu Mu.

"Wuwuw~~" Mo Xie nodded her head.

After leaving the jungle, Chu Mu put Mo Xie back in the soul pet space in order to let Mo Xie's battle strength recover quickly.

"30 first grade Soul Cores, two gold coins. 10 second grade Soul Cores, four gold coins. Two dual attribute second grade Soul Cores,

one gold coin. This brings you to a total of seven gold coins."

"You are the first peon I've seen in the past many years that is able to earn seven gold coins from me using only two days." The old trader looked at Chu Mu and spoke.

The old trader was already no longer spiritless like before. Although Chu Mu was still conducting a small transaction, it caused the old trader to be more certain of Chu Mu's potential.

"Soul Technique-Rapid Freeze, sell it to me." Chu Mu said.

"No problem." The old trader nodded his head and climbed into the miscellaneous pile at the back. He began searching for the Soul Technique book.

Soul Technique-Chong Mei would consume an excessive amount of Chu Mu's soul power. Unless it was a crucial moment, Chu Mu wouldn't use it.

As for Soul Technique - Rapid Freeze, its consumption was a bit smaller. Chu Mu was unlikely to only direct Mo Xie's fights; moreover, after possessing the Rapid Freeze Soul Technique, even if it was a second phase fifth stage soul pet, they could deal with it!

Chapter 49: Ten Man Free For All Battle

The old trader was quite efficient. When Chu Mu paid him five gold coins, he quickly retrieved a Soul Technique Book out from the heap of junk.

The Soul Technique Book for Spirit Disciples had a thin, scroll-like quality, and all Soul Technique Books could be classified as a consumable good. Once a trainer's soul remembrance was inputted into the book, the book's logged Technique would then be imprinted into the soul pet trainer's memory, and the book would become useless.

Unlocking Soul Technique Books also required soul power, so Chu Mu had to wait until after he fed his White Nightmare before opening the book.

Following this, Chu Mu also bought some Duo Type Soul Cores of the Beast Type and Fire Type from the old trader in order to guarantee food for Mo Xie's training in the next ten days.

Finally, with his last gold, he bought two bottles of Second Rank low power healing medicine from the pharmacist for healing Mo Xie.

After finishing all this, Chu Mu returned to his living quarters.

When he returned, it was already night. Immediately after Chu Mu stepped into the courtyard, the stench of blood hit him. He saw the other soul pet trainers huddled around in the courtyard,

indignantly talking about something.

Ting Yu was one of them as well, so when she saw Chu Mu, she immediately walked up to him.

“What’s up?” Chu Mu asked.

“Yesterday a few foremen came and distributed a few decent quality soul cores to us in preparation for the competition the day after tomorrow. Yet, today, many people from other islands came to mingle with us, trading soul cores based on different types. There was one group of people who were very impudent. As soon as we declined to trade, they started fighting……” Ting Yu said anxiously.

Chu Mu glanced at everyone and discovered that, other than two girls, everyone had a few obvious wounds. Even the strongest, Feng Gu, was ragged and filthy with blood.

The nine who survived Cyan Nightmare Island all had very keen self protection awareness. If they were wounded, then their soul pets were definitely defeated.

“Chu Mu, where have you been these days, don’t tell me you don’t know that the competition will be held in the form of teams? Now that we’ve been bullied like this, with our soul pets hurt, how are we going to compete with people from the other islands!” With wounds all over his face, Cheng Zhuo said somewhat angrily.

The opposing side also had ten people, all of which were very strong. But on their side, Chu Mu operated alone, rendering him unavailable for days on end. With a difference in both power and numbers, they were destined to fail.

“Team Mode?” Chu Mu furrowed his brows.

Ting Yu saw Chu Mu’s puzzlement and immediately explained, “The battle is fought with each island as a team, and people with prominent performances in the team battles are picked out and ranked.”

“Is it tag team or Ten v.s. Ten?” Chu Mu asked again.

“Strictly speaking, it’s ten soul pets V.S. ten soul pets. Trainers do not participate.” Feng Gu answered with relative calmness.

Since they reached Cyan Nightmare Island, Feng Gu was named the leader of the ten people. This team battle would also be led and commanded by him. Because Chu Mu couldn’t be seen these days, Feng Gu could only gather the other nine people to practice synergizing their soul pets.

“With a team victory, every one of us will be able to go into the Soul Technique Book Pavilion to select a Soul Technique. Personal ability will be decided by the foremen and both rewards and jobs will then be distributed accordingly.” Ting Yu added.

Chu Mu nodded and, without caring about anyone’s grumbling,

went straight back to his room to learn his new Soul Technique - Rapid Freeze.

“This guy is too self-centered, completely not putting us in his eyes!” Cheng Zhuo said angrily when he saw Chu Mu leave.

“Whatever, let him be. You best not irritate him. Don’t forget that five people were killed by him in one night.” Li Zhi said.

Cheng Zhuo grinded his teeth, but didn’t really dare to do anything to Chu Mu.

Though the ten were led by Feng Gu, everyone knew that the strongest was really the always missing Chu Mu.

Returning to his living space, Chu Mu fed 80% of his soul power to his White Nightmare and used the rest to activate the Soul Technique Book - Rapid Freeze.

Chu Mu was now a Third Remembrance Spirit Soldier, so learning the abilities of a Soul Disciple wasn’t too hard. Throughout the entire night, Chu Mu remained awake, spending all his efforts on repeatedly practicing Rapid Freeze.

Deep into the night, Ting Yu tossed and turned, struggling to fall asleep. For some unknown reason, she always felt like her room’s temperature had fallen a lot. No matter how much she wrapped herself in blankets, there would still be coldness seeping into her body.

What caused the neighboring Ting Yu to be sleepless was naturally Chu Mu's masterpiece. After an entire night of practicing, Chu Mu finally grasped the incantation of Rapid Freeze and could properly cast this spell.

Of course, though he grasped it, Chu Mu could probably only succeed once every two tries, and if his casting failed, his soul power would still be depleted by around 10%. To master the ability and cast it 100% of the time, he still needed a period of consistent practicing and daily usage.

Mo Xie needed a day of rest to completely recover her fighting strength, so Chu Mu spent the second day practicing the incantation some more, as well as becoming more proficient in chanting the convoluted charm. This way, he won't encounter any problems when casting the spell.

"Chu Mu, are you in there?" The voice of a downcast teen sounded from outside the door.

"En, what?" Chu Mu asked. Chu Mu recognized the sound as Feng Gu's.

"Every Cyan Nightmare Island owner will compare their respective teams. If we suffer defeat in this team battle, Cao Yi will unleash his wrath on us, so even if you plan on forfeiting the Soul Technique selection, you should still participate in the fight." Feng Gu said.

“I will attend.” Chu Mu said. A simple victory was enough to guarantee a chance to choose a Soul Technique, and the Soul Technique Books treasured in the Soul Technique Book Pavilion was definitely more plentiful than the selection of the old trader. Chu Mu wouldn’t give this opportunity away for nothing.

“That’s good. Then, do you want to join our tactic discussions?” Feng Gu asked.

“You guys can talk, I have to feed my Nightmare.” Chu Mu carelessly picked an excuse.

“En, I hope that you will try your best tomorrow. Our opponents have two Second Form First Stage soul pets, so they’re really strong. If you can distract and control one, we still have hope for victory.” Feng Gu added.

Chu Mu simply agreed listlessly and continued practicing his incantation, unconcerned about the other people in the courtyard practicing battle tactics.

In Chu Mu’s eyes, Mo Xie’s strength was leagues above everyone else, so joining battle practice had minimal meaning. As for the two Second Form First Stage Soul Pets that Feng Gu mentioned, Chu Mu didn’t have to take them seriously. The amount of Second Form soul pets Mo Xie has killed in the past two days wasn’t just a few.

Chapter 50: Cao Yi's Conspiracy

When dawn arrived, Foreman Zeng Ze and Foreman Gu Lei came early into the courtyard, summoning all ten of the peons.

"I will now bring you into Nightmare Palace. Follow me and don't say a single extra sentence." Zeng Ze said to the ten.

The ten peons followed Gu Lei and Zeng Ze, the two foremen, and slowly ascended the slope towards the Nightmare Palace.

"Chu Mu, you come over." While Gu Lei was leading ahead, foreman Zeng Ze suddenly called Chu Mu to his side.

Chu Mu was a bit suspicious, but still walked up beside Zeng Ze and asked, "Boss Foremen, what do you need?"

Zeng Ze slowed down his steps. Only until the others had walked ahead for a while did he say to Chu Mu in an abnormally low tone, "You have to be careful."

"I don't understand what dp you mean, Boss Foreman?" Chu Mu looked puzzlingly at Zeng Ze, who only recently had a change in attitude.

"Cao Yi wants you dead, but he doesn't dare to openly disobey Boss Xia's orders, so I think he may introduce some trickery to the battle."

Chu Mu furrowed his brows. On one hand, he didn't understand why Zeng Ze would tell him all this, but on the other hand, he didn't think that Cao Yi would actually rig the team battles.

"He won't directly kill you, but he may plug an extremely strong opponent into the team battles with the goal of killing your sole soul pet." Zeng Ze said.

"Mo Xie was now Chu Mu's only soul pet. If Mo Xie died, Chu Mu could find a new soul pet, but his soul power would definitely improve at an excruciatingly slow rate, meaning that the White Nightmare will inevitably eat his soul!

"Why are you telling me this?" Chu Mu asked.

A smile emerged from Zeng Ze and he said, "I sure don't want to stay on some island forever, and the only person that can promote me is Boss Xia."

Chu Mu eyed Zeng Ze and thought quietly, "This Zeng Ze's brain sure is better than that barbaric Cao Yi. Presumably if Cao Yi didn't detect Zeng Ze's ambition, he would sooner or later be replaced by Zeng Ze."

However, this way was also good. Each person had their own agenda. Once he dealt with Cao Yi, Chu Mu could also be a little more at ease.

"If you have any issues in the future you can tell me, I'll help you

to the best of my abilities.” Zeng Ze said.

Chu Mu nodded, very willing to make this simple and pure transaction of benefits with Zeng Ze. Of course, Chu Mu also knew that all of this was built on power. If he hadn’t display the power to kill five people consecutively, Zeng Ze would never guard him like that. The old trader was the same; what he cared about was also Chu Mu’s strength!

“Team battles have many variables, so you can only rely on yourself to avoid this calamity.” Finished speaking, Zeng Ze quickened his pace and caught up to Gu Lei who was walking ahead.

Chu Mu nodded as well and caught up to the team, finally entering into the vicinity of the Cyan Nightmare Palace.

Zeng Ze and Gu Lei brought everyone into a great colloseum-like structure named “Devil Fighting Palace”. The inside of the structure was very spacey, with gravel and sand covering the battlefield in the center.

When they walked into the Devil Fighting Palace, there were many Nightmare Palace members on the high seats. They were dressed glamorously, arrogantly overlooking the peons selected from each island.

Not sure if it was because every person in Nightmare Palace had to sign a contract with a Nightmare or because the members themselves just looked weird, when Chu Mu’s eyes swept the

room, he noticed all the members of Nightmare Palace looked conspicuously gloomy. When they sat there unmoving, it almost felt as if they were shrouded by a murky ghost.

“Don’t randomly raise your head. You are peons, and they are the upper class of this island. Any disrespect from your gaze may attract lethal disasters!” Gu Lei snorted coldly, reminding those who were looking around everywhere.

Once those people realized that the luxuriously dressed ones sitting on the high seats were the real owners of Cyan Nightmare Palace, they withdrew cowardly and didn’t dare to say anything.

On the high seats.

“Cao Yi, I heard the peons you brought this year are a bunch of useless people?” The island master sitting on the main seat gradually spoke.

The island master was a borderline old man with a luxurious robe. His entire build was slightly bloated, but he still had an imposing manner. Especially his eyes, which seem apathetic but are were piercingly keen.

Cao Yi was on the lower seat. Cao Yi was also an island master, but he was only the island master of a subsidiary island. The Cyan Nightmare main island had a total of 12 such island masters, and the Cyan Nightmare Island that Cao Yi governed didn’t count as an important branch.

“A little accident happened so a few stronger ones died. Boss Island Master, I, Cao Yi, do not hope for anything anymore……” Cao Yi laughed dryly.

“Others have all reported decently strong individuals, like Zi Shen, Chang Xing, Hong Ji, Wang Keluo……Either they have a phase two soul pet or they have three soul pets. Your island only reported a Feng Gu, who has a Ninth Rank Rock Demon, and Chu Mu, who has a Ninth Rank Moonlight Fox……” The island master slowly spoke.

Scolded openly by the island master, Cao Yi’s expression was far from good, but all he could do was bow his body, afraid to meet the island master’s gaze.

“Cao Yi, I never knew you were this “interesting”. Let’s not mention the Rock Demon, at least it has some combat strength. What the hell is there a Moonlight Fox? Many places even list the Moonlight Fox as Low Servant Rank. Even if this soul pet reaches the Ninth Stage, what can it possibly do? Viewing this type of person as a elite peon, Cao Yi, you sure are getting greater and greater!” Guo Meng, a similar ranking island master, jibed sarcastically.

Cao Yi’s face was already bright red with rage, but under this situation, he didn’t dare to randomly vent his anger out!

Cao Yi breathed in deeply and restrained his anger back into his stomach again. His real goal this time was to get rid of Chu Mu. And if the peons he brought could win a rank, he didn’t care anymore. After all, even if Zhou Shengmo and company were still

alive, they still wouldn't be the match of the other peons.

"Liu Zheng, does your peon have a good chance of beating that kid?" Cao Yi ignored Guo Meng's mocking and quietly asked the bony man beside him.

The island master named Liu Zhen laughed and said, "Don't worry, Wang Keluo's strength is definitely top tier within the peons. To get rid of your Ninth Stage Moonlight Fox would be a piece of cake. However, Cao Yi, the other peons you've brought will probably end last again."

Cao Yi's eyes turned. In reality, he received good news a few days ago. With the help of his uncle, he had a great chance of leaving this Cyan Nightmare Island and move into the mainland. He barely cared about the tiny benefits on this lousy island. The urgent task at hand was to get rid of the hidden hazard of Chu Mu. After all, Boss Xia's rank was too high.

Chapter 51: Triggering A Chaotic Battle

In reality, Cao Yi's jealous intentions were extremely strong, and he couldn't tolerate a person like Chu Mu appearing.

Liu Zhen and Cao Yi's relationship was extremely close so Liu Zhen would still help Cao Yi deal with a situation like this. Thus, Liu Zhen had already arranged for Wang Keluo to particularly deal with Chu Mu during the fight.

"It will be hard to pull a dirty trick during the first fight, so as long as he can persevere to the second fight, I can guarantee the Moonlight Fox's certain death." Liu Zhen said.

"This Chu Mu has already killed three of my peons who should have survived, so he does have a bit of strength. It shouldn't be a problem for his team to win the first round if they have him." Cao Yi said.

"Killed three?" Liu Zhen was somewhat surprised as he asked a question. His gaze intentionally turned towards Chu Mu.

Cao Yi nodded his head: "However, he shouldn't be Wang Keluo's opponent; furthermore, there are many other strong members in your team. It's enough for you to get rid of him."

"Haha, Cao Yi old pal, congratulations, you have gloriously achieved last place again...." Liu Zhen let out a laugh.

Cao Yi only curled the corner of his mouth, but didn't say anything. He silently said in his heart: Hmph, do these idiots truly think that I care about the Island Master's lousy reward?

The fights were determined by the twelve subordinate island masters drawing ballots. The first round contained a plethora of ballots so rigging it would be difficult.

"Haha, Cao Yi, our peons are meeting again."

Knowing that the opponents were Guo Meng's peons, Cao Yi's face changed. The strength of Guo Meng's peons were extremely strong. By encountering these people, it would be very hard for Chu Mu and the others to last until the second round.

Within the arena.

Team leader Feng Gu and the others had already furrowed their brows since their first round opponents were the exact same people who had stolen their soul cores the day before yesterday.

"As it turns out, the world is only so small..." The leader of the adjacent team immediately let out a smile of satisfaction.

The other eight people also looked at the opposing ten whilst gnashing their teeth. It was clear that they were already unable to suppress their anger. However, the opposing party's strength had already been displayed. Even by adding Chu Mu, they still may not be their opponents.

“Don’t be rash. If we coordinate well, we’ll still have a chance to win.” Feng Gu was truly someone able to keep his calm.

Under a foreman’s lead, the two teams walked into the battlefield full of sand and broken stone.

Soul pet trainers did not participate in the fight. The members of each team stood on two respective sides.

“You can summon your soul pets.” The Island Master’s voice slowly descended from above.

Twenty peons successively chanted an incantation, immediately leaving a light blue pattern on the battlefield and summoning a soul pet in front of them.

“Chu Mu, do you see that Scaled Armor Beast?” said Feng Gu who was standing in the middle position.

Chu Mu nodded his head. When the Scaled Armor Beast appeared, a bit of discussion arose from outside the battlefield. Clearly, this second phase Scaled Armor Beast was relatively outstanding in this battlefield.

“This Scaled Armor Beast is the largest hassle. If you can contain it, we have a chance of winning.” Feng Gu said.

“I’ll try.” Chu Mu nodded his head. After speaking, he chanted his incantation and summoned Mo Xie.

Everyone inside the battlefield was paying attention to everyone else’s summoned soul pet. The second Chu Mu summoned Mo Xie, a sigh immediately rang out.

“A stage six Moonlight Fox… no wonder he didn’t dare appear on that day…” The Scaled Armor Beast’s master, Zhao Feng, laughed as he spoke.

When Guo Meng’s peons saw that the tenth person who didn’t appear on the previous day was carrying a Moonlight Fox, a smile appeared on all their faces. It seemed like their victory this time wouldn’t be too suspenseful.

Chu Mu had already predicted this sort of situation would occur. Including Feng Gu, Ting Yu and the other peons all let out sneers. If the opponent were to underestimate Chu Mu’s Moonlight Fox,then their deaths would be even more cruel!

Feng Gu intentionally glanced at Mo Xie and a trace of disappointment flashed across his eyes. Pitiful Appearance had maintained its stage six appearance, thus indicating that Chu Mu’s Moonlight Fox was most likely still at the ninth stage.

Helplessly shaking his head, Feng Gu could only summon his Rock Demon.

Slowly from within the light blue design appeared a Rock Demon's body. Compared to a few days ago, it was different. The Rock Demon's body today had turned even more dark, and its build was clearly much larger!

"Second phase stage one Rock Demon!"

Once Feng Gu's Rock Demon was summoned, it immediately brought everyone a nice surprise!

"Everyone else do as according to my plan. We'll let Chu Mu handle the Scaled Armor Beast." Feng Gu said to everyone.

The opposition also had a second phase first stage Wind Demon soul pet. This Wind Demon could naturally only be suppressed by Feng Gu!

"Among Cao Yi's peons, there are only three with high servant level soul pets. Guo Meng has a total of five. Their lineups have clear discrepancies. Moreover, two of Guo Meng's peons have soul pets that have advanced to the second phase." From high above, the Island Master insipidly spoke.

The Island Master truly was not impressed by the peons Cao Yi brought this year. Aside from the Feng Gu who had summoned the second phase stage one Rock Demon, there was no one among the others who could be called elite.

The fight began when a pillar of fire rose into the air.

Ting Yu’s Thorny Rose Demon transformed into the battlefield's controller. In the first instant, it deployed countless two meter tall thorny roses which transformed into a wall of thorny roses which blocked the attacks of the Runido Beast, the Gila Monster, and the other heavy type soul pets.

“Second middle grade defensive skin. This sort of defensive type soul pet’s defense grows rather quickly.” Chu Mu quickly fixed his attention on the Scaled Armor Beast and ordered the completely neglected Mo Xie to move about on the outside of the battlefield and wait for the perfect opportunity.

The Scaled Armor Beast’s master, Zhao Feng intentionally glanced at the separated Moonlight Fox. Although he held her in contempt, he didn’t completely ignore her existence.

“Jia Lin, make your Fire Cat Demon get rid of that Moonlight Fox. Once that’s finished, your Fire Cat Demon will immediately enter the battle.” said Zhao Feng.

Jia Lin nodded her head and commanded the Fire Cat Demon to separate itself from the team. It rushed towards Mo Xie who was wandering around the edge of the battlefield.

“A High Servant Rank Fire Cat Demon, it’s only at the eighth stage...” A quick look and Chu Mu was able to determine the opponent’s strength.

“Mo Xie, play with it first. After two minutes, dispose of it.” A

smile appeared on Chu Mu's face as he transmitted his message to Mo Xie.

Under the state of Pitiful Appearance, Mo Xie seemed to be weaker than the Fire Cat Demon. The Fire Cat Demon proceeded to pounce towards Mo Xie, who only dodged. It wasn't a very striking fight at all.

The chaotic battle of nine soul pets against nine soul pets quickly erupted. Having not undergone a long period of training, the so-called coordination was only limited to the brief moment before the battle.

Once the thorny wall of roses was broken apart, the clearly disadvantaged lineup of Feng Gu and the his peons' soul pets were quickly scattered. Within a few minutes, it had descended into a chaotic battle!

Everyone's gaze was focused on the intense chaotic battle and no one else seemed to notice a splurt of captivating red fresh blood splash onto the edge of the battlefield. It wasn't until a young girl's shriek that everyone else was roused!

"Jia Lin, what are you doing? Why did you withdraw your soul pet?!" Zhao Feng was a bit angry as he yelled at the young girl.

"His Moonlight Fox..." Jia Lin's face was pale as she pointed towards the demonic silver fox on the battlefield. Just now, that Moonlight Fox had suddenly exposed a terrifying attack power which unexpectedly almost killed her Fire Cat Demon in one

strike!

Zhao Feng creased his brows and immediately shifted his attention towards the Moonlight Fox.

However, Zhao Feng astoundedly discovered that this small and weak Moonlight Fox surprisingly was already killing its way into the chaotic fight in a cold and imposing manner. The running speed of the Moonlight Fox was so fast that he was unable to clearly see her steps!

Chapter 52: Instant Kill - Changing The Situation

Everyone was shocked. No one expected a stage six Moonlight Fox to be this fast!

Zhao Feng clenched his teeth, having already guessed that Chu Mu's Moonlight Fox was hiding her strength. Immediately, he ordered his Scaled Armor Beast to free itself from the chaotic battle and rush towards Mo Xie.

The Scaled Armor Beast possessed an extremely thick armor. Only by using Blood Rending Claw could Mo Xie rip apart its defense. However, Chu Mu didn't want to expose Mo Xie's full strength too early!

"Ignore it. Attack the other weaker soul pets." Chu Mu gave Mo Xie an order.

Mo Xie leapt up into the air and her slender silver body flew in an arc over the sandy battlefield, immediately slipping onto the top of the Scaled Armor Beast's enormous body.

Her vigorous body lightly touched down on the sluggish Scaled Armor Beast's head. Mo Xie once again leapt into the air, reaching an even higher height before suddenly diving down!

Moonblade!!

Like daybreak, a pure white light blade magnificently descended from the air, cutting through the hazy sandstorm. It extremely accurately chopped towards the Gila Monster's head!

The day before yesterday, Mo Xie had dealt with a second phase third stage Gila Monster. This time, however, the Gila Monster had only reached stage eight-its first stage defensive skin could not fundamentally resist Mo Xie's late second stage claws. Moreover, the power of the Moonlight Fox's high level technique, Moonblade, was not inferior to Blood Rending Claw.

"Shua!!"

After the flash of silver light, a captivating smear of red suddenly flew into the air.

The Gila Monster's enormous head and its body was completely severed. A drop of blood flowed amidst of the chaotic sand.

Silence engulfed the area, everyone's eyes were wide open as they stared at the Moonlight Fox that had instantly killed a stage eight Gila Monster!

Within a few minutes, she had forced the recall of a Fire Cat Demon. Then, in an extremely strange manner, she descended from the sky and instantly killed a stage eight Gila Monster. The situation of the battle had reversed in an instant! Imposing and arrogant! Threateningly cold!

Once the silence faded, a flurry of chatter arose. Mo Xie's momentary eruption of killing strength caused everyone to immediately change their opinions.

"Chu Mu, nice job!" Feng Gu instantly let out an expression of ecstasy and looked at the incomparably calm Chu Mu!

The other team members recovered from their shock and happiness, and shifted their gazes towards Chu Mu. While their expressions were different, all of them began to revere Chu Mu even more. After all, Chu Mu's Moonlight Fox, with her gorgeous beheading, caused the battle to completely change .

"Abominable, it unexpectedly possesses a disguise ability. Scaled Armor Beast, pulverise her!" After instantly losing two team members, Zhao Feng's face was even more red, and he once again ordered his Scaled Armor Beast to chase down Mo Xie.

"Chu Mu, restrain the Scaled Armor Beast. We will deal with the rest!" said Feng Gu.

Chu Mu nodded his head. Nine soul pets against seven soul pets truly wasn't too much of a problem. Chu Mu also didn't make Mo Xie evade the Scaled Armor Beast any longer, and instead let Mo Xie meet it head on.

As the Scaled Armor Beast rushed over, the sand under its feet instantly disintegrated into even smaller particles. Its enormous body resembled a moving wall suddenly charging towards Mo Xie.

Mo Xie rushed towards the Scaled Armor Beast. Just as this enormous soul pet was about to crash into her, the running silhouette of Mo Xie suddenly turned blurry and if one looked closely,one would surprisingly able to faintly make out two devoid Moonlight Fox silhouettes!

The Scaled Armor Beast passed through the center of the two silhouettes, but didn't make contact with any physical body. Its inertia propelled it forward, causing a gulch to appear on the battlefield.

Mo Xie's devoid silhouette slowly fused together again before she abruptly turned around and performed Dark Assault, chasing the Scaled Armor Beast!

"This Moonlight Fox has grasped the timing of using its abilities very well. " The Island Master stroked his beard while indifferently speaking. Currently, this Cyan Nightmare Island Island Master, who possessed the most power, was completely focused on Mo Xie.

The other subordinate island masters had also clearly changed their attitude towards the Moonlight Fox. Only Guo Meng's expression was ugly. Jia Lin recalling her soul pet in time was fine, but the peon with the beheaded Gila Monster had essentially been completely disabled. Most importantly, the situation of the battle had ineffably reversed simply because of one Moonlight Fox!

"Mo Xie, Ripping Claw!"

After Mo Xie performed Dark Assault, her speed had increased at least by one fold. This sort of speed allowed Mo Xie to catch up to the Scaled Armor Beast which still hadn't steadied its body from the previous charge!

By overlapping Dark Assault and Ripping Claw, the power of the claws would reach an even higher stage!!

Seeing the Moonlight Fox directly attack his Scaled Armor Beast, a sneer appeared on Zhao Feng's face. He immediately gave an order to his Scaled Armor Beast.

A peculiar luster suddenly began circulating around the Scaled Armor Beast's body. Once it faded, the Scaled Armor Beast's body had suddenly become even thicker. Moreover, this peculiar defense had covered its entire body!

"If you dare attack, you'll rip off your claws!" A disdainful smile appeared on Zhao Feng's face!

Scaled Light was a defensive technique possessed by every soul pet with defensive-scaled armor skin. After performing Scaled Light, the outer shell of defense on the soul pet would increase, on top of its base defense. An intermediate second stage defense could thus reach the late second stage!

A silver light flashed past; everyone thought that Chu Mu would make his Moonlight Fox retract her attack, but Mo Xie didn't lose any speed. Her claws unexpectedly and accurately struck the chinks in the Scaled Armor Beast's armor-its abdomen and lower

limbs!!

After the Scaled Armor Beast's abdomen and lower limbs were attacked, blood began to instantly spill out. The Scaled Armor Beast's body lowered down and almost fell onto the ground!

Seeing this scene, the pejorative smile on Zhao Feng's face immediately stiffened!

The Scaled Armor Beast's Scaled Light technique hadn't reached the final stage, and the joints in its abdomen and lower limbs weren't fully covered by the scaled armor. Zhao Feng originally believed the opponent would not be able to notice such a small weakness, but this attack accurately struck the vital area on the Scaled Armor Beast where there was no defense!

"Just now, the Moonlight Fox's dodge then subsequent pursuit caused the Scaled Armor Beast to expose its weak point. As the Scaled Armor Beast was still moving, the Moonlight Fox was able to accurately attack the tiny chinks. Its battle experience is extremely rich." The Island Master's tone had slightly changed and he specifically looked at Chu Mu, who was commanding the Moonlight Fox's fight, with a bit of admiration.

"Yes, yes, yes, we underestimated that peon called Chu Mu." Echoed the foremen next to the Island Master instantly.

"Chu Mu, I'll help you." Ting Yu saw that the lower limbs of the Scaled Armor Beast had received an injury and immediately ordered her Thorny Rose Demon to perform Flower Thrust!

“Pu!! Pu!!” Three reverse hooked prickly flowers like pikes abruptly burst out from the sandy and broken stone ground. They extremely accurately pricked into the Scaled Armor Beast’s body. However, even though Ting Yu’s Thorny Rose Demon had reached stage nine, this technique was still unable to break apart the Scaled Armor Beast’s defensive skin.

“Ting Yu, your attacks have no effect on it. You restrict the Wind Demon, I’ll get rid of him.” Feng Gu knew that the most troublesome one here was Zhao Feng’s Scaled Armor Beast. Seeing that it had already been heavily wounded by Chu Mu’s Mo Xie, he immediately took advantage of the situation and made his Rock Demon perform Rock Attack!

The Rock Demon was a heavy soul pet. Once the Scaled Armor Beast lost its Scaled Light effect, it suffered from the Rock Demon’s Rock Attack. Immediately, the thick-scaled armor on its body showed signs of being crushed!!

Chapter 53: Striking Fox

Seeing his own Scaled Armor Beast mortally wounded, Zhao Feng was so furious that his face turned black, but the Scaled Armor Beast already had its armor shattered completely, so Zhao Feng had no choice but to retract his soul pet. Fighting any longer would only cause his Scaled Armor Beast to follow in the footsteps of the Gila Monster.

After Zhao Feng retracted his soul pet, though the other people's soul pets still had remaining combat strength, the enemy didn't lose a single member, so the remaining seven were under great pressure.

Ting Yu's Thorny Rose Demon was absolutely no match for the Wind Demon. Its sluggish stalk was showing signs of snapping already, so Ting Yu had to retract her Thorny Rose Demon.

"Chu Mu, it's up to you." Ting Yu said to Chu Mu.

Chu Mu nodded, and he immediately commanded Mo Xie to rapidly approach the Second Form First Stage Wind Demon. Mo Xie, who was easily dealing with everything on the battlefield, thought that the Wind Demon was still worth toying with, so she quickly locked onto it!

Wind Demon, Elemental World - Wind Type - Medium Servant Rank, grasping the purest of the wind powers. If it was able to cast wind magic, then it would become increasingly difficult to deal with.

The Wind Demon's body was like a turbid gust, with a disheveled head of strange hair. From afar, it looked like a crazed old witch.

"Zhiya!!" The Wind Demon discovered the nearing of Mo Xie and instantly let out a shrill scream!

"Huhuhu~~"

When the scream sounded, the Wind Demon's surroundings were instantly surrounded with swirling currents. This gale spun upwards and swiftly reached a size of five meters, sucking in all the sand within five meters of Fan Yuan, becoming a muddied gust!

"Huhuhu!!"

Once the gust was formed, it swiftly swept towards Mo Xie. Chen Zhuo's Cyan Eyed Monster couldn't dodge in time and got immediately thrown into the air, attacked by the chaotic sands.

"Final stage Whirlwind, this Wind Demon's aptitude isn't too bad!" Chu Mu watched the Whirlwind, but met it with a slight smile.

"Mo Xie, go straight through it!"

After receiving the command, Mo Xie suddenly sped up, actually dashing straight towards the powerful Whirlwind!

Yet, this move of the Moonlight Fox immediately caused everyone's eyes to open wide!

The Cyan Eyed Monster's size was considerably bigger than the Moonlight Fox. If even he had gotten blown upwards, was it even possible for the delicate fox to resist that power?

Mo Xie's speed unceasingly increased, fast as lightning, and she actually jumped straight into the range of the Whirlwind!

Her silver white fur suddenly glowed with a peculiar gloss. The normally soft and elegant fur changed, becoming flexible yet unyielding. No matter how strong the wind or sand's attacks were, it couldn't hurt Mo Xie a single bit!

Mo Xie's speed was very quick. Under such speeds, even the whirl of the Whirlwind could not lift Mo Xie up!!

"Hu!!"

With Shadow assault casted, Mo Xie's silver body instantly pierced through the five meter wide Whirlwind. After Mo Xie passed through the the rapidly spinning Whirlwind, it briefly stopped...

The next moment, the entire Whirlwind stopped, and even disappeared!

The Moonlight Fox's terrifying speed yet again alarmed the entire stadium!

No matter enemy or friend, they all stared, shocked at the striking Moonlight Fox, feeling great disbelief. Such a strong wind type magic was dispersed by pure speed!

The team battle had a total of twenty soul pets. No one guessed that the most attention attracting one was not the High Rank soul pets, nor the Second Form soul pets, but a seemingly Sixth Stage Moonlight Fox!!!

The Wind Demon was not a soul pet that excelled in close combat. Once the distance was closed, there was no chance for it!

Soon, the Wind Demon was mortally wounded by Mo Xie. In the end, the owner of the Wind Demon couldn't help but grudgingly retract the Demon back into his soul pet space!

The two strongest soul pets had been dealt with by Mo Xie, so the following battle had no suspense. The chaotic and unpredictable battle finally settled with nine wounded and one dead on Liu Zhen's side!

On the other hand, out of Cao Yi's peons, only Ting Yu and Chen Zhou had wounded soul pets that couldn't battle. Everyone else's soul pets still had sufficient strength.

This unexpected battle quickly drew the audience's commotion

and debate, and Chu Mu's Moonlight Fox quickly became the highlight of the battle!

"Seems like this kid does have some strength. Though Guo Meng's team isn't necessarily strong, beating such an inferior team shouldn't have been a problem. It all changed with one person." Liu Zhen looked at Chu Mu and whispered to Cao Yi.

Cao Yi's brows furrowed as well. From her behavior just now, the Moonlight Fox's strength was clearly stronger than when it fought Ge Qin's Scaled Serpent. Being able to get rid of a Second Form Soul Pet, it was very likely the Fox was of the Second Form too.

"But, old pal Cao don't worry, as long as you can promise that he won't retract his soul pet, I'm certain that I can kill the fox." Liu Zhen saw Cao Yi miserable state, but simply patted him on the back.

Cao Yi nodded, evidently placing lots of trust in Wang Keluo's power.

Finishing the battle, Zeng Ze brought the peons to rest outside of the stadium. They couldn't leave yet because they still had another battle to fight.

At the resting area, Chu Mu naturally became everyone's focus. After all, without Chu Mu in this fight, it was impossible for them to win.

“Previously, I still didn’t believe that you killed the five people including Zhou Shengmo, but now I do!” The previously grumbling Chen Zhuo quickly changed his attitude.

“Chu Mu, shouldn’t your Moonlight Fox be Second Form already? But why does it still look like it is in the Sixth Stage under the effects of Pitiful Appearance?” Feng Gu inquired.

Before, when Chu Mu summoned a Sixth Stage Moonlight Fox, Feng Gu revealed a disappointed look, thinking Chu Mu’s Moonlight Fox was still at the Ninth Stage.

“Pitiful Appearance has improved as well.” Chu Mu replied indifferently.

Now Mo Xie’s Pitiful Appearance was already at the final stage, so unless there was a disguise revealing ability, it was very difficult to tell what Stage Mo Xie had reached.

Feng Gu immediately showed understanding and said, “Looks like your soul pet’s strength is quite superior to ours……”

“Chu Mu, what is your Moonlight Fox’s Form and Stage really?” Xin Xue immediately followed up.

Xin Xue had a beautiful face. Before, the peons competed for survival, so nobody cared for a young girl’s looks.

But with the maturing of the heart and body along with the

removal of the tense environment, Xin Xue's appearance and body gradually revealed itself, making the other peons more or less favoring her.

Xin Xue indeed was curious in Chu Mu, so when asking Chu Mu, she even made her voice gentler……

Chu Mu glanced at the pretentious and flirting Xin Xue, but he simply smiled slightly and didn't bother answering the question.

Chapter 54: Comparable To A Commander Rank Soul Pet

Chu Mu didn't pay anymore attention to the other questions. Instead, he began to pour his Remembrance into his soul pet space. Just now, he had heard an indescribable shout from Mo Xie.

Xin Xue felt that she was being ignored and her expression immediately changed. However, she didn't dare to fully express her mood, and she ultimately exposed a very strange expression.

"Wuwuwu"

Mo Xie's voice once again reverberated through Chu Mu's sea of consciousness unceasingly. This type of shout could be said to be extremely familiar to Chu Mu.

"You're leveling up!" A feeling of ecstasy welled up within Chu Mu.

Continuous battle could rapidly level up a soul pet. In these past few days, Chu Mu had fed Mo Xie the Heavenly Blue Gyokuro Pungen so that she could advance to stage three, before continuously battling in the jungle. Chu Mu had estimated that Mo Xie would level up soon, but didn't expect that the Growth Radiance emitted from levelling up would arrive so soon after the battle ended!

The leveling up radiance circled Mo Xie's body, and while the

other parts of Mo Xie's body didn't undergo very visible changes, her silver claws were the most conspicuous. An exotic flicker of red light appeared on her claws. Further examination would yield a discovery of some rose gold radiance attached to her sharp claws!

"It's already reached the late stage of the second stage of Fierce Claws!" Chu Mu felt a burst of happiness in his heart, and he was even more excited!

The Moonlight Fox was a demon attribute soul pet, and even if it were to reach the third phase, its claws would have a very hard time reaching the Fierce Claws stage. However, Mo XIe had accomplished this. If he didn't know that Mo Xie possessed a mutated race lineage, Chu Mu himself would find it very hard to believe that the stage of the body part that a servant rank soul pet used to fight would increase so quickly!

Second phase stage four! The claws had reached the late second stage, the defensive fur had reached the initial second stage, and she possessed two powerful attacking techniques-Moonblade and Blood Rending Claw. With the addition of the fire attribute, she could perform the fire type technique, Flame Awn!

In this way, Mo Xie's fighting strength made her unfearful of other servant rank soul pets under the second phase seventh stage!

In the subsequent fights, he would be fighting teams from other islands. Chu Mu also knew that the upcoming opponents would be the other 5 peon teams which had won.

There was a definite gap in strength between each island. Chu Mu especially felt this gap from the group leader with an Umbra soul pet.

Umbra: Demon Kingdom-Demon Attribute-Darkness Race. Umbras could be considered rather rare soul pets. Although they were classified as high class servant ranks, if they were trained well, their strength would be even stronger than lower class Commander ranked soul pets.

This Umbra's master was a youth wearing black clothes. His entire being appeared dark and gloomy. It was clearly due to having contact with a dark attribute soul core.

Chu Mu could ascertain that this Umbra had already reached the second phase third stage. However, the other peon teammates in that team were equally strong.Thus the Umbra hadn't needed to use its entire strength and the team still easily defeated their enemy.

Aside from the Umbra, Chu Mu also saw a few relatively threatening soul pets. Amongst them was a second phase ninth stage soul pet. It could also be said to be the soul pet with the highest strength amongst all the peons. Unfortunately, the soul pet was still a low class servant rank. Thus, despite reaching the incredible second phase stage nine, if one were to measure the pet by total strength, it would only rank within the top five. It was therefore not the strongest.

"How are things? Can you still guarantee getting rid of him?" Cao Yi whispered.

“Don’t worry, it’s all been arranged. In the next fight, your peons will fight my peons. That brat will definitely die!” said Liu Zhen.

Cao Yi raised the corner of his mouth and silently thought: “Chu Mu… Chu Mu… you can only blame your bad luck. Who told you to have a White Nightmare in your body!”

Cao Yi actually had another reason for killing Chu Mu-he coveted the White Nightmare! The value of a White Nightmare was greater than the entire Cyan Nightmare Island! On one hand, Cao Yi didn’t dare to openly offend Senior Xia, but on the other hand, he couldn’t waste this extremely rare opportunity!

“Haha, Senior Cao, we truly won’t be friends if we don’t fight. Your peons have once again met my peons.” Liu Zhen, who drew the ballot, held a false smile while speaking to Cao Yi.

(Idiom: An exchange of blows may lead to friendship. Chinese is hard >.<)

(The raws also say Liu Yi, but I think it should be changed to Liu Zhen, probably a typo)

Cao Yi feigned an expression of anger. He was entirely pretending with Liu Zhen.

“Senior Cao, how about we go to the battlefield to spectate. It will be even more interesting this way.” Liu Zhen said.

“Sure.” Cao Yi also stood up right away and strode towards the

battlefield.

The second Cao Yi stood up, the adjacent subordinate island masters sneered: “Cao Yi, why are you so meddlesome. In any case, you will lose. Why don’t you just sit here and watch, just in case you can’t control your emotions and end up killing all your peons. This year would be completely wasted then.”

Cao Yi sneered and ignored the other subordinate island masters’ taunts and directly walked towards Chu Mu and the others.

“Cao Yi is coming over. He definitely doesn’t dare kill us here, but it will be hard to defend against his underhanded techniques.” Zeng Ze whispered in a very small voice to Chu Mu.

Chu Mu nodded his head and looked at the gloomy Cao Yi. His thoughts rapidly changed as he tried to guess how Cao Yi would deal with him.

“You can enter the battlefield!” The Island Master’s voice rang out from high above.

Chu Mu and everyone else walked into the battlefield. The other peons had ugly expressions. The reason was very simple-just now they had spectated this team’s battle. Even without actually fighting them, they knew that they would definitely lose this time!

Their opponents were Liu Zhen’s peons. The leader was the person who possessed the second phase third stage Umbra that

could rival even a Commander ranked soul pet!

“Second phase third stage-high class servant rank Umbra, second phase first stage-high class servant rank Flame Tail, second phase second stage-mid class servant rank Wind Fairy, second phase fifth stage-low class servant rank Bramble Demon....”

Whether it was the species or stage rank, Liu Zhen’s side of peons was much stronger than Cao Yi’s peons. Even with the Moonlight Fox’s earlier gorgeous display, in the eyes of other people, she would be of no use when encountering this group!

“You should all be a bit careful, If you can’t beat them, then decisively recall your soul pets. Don’t let your soul pets die.” Feng Gu was extremely rational as he spoke to everyone.

The strength disparity was simply too large. Forcing themselves would leave them in a miserable state of defeat. The most important thing right now was for all the peons to have their Nightmares level up to a certain stage. If they had to restart from the beginning, then the cultivation of soul pet trainers lacking soul pets to fight would progress abnormally slowly, in which case they would definitely be devoured by the Nightmare.

In other words, as long as their soul pet died, before long, they would die as well.

Facing such a strong team, Chu Mu’s eyebrows creased. This battle could be considered as one without hope of victory. Chu Mu didn’t want to over reveal Mo Xie, and could only regret losing out

on the opportunity to choose a soul technique.

"You can summon your soul pets!" The island master's gaze swept across the twenty people on either side of the battle field before slowly opening his mouth and speaking!

Chapter 55: Shadow Seizing Soul Fixation

The line-up of either sides soul pets had already been displayed. Therefore, when the soul pets were summoned this time around, both inside and outside the battlefield, the discussions were not about the peons' soul pets.

Of course, the crowd didn't discuss who would obtain victory in this fight, but rather how many minutes it would take for the fight to end...

"Begin the fight!"

After the voice died down, Ting Yu, who possessed a plant kingdom soul pet immediately began to lay down a battle barrier. Enormous thorny roses began to blossom on the battlefield, quickly forming a thorny rose wall.

"I can only do this much..." Ting Yu said.

Ting Yu's Thorny Rose demon had been injured during the last battle. Thus,, she could only barely summon it for this short period of time.

Once the thorny rose wall was formed, four thorny rattans covered in sharp barbs suddenly appeared in the middle of the sandy ground like four wolf teeth hammers. These four thorny rattans twisted their bodies like four pythons and swept right across the flower wall constructed by Ting Yu's Thorny Rose Demon.

“Hu hu!!”

Once the four thorny rattans swept across, the entire wall immediately transformed into flurry of ruined petals that messily fluttered around the somewhat turbid battlefield.

“This flower wall technique is but a decoration.” On the opposing side, the peon controlling the second phase fifth stage Thorny Demon jeered, intentionally speaking in a way that Ting Yu could hear it.

Ting Yu knew that she wasn’t his match and didn’t try to be brave. She immediately made her Thorny Rose Demon retreat to the back, and planned to make it use a few more techniques, after which she would recall her already injured soul pet.

Feng Gu, Li Zhi and others didn’t instruct their soul pets to rush out. Instead they waited for the enemy attacks to come.

Chu Mu made Mo Xie separate herself from the team and wander around the edge of the battlefield. If she had enough space, Mo Xie could utilize her full speed. Moreover, if she were to stay over there, she would only sustain the AOE (area of effect) damage from the enemy’s magic techniques.

Sure enough, when the second phase second stage Wind Fairy came close, a six meter wide and five meter tall tornado astonishingly appeared.

Grains of sand tumbled through the air as the squall whistled on!

The powerful tornado was like a wild beast charging into their soul pet formation. If it wasn't for Feng Gu's Rock Demon using its body to resist, it would have definitely caused a flurry of damage.

"Spread apart a bit, this Wind Fairy's Tornado has already reached the Final Stage." Feng Gu said to everyone.

Everyone else was also aware of the tornado's might, and one by one they ordered their soul pets to separate. However, just as they separated, the sandy ground suddenly broke apart and, like thick snakes, four thorny rattans abruptly appeared.

Thorny Bind! The Thorny Demon's control was extremely terrifying. Four thorny rattans suddenly bound four soul pets whose bodies were then pierced by these thorny rattans. They were rendered completely unable to move and could only let out painful cries.

The second phase fifth stage Thorny Demon could be reckoned as one of the best soul pets among peons. One Thorny Binding Technique was able to exhibit such a large strength difference with these stage one eighth stage soul pets.

"Shua shua!!"

Mo Xie who had been wandering around the periphery had

returned to the team at some unknown time. Her claws intersected and very precisely struck the thorny rattans sprouting up from the ground. The Thorny Demon's trainer had completely neglected the Moonlight Fox's appearance, and wasn't able to retract the thorny rattan in time. Its rattan was fully severed by Mo Xie's claws!

The Thorny Demon's rattans could regrow, but it required at least two days. This phase two stage five Thorny Demon possessed five ratans. In the previous fight, it had lost one, and right now, another one had just had been severed by Mo Xie.

The Thorny Demon's trainer immediately locked his gaze onto Chu Mu's Moonlight Fox and a slightly indignant expression appeared on his face. He was about to command the Thorny Demon to chase after the Moonlight Fox when Wang Keluo, who was standing next to him, said: "You just have to deal with the others. Don't disturb my Umbra."

Wang Keluo's tone was extremely cold. His tone resembled that of an order, but the Thorny Demon's trainer didn't reveal even a hint of discontent. He seemed to be exceptionally fearful of Wang Keluo!

Thorny Bind lasted for only five more seconds. The other three soul pets were pierced by the thorny rattan's wolf teeth needles and were bleeding. Their entire bodies were full of injuries, and their fighting power had been severely weakened.

"The rattan's needles have corroding poison. Recall your soul pets and I'll let my Thorny Rose Demon detoxify them." Ting Yu said.

The three peons immediately made their soul pets retreat. Ting Yu made use of her Thorny Rose Demon's unique technique, Plant Nectar, and dripped the unique flower juice on the three soul pets' wounds relieving the remaining venom on their wounds.

After the three soul pets retreated to the back, a gap appeared within the team. At this time, a violent vibration noise immediately resounded around the entire battlefield as the sand on the ground flew into the air!!

The opposing soul pets had already launched an attack! Sand swirled everywhere as they ferociously charged towards the opposing group!

Chu Mu extremely decisively made Mo Xie separate herself from the team. With Mo Xie's speed, there wasn't any soul pet that could catch up to her. Chu Mu only wanted to quietly observe the changes. If the situation was too miserable, then he would immediately give up.

None of the opposing side's soul pets focused Chu Mu's Moonlight Fox and instead charged towards Feng Gu and the others' soul pets. The difference in grandeur and strength immediately caused the fight to appear one sided.

"This fight isn't that important." Chu Mu let out a sigh.

Just as Chu Mu sighed, he astonishingly discovered that a black shadow had suddenly appeared above Mo Xie as it weirdly

enveloped Mo Xie's body.

"Shadow Seizing Soul Fixation-an expert Umbras' restricting technique..."

Shadow Seizing Soul Fixation was a dark and beast attributed combination mental technique. After entering the enemy's shadow, the enemy's body would be rendered immobile, all the while being unable to use any mental techniques.

Wang Keluo's mouth formed into a smile and he intentionally stared at the opposing Chu Mu and muttered: "Even if your Moonlight Fox's speed quicker, it would still not be able to break out of my Umbra's Shadow Seizing Soul Fixation!"

Mo Xie's body was immobile and the two silver eyes bore a few traces of anger as she stared at her own shadow that had turned a bit strange.

"The technique isn't that bad, but..." Chu Mu actually felt rather surprised by this ability as the technique had restricted Mo Xie's movements. However, Chu Mu had already planned on forfeiting this battle, and the Shadow Seizing Soul Fixation could not prevent a soul pet trainer's recalling ability.

After the chaotic battle had begun, there were people successively recalling their own soul pets. Chu Mu also chanted his incantation to directly recall Mo Xie.

Suddenly, at this moment, Chu Mu abruptly felt an extremely subtle mental pulse!

This mental pulse was most definitely directed at him!

Chu Mu didn't expect that someone would mount a sneak attack on him. The piercing chilly mental remembrance dug into Chu Mu's mind and proceeded to sever his recall incantation. Quickly thereafter, it sealed his soul remembrance!

Chu Mu's heart froze and he suddenly felt that his body had become much heavier. From head to toe he felt frozen, and was incapable of moving!

"Such an interesting battle, why don't you enjoy it for a while longer." Cao Yi had at some unknown time appeared behind Chu Mu and used an extremely peculiar tone as he talked to Chu Mu!

Chapter 56: Mark, Seal Break

“Get rid of all those pieces of trash.” Wang Keluo smiled cruelly and said to his team mates.

Feng Gu had already told everyone to decisively recall their soul pets if they couldn’t resist their enemies. As the enemies’ attacks became increasingly severe, there were only two or three soul pets left on their side.

“Beng!!”

A sonic boom sounded out, its piercing sound resonating throughout the sandy battlefield. Li Zhi’s White Feathered Eagle was ruthlessly hit in the skies. Immediately, a few savage soul pets pounced forward!

Individual strength was solely judged by the foremen. Li Zhi had originally wanted to last a little bit longer so his individual strength would rank higher, but he hadn’t anticipated being struck in midair. Quickly, he started chanting the retraction spell!

“Shuashua!!”

White feathers stained with blood scattered into the air. In the end, Li Zhi’s speed of retraction was too slow. The moment his White Feathered Eagle fell from the skies, it was torn apart by beast claws!

Seeing his own White Feathered Eagle slaughtered ruthlessly, Li Zhi fell to the ground as if he had lost his soul, clawing at his head with a face of utter despair.

The others looked at Li Zhi and secretly rejoiced that they had retracted their soul pets in time. At the same time, they felt sorry for Li Zhi. If he had retracted his soul pet just a bit earlier, then it wouldn't have had to end like this!

"Chu Mu, you should probably retract your soul pet, we can't defeat them." After Feng Gu retracted his Rock Monster, he spoke to Chu Mu. Feng Gu was only warning him out of the goodness of his heart, but when he spoke, he suddenly noticed that Chu Mu's pale face was covered in sweat!

Seeing this, Feng Gu quickly realized something, and he looked towards Cao Yi behind him.

Cao Yi immediately glared at Feng Gu and let out a cold humph, "Don't meddle in other people's business, get out of here."

Chu Mu's rage was at its apex. Cao Yi's Remembrance was stronger than his, so he was completely suppressed, unable to chant the Soul Pact Incantation. Addtionally, with the retracting of Feng Gu's Rock Monster, the Shadow Seizing, Soul Fixated Mo Xie was the only one left on the battlefield!

"What? The Moonlight Fox's master isn't planning on retracting his soul pet yet?"

“Under these circumstances, the longer you last, the higher you’ll rank in individual strength. But with poor control, the tragedy of the White Feathered Eagle’s owner might be reenacted.

“After being controlled by the Shadow Seizing Soul Fixation, any perseverance is simply wasted energy.”

Discussion soon started outside the stadium as everyone’s gaze fell onto Mo Xie, the last one remaining on her side.

“Wuwuwu!!!”

Mo Xie cried out, evidently aware that Chu Mu was under someone else’s mental restriction!!

“Wuwuwu!!!”

Strict foxcalls travelled out, and Mo Xie’s silver gaze immediately locked onto the abhorring Cao Yi. Her silver fur abruptly began floating bizarrely.

“Want to escape? Not that simple!” Wang Keluo smiled and immediately commanded his Umbra to increase its restricting power!!

“WUWUWUWU!!!”

Mo Xie’s silver fur started to wave around unrestrained. The

silver moon shaped mark on her forehead unexpectedly burst forth with radiance. A faint moon shaped luster wrapped around Mo Xie's body. This gorgeous moon image was perfectly superimposed onto her indignantly foxcalling head!

"Silver Moonfox's Seal Break!!"

This scene instantly stirred up an uproar within the crowd, drawing more and more eyes to the Moonlight Fox who was casting this eccentric ability!

Seal Break was the moon marked Silver Moonfox's unique ability. Of all the soul pets, only the Silver Moonfox had this very special power. Even if its power was significantly lower than the opposing side, relying on its silver moon mark, it could shatter any and all mental or demonic restraints!

The Moonlight Fox and the Silver Moonfox were different. Everyone had trouble understanding how a Moonlight Fox could cast the Silver Moonfox special: Seal Break!

Mo Xie's first lineage was Silver Moonfox, only becoming a Moonlight Fox after multiple species mutations. The silver moon mark on her forehead was an unerasable trace of her original identity!

The enveloping shadow was completely washed away by the silver radiance. Mo Xie abruptly escaped from the control of the Shadow Seizing Soul Fixation and became a streak of silver as she dashed towards Cao Yi!!

“Beng!!”

Mo Xie’s petite body ferociously slammed into the ten meter high protective shielding, causing the entire shield to quiver!

“Wuwuwuwu!!” Mo Xie’s claws frantically scratched at the shield, as if itching to immediately charge out of the prison-like battlefield and ripping Cao Yi into pieces!

“Mo Xie, use Moon Shadow, quick!!”Chu Mu faced Mo Xie and screamed with great difficulty through their telepathic link!

Mo Xie would never doubt any of Chu Mu’s commands, so she immediately gave up attacking the shield. Her body quickly became fuzzy as three ethereal shadows were conjured!

“Huhu”

Almost at the same time that Mo Xie finished casting Moon Shadow, a burst of flames appeared where Mo Xie just was, sending heat waves to even outside of the shield.

The crimson fire danced around. Within the raging flames, Mo Xie’s other two shadows slowly dissipated, her real body appearing at the edge of the fire. The fire immediately caused Mo Xie’s body to shine bright red. Even her eyes were dyed flaming red!

“Mo Xie, don’t worry about me. He cast Mental Shackle on me, so I can’t cast anything for the next ten minutes. Their objective is to kill you, so you have to do everything you can to protect yourself!” Chu Mu said strenuously to Mo Xie telepathically!

“Wuwuw!!”

Standing on the fire, Mo Xie gazed at the extremely pale Chu Mu. Those eyes that reflected fire seemed to have lit ablaze themselves, but knowing she couldn’t break the shield with her own strength, she unexpectedly and cool-headedly turned towards the attacking soul pets!

The one who cast the Flame Blast was the Second Form First Stage Flame Tail. Currently, Mo Xie’s rage was at its peak. Her normally gentle and beautiful face was incomparably sharp, and her eyes were full of cold, gleaming killing intent!

Currently, Chu Mu’s chest was also filled with anger. Mo Xie was the only one left on the field, and she had to face ten soul pets from the enemy! If Mo Xie had suffered from any accident, even if Chu Mu had to expend all his soul power to cast Chong Mei, he would still do it to kill Cao Yi!

“Captain, leave this Moonlight Fox to me.” The owner of the Flametail eyed the short Mo Xie and let out a disdainful smile.

The Flametail had already locked onto Mo Xie. While running, it dragged its long tail of fire and dashed viciously towards Mo Xie, attempting to rip Mo Xie’s little body to pieces!

Mo Xie calmly stood there, maintaining a slightly crouched pose, as if a drawn bow!

“Barbeque fox meat must taste great!” The owner of the Flametail laughed cruelly and commanded his Flametail to blow a stream of fire straight towards Mo Xie!

Fire quickly lit the dry grains of sand, its red ball projecting onto the entire battlefield, causing even the shields to burn red.

Within the confusion of fire and light, Mo Xie’s elegant yet powerful body remained, in spite of everything, standing in the fire, her silver fur instantly becoming a foreign red!

As the scattering fire crazily fluttered, Mo Xie completely removed her Pitiful Appearance, and the elegant and proud Second Form Fourth Stage Moonlight Fox’s grandeur was again set free within the blazing flames!!

Chapter 57: Fighting One Against Ten

Gao Yu's third stage Flame Tail's powerful aura dissipated in an instant, causing the flames to die down a bit. Mo Xie's body, which was full of energy, stepped onto the few flames and her body transformed into a captivating, red fire ray as she charged towards the Flame Tail as quickly as lighting.

Dark Assault's usage let Mo Xie's speed instantly double, and the 10 meter distance was covered in under a second!

There were still flames burning on Mo Xie's body. Within the ten meter gap, astonishingly appeared the gorgeous figure of a fire fox. At the end of the long figure, both fire rays and ice rays interweaved!!

Regardless if it was the Flame Tail's master or the spectators outside the battlefield, no one had expected that a Moonlight Fox would be immune to a Flame Tail's fire and would proceed to launch an extremely fierce attack after leaving the flames!!

A blade's awn briefly flashed and an exceptionally accurate cut appeared on the Flame Tail's neck, immediately revealing a deep, bloody line along its long neck.

"Pu chi"

Fresh red blood splashed from within the fire, spraying everywhere.

Following the slow collapse of the Flame Tail's body, the originally clamorous battlefield instantly went quiet. Everyone's attention was now fixated on the now-dead Flame Tail.

Merciless, decisive, cold, and icily arrogant. Currently, what everyone saw was no longer the previously weak and petite stage six Moonlight Fox. Instead, they saw a Blood Fox that could step upon flames, a fox that possessed a body of grandeur fur, a fox that had an eminent figure, and a fox that carried an imposing killing aura

"Phase two stage four!!!"

Without any obstruction from the fire, and contrasted by the corpse underneath her feet, Mo Xie's figure was completely exposed under everyone's field of view!

"Eight stages... this Moonlight Fox unexpectedly hid eight stages of strength. No wonder it appeared to be so powerful in the earlier fight!!"

"But it's still fishy. Even if it's at phase two stage four, how does this Moonlight Fox possess the strength to break free from the seal? How is it immune to fire? Unless this Moonlight Fox has already undergone soul crystal training... but a soul crystal isn't something that a peon should have!"

Once the silence faded, various voices rang from outside the battlefield. Everyone's gaze had shifted towards the soul pet

trainer controlling the Moonlight Fox.

The Flame Tail's Master was staring at his deceased Flame Tail. The previously haughty and contemptuous attitude was completely gone. The only thing that remained was an expression of disbelief and a fear that filled his eyes of the advent of death!

"This Moonlight Fox is a bit weird, you guys fight together!" Wang Keluo's eyebrows creased. Originally, he thought that he could quickly settle this fight, but he didn't expect that even under these circumstances, they would still lose a soul pet!

Indeed, the strength that Mo Xie exposed had been too sudden. No one expected a second phase first stage Flame Tail to be instantly killed!

Liu Zhen's peons knew that when it came to one on ones, only Wang Keluo's Umbra could confront this acutely spirited and threatening Moonlight Fox. The other people's soul pets would find it very difficult to defeat this abnormal Moonlight Fox. Thus, in the next moment, a few people's soul pets launched a simultaneous attack.

Chu Mu's whole body was incapable of moving and he could only use his mental thought transmissions to oversee Mo Xie's fight. Aware that the enemy's soul pets were surrounding and attacking Mo Xie, Chu Mu's heart was even more apprehensive. However, what he needed to do the most right now was to remain calm!

"Mo Xie, run around the defensive fence!" Chu Mu glanced

around and spoke to Mo Xie after instantly locating a bit of stirring in the sandy ground.

Mo Xie was also aware of something, and promptly dashed away, speedily avoiding the attacks of the few chasing soul pets.

“Beng!!! Beng!!! Beng!!!”

As Mo Xie was running, an incomparably sharp rattan prick abruptly thrust out of the nearby ground like a sharp sword!!

Mo Xie ran while constantly changing positions. She brushed right past the sharp rattan several times. The spectators outside the battlefield were invariably apprehensive!

“How repulsive, this crafty fox!!” The Thorny Demon’s trainer looked at the Moonlight Fox and swore under his breath.

Facing such concentrated rattan attacks, the Moonlight Fox was surprisingly completely uninjured-implying that its dodging ability was excessively strong!

Chu Mu and Mo Xie had encountered a Blood Rattan Demon in the jungle. The Blood Rattan Demon’s Blood Rattan Pierce attacks were much more concentrated than this Thorny Demon’s. That level of attack could only leave a few scrapes on Mo Xie’s body. Therefore, how could this slower and much sparser rattan attacks wound Mo Xie?!

“Mo Xie, change your location!”

Mo Xie had been revolving around the defensive fense in a run. After running for about half the time they had spent so far on the battlefield, Mo Xie suddenly used the defensive fence to jump high into the air!

“Hong!!”

Underneath Mo Xie, the Nido Monster’s heavy body resolutely slammed into the defensive netting and suddenly a burst of irregular metallic sounds rang out!

Meanwhile, Mo Xie proceeded to fly above the Nido Monster’s body in a fine arc while beautifully dodging the charge attack. Instantly, a wave of gasps was heard from outside the battlefield.

After gracefully landing onto the ground, she suddenly rushed towards the center of the battlefield. Whilst running, her silhouette immediately turned blurry. Indistinctly, one was able to make out three malevolent Moonlight Foxes moving on the sandy field as fast as lightning.

“Sou sou sou!!”

The Barbaric Dog was fundamentally unable to discern the actual Moonlight Fox, and it was unable to withstand her attack!

The three silhouettes proceeded to pass by the completely

dumbfounded Barbaric Dog. The stage nine Barbaric Dog simply did not have any reaction as a bloody streak appeared on his body!

The dog's belly was ripped apart, the intestinal innards of the Barbaric Dog were exposed; it let out a painful howl that instantly rang out over the battlefield's exterior.

"Using the dodging technique, Moon Shadow, to attack... this Moonlight Fox's fighting ability is abnormal!"

When the Barbaric Dog's trainer saw his soul pet suffering from a fatal attack, his complexion immediately paled. Without the slightest hesitation, he recited an incantation and recalled his soul pet back into its soul pet space.

Beleaguered by 10 soul pets. Even in this situation, the Moonlight Fox was unexpectedly still able to dispose of two opponents. This sort of imposing demeanor instantly caused the atmosphere in the entire battle arena to surge!

"Why hasn't the Moonlight Fox's master recalled his soul pet? Having already killed a Flame Tail and Barbaric Dog, this person's strength definitely ranks within the top ten!"

"That peon still doesn't have an intention of recalling. Could it be that this brat wants to fight one versus ten?!"

Previously, the people outside the battlefield thought that Chu Mu didn't recall Mo Xie because he wanted to persevere for a while

longer in order to assert his strength as one of the foremost. However, as the fight continued on, everyone shockingly discovered that the Moonlight Fox didn't seem like it was barely holding on. Instead, it seemed like an intelligent fox that circuitously and perceptively outflanked numerous soul pets. It was constantly searching for the perfect opportunity to viciously hunt and kill!!

Fighting one against ten!! How could this sort of imposing style keep the thousands of people outside the arena calm?! The decisive murderous aura had already shaken the entire arena!!

Chapter 58: Battle Awn - Reveal Of Strength

“Fighting one against ten. Truly laughable. In these next seconds I’ll kill you and won’t leave your corpse intact!!” Wang Keluo felt that the atmosphere outside the field was beginning to surge due to the Moonlight Fox. Having the spotlight stolen from him, he immediately and angrily ordered his Umbra to target Mo Xie!

Mo Xie was still running as her shadow was cast by the lighting above. Following a dark aura that flitted around the shadow’s surroundings, a dagger-like black object suddenly appeared and stabbed towards the speedy shadow from above!

When this strange phenomenon occurred, just as the black shadow dagger stabbed into Mo Xie’s shadow, her body seemed to have been nailed, and her movement came to a sudden halt!

“Shadow Stalk!!”

The strange technique appeared again, causing everyone to immediately reveal an expression of shock.

Dark attributed soul pets could be considered relatively rare, and their techniques were incomparably strange. It was extremely difficult to defend against them!

Seeing this scene, Chu Mu wasn’t flustered in the slightest. Instead, he maintained his cool and swept his gaze out over the battlefield.

“Mo Xie, use Flame Awn to attack the Umbra!” Chu Mu immediately said.

“Mo Xie’s body was paralyzed, but she could still use her magic. Quickly, Mo Xie locked onto the shadow cluster like soul pet. A captivating red fire suddenly ignited in her two silver eyes

The fire radiated amidst the gradually darkening battlefield, and the scorching Flame Awn precisely struck the turbid shadow soul pet. Instantly, a red and luminous wound appeared on the Umbra’s body!

“Yi!!” The Umbra let out a devilish cry, and its body began to dissipate a bit. It seemed like it was going to be burned into the nonexistence by the Flame Awn’s scorching heat!

“Flame awn, this Moonlight Fox can also control fire abilities!!!”

“I didn’t see incorrectly, right? It seemed to actually be Flame Awn!”

Such a striking fire’s radiance appeared, conjuring a burst of shocked noises outside of the battlefield! Previously, many people were curious as to how the Moonlight Fox was able to ignore the fire. After having just watched it perform a fire technique, they instantly felt incomparably stunned!

The Moonlight Fox was a combination of both beast and demon

attributes. Its body fundamentally didn't have a trace of fire lineage. Under normal circumstancesm there was no way for it to possess a fire ability. The only possible way for the Moonlight Fox to obtain the fire attribute was for it to undergo soul crystal training. Moreover, this would also strengthen the fire attribute!

A single soul crystal, even if it was a first grade soul crystal, had an exorbitant price. Furthermore, there was no guarantee of success during training. Nobody thought that in a fight between peons, they would unexpectedly see a soul pet who been trained with a soul crystal successfully to gain control of the fire ability!

No matter if it was the opponent, teammate or even the people of authority who wielded power over Cyan Nightmare Island, their expression right now was incomparably stupefied. An ornamental soul pet whose race's rank was near the bottom of the servant class was still trained to such an extent. For a brief moment, the apathetic youth standing outside the battlefield became the entire arena's focal point!

"It seems that the strongest will be chosen from this person called Chu Mu, and Zi Shen. Wang Keluo possesses a relatively strong soul pet, but has many problems when using it." said the Island Master slowly.

The other subordinate island masters profusely nodded their heads. They could all see that this youth's Moonlight Fox had a strength that significantly surpassed soul pets of the same stage.

As for Cao Y,i who was using soul force to control Chu Mu's spirit, his face turned ashen. He originally thought that Wang

Keluo's Umbra would easily dispatch that fox, but right now it had unexpectedly been wounded by the Flame Awn!

Although he harbored intense jealousy and envy towards Chu Mu, Cao Yi had no choice but to admit that Chu Mu's Moonlight Fox truly was strong beyond reason.

"Make your Hunting Wolf attack! What are you doing standing there distracted?!!" When Wang Keluo saw that his Umbra had suffered an injury, his calm and confident demeanor immediately disappeared, and he lost control over his emotions as he yelled at the adjacent peon!

The peon who controlled the Hunting Wolf abruptly sobered up. Just now the Moonlight Fox's Flame Awn had truly stunned everyone-even these peons had become a bit absent-minded.

After the Umbra suffered a wound from the fire, the black dagger on Mo Xie's shadow dissipated into black smoke, which rose into the air, allowing Mo Xie to recover her freedom.

However, just as she recovered her freedom, the Hunting Wolf appeared in front of Mo Xie and performed Ripping Claws, its claws swiping towards her body.

A particular lustre suddenly appeared on Mo Xie's gently flitting fur. In the instant that the soft fur suffered the attack, it suddenly turned incomparably tough. The stage eight Hunting Wolf's Ripping Claw streaked across Mo Xie's body, but only managed to leave a very light wound!

Second stage Annealed Woolen Fur made Mo Xie's defense increase by a large margin. The stage eight Hunting Wolf didn't manage to fully strike Mo Xie, and it was fundamentally unable to cause much harm to her.

"What happened? Why didn't it suffer an injury? That Hunting Wolf evidently struck it."

"Second Stage Annealed Woolen Fur! This... is this actually a Moonlight Fox?!" Perceptive people immediately discovered the answer to the question.

The Flame Awn's shock had just settled when a new round of consternation swept through the crowd again. All of the foremen and peons could no longer believe that this creature was a Moonlight Fox!

A definite discrepancy in a species' rank was reflected by the growth of the body parts used to fight. For instance, a Moonlight Fox which was a speed type demon attributed soul pet, would have defensive fur that was extremely lacking. Even if it had reached the third phase, it would be very difficult for its fur to reach the second stage. If its aptitude was even slightly lacking, then it was possible for its fur to not have reached the second stage when it was at the fourth phase.

A Moonlight Fox's defensive fur reaching the second initial stage when it was at the second phase fourth stage; unless this Moonlight Fox had been fed a defensive type soul pet soul core,

there was no way for this situation to exist!

Chu Mu hadn't conducted precise tests to discover Mo Xie's aptitude, but he knew that Mo Xie, who possessed a mutated species lineage, meant that every aspect of Mo Xie's properties had unreasonable innate skill. If she didn't have such aptitude that surpassed an ordinary Moonlight Fox, how could she continue to ceaselessly undergo species mutations?!

The stage eight Hunting Wolf lifted its claws and its two wolf eyes stared at Mo Xie. However, it held a blank expression. Perhaps this Hunting Wolf believed its claws should have already ripped apart this small thing's body...

After suffering an attack, Mo Xie's anger immediately shifted towards the stage eight Hunting Wolf. A second phase fourth stage aura was fully released and completely suppressed this creature with a body larger than herself.

"Mo Xie, don't counterattack. Use Dark Assault to run!!" Suddenly, Mo Xie transmitted a message to her.

Although Mo Xie was extremely mad at the Hunting Wolf, she didn't have the slightest hesitation towards Chu Mu's orders. She proceeded to ignore the Hunting Wolf and quickly fled towards the edge of the battlefield!

Just as Mo Xie used double the speed to leave her original location, a whistling tornado abruptly swept across from the Hunting Wolf's location. Mo Xie's tail was engulfed by the

tornado, but she managed to forcibly escape from the tornado's range. As for the stage eight Hunting Wolf, it let out a miserable cry and was flung into the air!

"Ahwuwu!!"

The Hunting Wolf was tossed five to six meters up into the air. Once the tornado reached the defensive netting, the Hunting Wolf's body resolutely smashed into the defensive net, whereby it heavily fell onto the ground, its body full of bloodstains!

"Idiot, how are you controlling your Wind Fairy?!" The Hunting Wolf's trainer was livid. He angrily pointed towards the Wind Fairy's owner and began yelling.

Chapter 59: declaration Of Battle, The Fire Of War Burns!

“Shut up! Tell your trash wolf to get out of the way!” The owner of the Wind Fairy belittlingly glanced at the Hunting Wolf’s owner. Paying no more attention to him, he immediately controlled his Wind Fairy to chase after Mo Xie.

“Idiot, how could your Wind Fairy hope to catch up to that Fox’s speed? Cast Wind Riding on the Nido Beast!” Wang Keluo ferociously glared at Sun Li, the owner of the Wind Fairy who damaged its own teammates.

The Wind Fairy’s owner Sun Li expressed a hint of hatred, but grudgingly commanded his Wind Fairy to cast Wind Riding in order to increase the speed of the sluggish Nido Beast.

Nido Beast, as a pure attack and defense organism, had a burst of speed after being imbued with Wind Riding. Its fighting strength immediately became very terrifying; its entire rock-covered, bovine form locked onto Mo Xie and began to charge.

Wind started broiling around as sand was strewn everywhere. Just as Mo Xie was about to dodge to the side, two thorny vines sprouted from the ground and created spiky vine webs on either side of Mo Xie!

Before Mo Xie could think of a countermeasure, rows upon rows of spikes abruptly fell from the sky. The black, spike-covered Thorny Demon Grass’s AOE ability fell like a thunderstorm

towards the area where Mo Xie was locked up!

Mo Xie's fur instantly became tough, but with such a dense coverage, her body was still pricked slightly!

The Thorny Demon Grass's ability couldn't cause too much harm to Mo Xie. What was really terrifying was the Nido Beast's charge attack. This time Mo Xie was completely stuck in the Nido Beast's charge with nowhere to dodge!

"Mo Xie, meet it face on!!"

With nowhere to dodge, staying in place would only cause her to withstand an even harsher attack. Chu Mu decisively chose to rush towards it instead.

Mo Xie's body tensed up and abruptly dashed forwards, directly into the Nido Beast who was four times bigger than her!!

With the vast area of the Nido Beast's charge, even Moon Shadow would've been futile-all three shadows would've been hit. Chu Mu didn't tell Mo Xie to use Moon Shadow to evade the attack, but rather directly issued a command to attack.

"Blood Rending Claw!"

In the process of running, Mo Xie suddenly extended her coldly glinting claws and approached the massive Nido Beast directly with her second rank late stage claws. She then ripped a shocking,

bloody line across the Nido Beast's head!

A Nido Beast's head was similar to a three horned statue, hard and sturdy!

However, as the bloody glint passed by, a crack appeared on its statue-like head, spreading quickly throughout. Immediately after, the entire exoskeleton of the head shattered, falling from the Nido Beast's head!

"Beng!!"

Although she hit the Nido Beast, its horns still hit Mo Xie. Her abdomen caved in as her body flew up ten meters. Her petite body flipped through the air helplessly……

"Ao!!!"

The Nido Beast rose its shattered head and let out an excruciating roar. After this roar, the Nido Beast's hard head, as if collapsed, violently ruptured!!

Immediately, the bovine-like roar rolled through the silent stadium, echoing off the vast walls!

Known for its defense, especially in its skull area, the Nido Beast's skull still got shattered by one claw of the Moonlight Fox? This scene was both shocking and unbelievable!

The appearance of the Blood Rending Claw was the main reason the entire stadium fell silent. At this moment, the deep-rooted stereotypes of the Moonlight Foxes being merely an ornamental pet were absolutely broken. Who could still believe that a Moonlight Fox that could shatter a Nido Beast's head was only a little ornamental pet?

Mo Xie's body fell from the skies, skidding on the ground until it reached the edge of the protection shield. Seeing Mo Xie rammed by the charge, Chu Mu's heart was torn with pain. A wrath started blazing within his body like a violent fire!

Chu Mu's grave face was filled with resolution and tenacity, his eyes full of anger and fighting spirit. Clenching his jaw, he directly locked his own Soul Remembrance in combat with Cao Yi's Mental Shackles, and his resentment fuelled his soul and unyielding spirit to batter Cao Yi's mental world!!

Cao Yi's expression changed. At that moment, he could feel the powerful mental attacks that Chu Mu was making. These mental attacks had the power of a Spirit Soldier!

Mo Xie rammed into the edge of the protective shield. Slowly standing up, a trace of blood was already seeping from her mouth, but her eyes were fixed on Chu Mu……

Strangely, the emotions revealed by Mo Xie's silver pupils were identical to that of Chu Mu's-both were filled with wrath, and both were fuelled by the strongest of fighting intents!

Chu Mu and Mo Xie were interlinked by heart. When Chu Mu withstood immense pressure to fight against Cao Yi's Remembrance, it also caused Mo Xie's dignity as someone strong to become even more intense!

"Mo Xie, moonlight!"

While battling Cao Yi's spirit, Chu Mu still hadn't forgotten that Mo Xie was fighting for him, and he forcefully maintained his link with Mo Xie!

"Let's see how long your Soul Power can last!!" Cao Yi's face contorted with anger. The power displayed by Chu Mu was already completely beyond his expectations, but this only reaffirmed his resolve to kill Chu Mu!

Night had fallen on the island. Wailing winds whistled past, shepherding the dark clouds in the distance. The frigid, silver moonlight spilled onto the world, landing on the middle of the entire stadium, like sprites dancing and bathing in the light, spry and lively, beckoning for the darling of the moon to come over!

Mo Xie stood up, her eyes shining with resolve. Suddenly speeding up, she swiftly swept through the thorny vines set up by the Bramble Demon, dashing towards the middle of the sandy battleground!

"Don't let it get near the moonlight!!" Wang Keluo suddenly remembered the species ability of the Moonlight Fox - Moon

Essence. Watching Mo Xie approach the moonlight with blazing speeds, he immediately cried out!

The Ninth Stage Du Jue and the Eighth Stage Scarlet Scorpion immediately appeared in front of Mo Xie. The Du Jue casted Piercing Drill while the Scarlet Scorpion waved its chain-like stinger to attack Mo Xie!

“Huhuhuhu!!”

Just after Mo Xie evaded the attacks from the Du Jue and Scarlet Scorpion, the Wind Fairy’s Whirlwind rolled towards the area!

“Mo Xie, Dark Assault!”

Although Mo Xie was already on the verge of exhaustion, she cast Dark Assault while clenching her teeth. With her previous speed and trajectory, Mo Xie would have definitely been tossed up by the Whirlwind. After casting Dark Assault, however, Mo Xie’s speed instantly increased. Under everyone’s bewildered gazes, she scraped past the edge of the raging Whirlwind, and reached the middle of the battlefield!

The cold and dismal Moonlight was unknowingly veiled by a layer of clouds, causing the moonlight to soften. This clean and beautiful light bathed onto Mo Xie’s body, as if adding a layer of silvery, ornate armour onto this beautiful and demonically charming Moonlight Fox.

The lighter wounds on her body started slowly healing, and the abdominal wounds caused by the Nido Beast's charge were also distinctly changing.

Moonlight was a Moonlight Fox's best recovery method. The longer it bathed in it, the faster its wounds would heal. Most importantly, under the moonlight, Mo Xie's physical strength was swiftly recovering as well!

"Wuwuwu!!! Wuwuwu!!!"

Standing in the silver light, Mo Xie arrogantly raised her head, howling again and again towards the moon. The mottled shadows casted by the moonlight shaped this cold-hearted fox into a black crescent scythe!

The howling echoed throughout the battlefield-proud and imposing. From the sound, people could hear that it was the Moonlight Fox's declaration of battle to all the rest of the soul pets!!

Declaration of battle! A declaration of battle towards the remaining six soul pets!

Mo Xie's unrestrained recklessness again silenced the crowd!

No one would have thought that a Moonlight Fox, known for its beauty and glamor, would have such a wild and demonically imposing side!

Chapter 60: Slaughtering Everyone Present (1)

"You guys... what are you guys getting distracted for, quickly get rid of it!!!"

Every soul pet had been stunned by the tiny Moonlight Fox. Wang Keluo's anger had also completely erupted as he roared at the other peons!

The others had also, in a sudden moment of realization, understood that not only was this battle not over, it was just beginning! The beginning of a bout of slaughter!!

Indeed, being immersed in the moonlight caused Mo Xie's strength to increase once more. Mo Xie, who had already completely revealed her indignation and killing intent, did not plan on letting off any one of the soul pets.

"Mo Xie, Moonblade!!"

Even though he was continuously resisting Cao Yi's mental attack, he was still able to maintain his calm. His two bloodshot eyes that were suffering from the oppressive mental pressure still closely watched the battlefield!

With their thoughts interconnected, Chu Mu's unyielding willpower was the only thing keeping Mo Xie's fighting blaze aflame!

At this moment, Mo Xie's eyes released a demonic silver light which instantly locked onto the Scarlet Scorpion and Du Jue!

Mo Xie slowly lowered her head and her four limbs slightly crouched!

"Huhu~~"

Like a silver colored wind sweeping past, Mo Xie instantaneously charged forth. Her vigorous body was completely outstretched as she neared the Scarlet Scorpion and Du Jue. The beautiful, silver body, under extreme speed, unexpectedly transformed into a silver moonblade that resembled the reflection of the moon on a dark night!

The silver moonblade split open the air and swept right through the Du Jue's body, leaving a dividing line down the Du Jue's durable horn, and caused its entire body to split into two halves.

This cleaving, silver moonblade dripping in blood did not stop there. After rolling on the floor, it followed the ground's flat surface to move yet again.

The Scarlet Scorpion standing behind the Du Jue was planning on swinging its iron chain-like tail across, but just as it began brandishing it, the root of the tail was chopped off like a hot knife through butter!!

The black colored blood was tinged with a few corrosive properties, as it spilled out from the Scarlet Scorpion's tail and splattered onto the two bloody Du Jue's corpse halves. Traces of corrosive smoke drifted up into the air from the Du Jue's corpse!

The Scarlet Scorpion's trainer was completely stunned. His facial expression was incomparably lifeless as he gazed at his wounded soul pet. For a moment, he unexpectedly forgot to recall it. By the time he was aware of that savagely cold fox's killing intent, and tried to apprehensively chant the incantation to recall his Scarlet Scorpion, a demonic Flame Awn had already flared up!

The scorching radiance quickly struck the Scarlet Scorpion's wounded tail and instantaneously ignited its black corrosive blood.

The Scarlet Scorpion's blood possessed a dark attributed corrosive ability. Fire was naturally darkness' weakness. After Mo Xie used Flame Awn, the flames followed up through the Scarlet Scorpion's blood vessels and proceeded to burn the insides of its body!!!

"Zhi!!! Zhi!!! Zhi!!!"

The Scarlet Scorpion frantically twisted and flailed its body around. Group after group of flames burned their way through its body's external carapace and, within a few seconds, the center of the battlefield was a crowd of raging flames.

Flickering in the middle of the battlefield, the flames left a deep impact on the two incomparably anguished faces. Looking at their

soul pets' corpses, the two peons had completely lifeless expressions; their gaze did not move even the slightest bit...

The Scarlet Scorpion's burned corpse had an unpleasant smell that began to permeate the air. Only, currently, there wasn't anyone who cared about the smell of the corpse.

From the very beginning-cutting off the Flame Tail's head, ripping open the Barbaric Dog's stomach, causing the Hunting Wolf to be tossed around by the wind element, completely disintegrating the Nido Monster's skull-until now, where she directly cleaved the Du Jue's into two halves and burned the Scarlet Scorpion's living body to death from the inside, the damages counted up to six soul pets...

Liu Zhen's peons had ten soul pets with considerable battle strength. However, even under an extreme disadvantage of one versus ten, the completely underestimated Moonlight Fox had injured two and killed four!

"Is this even a peon fight still??!!!"

"This soul pet is simply conducting a massacre on the battlefield!!!"

Over the past tens of years, Cyan Nightmare had maintained the tradition of peon fights. Nevertheless, in recent years, there was no peon with his or her soul pet that could cause today's unanimously shocking situation amongst everyone present!

Having killed four and heavily injuring two more, killing the seventh and eighth soul pets wasn't impossible!

For some unknown reason, at the moment, everyone felt that the furious Mo Xie who waged war wanted to slaughter everyone present. Moreover, it wasn’t because she wanted to obtain an even higher ranking that she persisted!

Presently, the four soul pets remaining on the battlefield were Wang Keluo’s Umbra, Sun Li’s Wind Fairy, the Bramble Demon, and the Thorny Demon Grass. Amongst these four soul pets, aside from the Umbra, none of them possessed strong enough strength that could directly resist Mo Xie!

“Mo Xie, be careful of the needles, focus that Bramble Demon!”

Chu Mu’s orders signified his intentions of carrying out this battle’s massacre until the very end!

After receiving the order, Mo Xie jumped into the air and dodged the Thorny Demon Grass’ falling raindrop-like needles. Her gaze fixated on the Bramble Demon which had fled away!

Realizing that Mo Xie wanted to deal with the weak Bramble Demon, Wang Keluo gritted his teeth. In an incomparably angry mood, he ordered his Umbra to charge towards Mo Xie.

The Umbra’s speed couldn’t be considered slow, and its body was like a specter that floated in front of Mo Xie. The Umbra’s arms

suddenly transformed into a sharp sword that slashed towards Mo Xie's body!

"Charm!"

Mo Xie's silver pupils immediately released a dazzling radiance. Charm's line of sight penetrated the Umbra's pitch black eye sockets!

The Umbra also belonged to the demonic attribute and Charm wasn't too effective towards it. After using it, the Umbra only lost focus for a second, making the long sword in its hand hesitate for a bit.

However, what Chu Mu wanted was this small hesitation!

"Mo Xie, Dark Assault, ignore the Umbra!"

Mo Xie's body astonishingly morphed into a flowing silver light that passed through the Umbra's distinctly frightening sword. Without hesitation, she rushed straight towards the Bramble Demon!!!

Seeing the terrifying fox charge towards its Bramble Demon, the peon was instantly flustered. Mo Xie's speed was too fast. It so fast that this peon simply didn't know what skill to make his Bramble Demon use in order to defend itself!

"Shua!!"

Efficient and ruthless!

Mo Xie's claws once again ripped apart the opponent's body. Even if the Bramble Demon's trainer had already chanted the recalling incantation, the only thing he would recall would be a Bramble Demon's corpse!

"Mo Xie, Moon Shadow!"

Surveying the entire situation, Chu Mu kept his calm and alertness the entire time!

After ripping apart the Bramble Demon's body, Mo Xie's body instantly turned blurry and three faintly discernable reflections appeared!

"Pupupu~"

The moment Moon Shadow was used, razor sharp needles fell from the sky once more and rapidly covered the area Mo Xie was just in!!!

"Huhuhu"

Before the needle attack had finished, the Wind Fairy's tornado appeared again. The six meter large tornado seemed to have blocked off all of Mo Xie's escape routes!

“Mo Xie, Flame Awn, dispose of that Thorny Demon Grass!”

With nowhere to dodge, Mo Xie simply didn’t evade anymore. Instead, she used her body to resist the needle attack as a demonic lustre sparked in her pupils!

A smear of red quickly rushed out, and the Thorny Demon Grass fifty meters away continued to ceaselessly release needles, completely ignorant of the fatal fire that was coming its way!

Plant Kingdom soul pets had extremely strong control abilities and frequently could control the entire battlefield. However, they had a fatal weakness-a fear of fire!!

The reason why Chu Mu had hoped for Mo Xie posses the fire attribute was because the killing and wounding capabilities of fire was strong. Moreover, the fire attribute could restrain many soul pets.

To other soul pets, Flame Awn would only cause a surface burn wound, but to the Thorny Demon Grass, it would cause an extremely terrifying burn!

Chapter 61: Slaughtering Everyone Present (2)

The Thorny Demon Grass was merely stage seven so the needle attack only slightly damaged Mo Xie. On the other hand, Mo Xie's Flame Awn was fatal to the Thorny Demon Grass. The instant the flame swept across the Thorny Demon Grass' body, it instantly caught ablaze!

"Huhu"

The flaming wound began to quickly spread, and it rapidly proliferated all over the Thorny Demon Grass' body!

The Thorny Demon Grass' trainer had a wave of panic and hastily recited an incantation to recall the ablaze Thorny Demon Grass back into the soul pet space. Nevertheless, just as he recalled it into the soul pet space, the body of the Thorny Demon Grass' trainer flushed red!

"Idiot, don't tell me that you don't know that even if you recall your soul pet into the space, the fire will continue to persist?!" Liu Zhen, who actually did not want to watch anymore, suddenly opened his mouth and let out a rain of curses.

The Thorny Demon Grass' trainer exposed an expression of pain. He no longer had the soul power to resummon his soul pet. However, inside the space, the blazing fire on the Thorny Demon Grass' body grew increasingly fierce. Ultimately, the flames suddenly and weirdly spurted out of the peon's mouth.

“Ah!!! Ah!!! Ah!!!”

An eminently painful shriek reverberated around the entire arena. From within the space, the ignited flames spread to the peon’s brain and immediately turned his brain into mush!!

Previously, the Scarlet Scorpion’s blood had been ignited inside its body before being burned into ashes. Right now, however, it was a living human whose brains had been burned before the flames exited all five of his orifices. Such an appalling scene made even the onlooking foremen, whose natural disposition was cruel and cold, to not help but suck in a breath of cold air!!

As a soul pet trainer, it was important to have an extensive knowledge of soul pets. Most of the soul pets on Cyan Nightmare Island were shipped over from the continent. People who understood everything about soul pets, like Chu Mu who had received education on plethoras of soul pets from a young age, numbered relatively few. This peon very evidently had this fatal ignorance. He believed that recalling a soul pet into his soul pet space would extinguish the fire. He didn't realize, however, that the soul pet space was made up of soul power. If it were to be ignited, it was the same as his own soul being ignited!

This once living peon had been burned to death, but nobody would pity such a soul pet master who didn’t understand even the most basic of knowledge. Here, the only ending for such weaklings was death!

“Huhuhuhu”

The tornado howled, and sand rapidly swirled around. In the midst of this turbidity, Mo Xie’s body was crouched. Her two sharp claws were completely buried in the ground so as to prevent her body from being carried away by the tornado!!

Her silver fur was disheveled and fluttering about within the tornado. Mo Xie’s small body was still unable to withstand the tornado’s strength, and her body was gradually lifted off the ground. She was immediately thrown high into the air!

“Beng!!”

Once the tornado swept everything to the defensive fence, it immediately dissipated. Mo Xie smashed into the defensive fence and let out a painful howl as she fell from a height of five meters!

Mo Xie rocked her body and stood up from the disarrayed sand. Currently, her silver body was covered in filth and bloodstains. From head to toe, her body was riddled with scars.

Even in such a situation, a will to fight still raged on within Mo Xie’s two silver eyes!

“Mo Xie, be careful of Wind Assault, and get rid of the Wind Fairy first!” Seeing that Mo Xie was already riddled with scars, Chu Mu’s heart became even more heavy. However, he knew that tenaciously fighting was the only way for Mo Xie to have a chance

of living!

After being injured, Mo Xie's movements had evidently become slower. The Wind Fairy's Wind Assault swept across Mo Xie's body and her bloody fur immediately flew off, ripping off a piece!

Nonetheless, Mo Xie's body didn't waver in the slightest and her silver pupils gazed closely at the Wind Fairy!

A display of silver radiance washed down, and the clouds split apart, revealing the moon. Mo Xie abruptly rushed forth and ran in an arc gracefully. This arc just so happened to be where the moonlight's radiance washed down.

As long as she was immersed in moonlight, Mo Xie's fighting power would increase. In the shadows, Mo Xie's speed would decrease immensely , but the moment she stepped into an area with moonlight, her speed would suddenly increase. Once she returned to a dark area, she would already have enough momentum behind her!

"Wang Keluo, hurry up and make your Umbra protect my Wind Fairy!" Sun Li's eyes saw the ferocious killing fox rushing over and instantly spoke to Wang Keluo in an alarmed state.

"You don't need to say it!" Wang Keluo also knew that if the Wind Fairy were to die, his Umbra would face a predicament. After all, the weird Moonlight Fox not only possessed a fire attribute, but also had the ability to break seals. Thus, the dark attributed Umbra was completely restricted!

The Umbra quickly appeared in front of the Wind Fairy and under Wang Keluo's orders, its arm once again underwent an odd transformation, rapidly changing into a black shield!

The appearance of the black shield forced Mo Xie to change her positioning and she quickly ran around to the other side. However, Wang Keluo's commands weren't slow and he very rapidly made the Umbra change its position. From the beginning to the end, it protected the Wind Fairy, which could launch long ranged attacks.

Chu Mu made Mo Xie unceasingly change positions as he searched for an opportunity to attack. However, the Umbra's shadow shield defense was extremely secure. This, combined with the Wind Fairy, made it extremely difficult to unleash an attack.

Mo Xie's magic power had already been excessively used, and it would be very hard for her to use Flame Awn. Currently, she could only rely on the strength from being immersed in the moonlight to persevere in this fight!

"Mo Xie, do you see the moonlight next to the Umbra's side?!" Chu Mu said.

"Wuwuwu~~"

Mo Xie immediately discovered a ray of moonlight that had penetrated the clouds and shone next to the Umbra. The bright radiance fell on the Umbra's ugly body...

“Okay! Even if it has the shadow shield, what does it matter? Break it apart!”

“Wuwuwuwu!!!”

Mo Xie lifted her head and her body immediately rushed forth from under the moonlight. Dark Assault’s effect allowed her movement speed to momentarily increase, and within the motley moonlight she was like a powerful arrow flying along the ground!

“Huhuhuhu”

The Wind Fairy’s Wind Assault was used once more. However, Mo Xie was so stubbornly insistent on attacking that she had no intention of dodging. Instead she let the sharp Wind Assault rip apart her fur and, without hesitation, increased her speed!!

In the shadows, Mo Xie leapt up. She didn’t jump over the shadow shield’s height but rather faced the shadow shield head on!!

A group of silver moon rays silently illuminated the cold silhouette filled with killing intent. In a flash, its claws dyed in fresh blood were fully extended!!

Crimson red was blood. Silver pigments were the moon. Two striking colors astonishingly appeared in the shadowy area outside the group of moon rays, completely breaking open the dark!!

It was unclear whether it was Blood Rending Claw or Moon Blade, or perhaps a combination of the two, but the bloody, silver claws made an arc that slashed down towards the center of the shadow shield. The shadow shield was like a black surface of water and easily ripped apart!!

Chapter 62: Massacring The Entire Stadium (3)

The battlefield ground was filled with marks. Crimson blood flowed onto the sands, mixing in with the dirt.

A bloody scent emanated yet again throughout the air. The icy moonlight fully spilled down, and caused the entire stadium to seem even more sinister and bloody!

Sun Li and Wang Keluo stood there in a daze. Witnessing first hand their own soul pets ripped into two, it felt like their hearts were torn as well. All their arrogance and confidence from before was instantly crippled. Their hearts sank as they felt like they had fallen into icy pits, bottomless yet frigid!

While the two peons' mental worlds completely collapsed, Mo Xie's massacre completely stunned the thousands of spectators on the island. Even the Cyan Nightmare Island Master showed disbelief in his expression!

1V10, but the results-a total massacre!

On the entire empty and bloody battlefield, there was only one detached and demonic Moonlight Fox left. It was covered in cuts and bruises, but it was still filled with striking killing intent. This sort of calmness, decisiveness, and ruthlessness in the slaughter it conducted was like a hunter under a dark moon. Once the fire of war raged on, none would survive!

From initial unexpectedness to astonishment and incomprehension, and finally to shock and disbelief, Mo Xie's fight could be said to have overthrown everyone's previous ridiculing misconceptions about Moonlight Foxes, demonstrating this low ranking soul pets' enormous potential. Should they desire to sing, they would amaze the world with their first song!

(TL: idiom saying someone who usually doesn't stand out, but would suddenly dazzle the world with their first action)

Chu Mu's teammates were always standing not far behind him. They all competed together in survival along with Chu Mu before finally entering this stadium. Seeing this entire process, the tidal waves within their hearts were never calm. Once the battle finally ended, they suddenly realized that the proud and aloof teen standing in front of them was like the demonically calm Moonlight Fox. He would wear a Pitiful Appearance but in the most crucial situation, he bursted out with astonishing strength, shocking everyone!

Cao Yi and Liu Zheng, the two meticulously planning subordinate island owners, looked at each other. They could never have predicted that something as unlikely as this scenario would happen!

Liu Zhen had ten peons under him in total. He needed to rely on these ten new members to strengthen and reinforce his position on this Cyan Nightmare island. But after this battle, eight out of his ten peons lost their soul pets. With their now dead soul pets, these eight peons were now utter trash, without a chance to escape the soul eating of their Cyan Nightmares!

“Trash! A bunch of trash! A BUNCH OF TRASH! What is the meaning of you pieces of trash living?!!” Liu Zheng’s rage completely erupted, going as far as starting to chant an incantation!

A light blue light shined onto the floor. Within the glow a sinister Hunting Wolf appeared!!!

The moment the Fourth Phase Hunting Wolf appeared, a tyrannical scent swirled within the arena. The terrifying Hunting Wolf let out a heart-stopping howl and actually began to pounce straight towards the living peons!!

“Ahh!! Ahh!!”

“Ah! Ah! Ahhh!”

Immediately, bleak screams sounded. Every extension of the Fourth Phase Hunting Wolf’s claw meant another peon being ripped apart, blood and flesh mingling, creating another gory and brutal scene. Even the other foremen, who were accustomed to killing, couldn’t help but drew in a breath at the sight of this!

This island master Liu Zheng was utterly mad, commanding his scary Fourth Phase Hunting Wolf to kill frenzily. Blood splattered onto the field as limbs rolled everywhere!

Within the entire stadium, no one stopped Liu Zhen’s crazed

slaughtering. He was the peon's direct foreman, so he had full control over their lives. Let alone the fact that the moment those peons had lost their soul pets, they were already dead people. Nightmare Palace had always been this cruel!

No matter the two peons with soul pets still or those who lost their soul pet, Liu Zhen's Hunting Wolf ripped all of them to shreds, leaving only a trembling and pale Wang Keluo!

"Summon your nightmare and continue to fight!!" Liu Zhen didn't even glance at the corpses, watching Wang Keluo coldly and said with a commanding tone!

"If I summon the Nightmare, I won't have anymore soul power to feed……"

"Shut up, you can choose to die right now instead then!" Liu Zhen roared. Immediately, the Fourth Phase Hunting Wolf, emanating a killing aura, pounced in front of Wang Keluo and bared its teeth. From between its teeth, the blood of the previous peons flowed outwards!

A cold and deadly aura affected his entire body. Under this situation, Wang Keluo didn't dare to show any disobedience, so with trembling hands he started chanting an incantation!!

Wang Keluo was already pale. As he chanted his incantation, his body was wrapped by a will-o-wisp-like cyan flame.

The cyan flame slowly peeled off Wang Keluo's body and imprinted onto the ground, creating a cyan colored flame symbol!!

The moment the cyan soul pact appeared, the nearby temperature unexpectedly dropped, and a frigid, evil aura spread recklessly, carried by the unrolling cyan flames!!

Second Phase Nightmare!!

All the foremen had Cyan Nightmares and could summon them for combat. But in the recent decade, there were very few peons who could summon their Cyan Nightmares just after surviving on a subordinate island, so the appearance of this Cyan Nightmare sparked another craze within the audience!!

Cyan Nightmare, a soul pet covered in cyan flames. Some even called it the devil who controls cyan soul flames. No one could control this arrogant, evil, terrifying, and cruel devil. It was a soul pet trainer's worst Nightmare!

A bizarre and frightening pair of horns, with cyan flaming eyes, it floated without need of legs, like a ghost on the floor. The Cyan Nightmare was entirely like the upper body of a dark knight, like an immortal ghost who abandoned half its body. It emanated a fierce evil energy. It symbolized darkness, death, and fear.

This was Chu Mu's first time witnessing a Cyan Nightmare's true appearance. Facing such a creature of utmost evil, even Chu Mu felt somewhat frightened.

“Jiejie!!”

A hair raising sound came out of it, sounding like a devil’s treacherous laugh. The moment the Cyan Nightmare was summoned onto the battlefield, it immediately locked onto the only soul pet left on the battlefield-Mo Xie.

Mo Xie also stared at the devil who made her feel slightly disgusted yet fearful. Realizing that the Cyan Nightmare was unnoticeably creeping towards her, Mo Xie wanted to move, but couldn’t squeeze any energy out of her body anymore.

Mo Xie was too tired. That battle had pushed her to the extremes of her stamina. Facing this ghostlike devil’s approach, other than using her eyes to show her unyielding will, she couldn’t do anything else!

Chapter 63: White Flame, Chu Mu's Anger

The Cyan Nightmare's movements were extremely strange as it quickly appeared in front of Mo Xie. It suddenly and immediately used its claws filled with cyan colored fire to lift up Mo Xie. It then fiercely smashed her towards the ground!

"Beng!!"

The terrifying devil fire immediately ignited Mo Xie's body. Her body rubbed against the ground, and she unceasingly rolled about until she rolled up to defensive fence where Chu Mu was standing!

Although the devil fire didn't ignite Mo Xie's body and fur, Mo Xie was still in incomparable pain because the devil fire was burning her soul!

"Wuwuwu" Her nimble body was curled underneath the defensive fence as Mo Xie let out a painful groan.

Separated by mere fencing while seeing Mo Xie all covered with cuts and bruises and listening to her mournful and painful cries, the rage inside Chu Mu's belly had already ignited as it engulfed his entire self. It was as if it had burst out of his body!!

When Cao Yi saw that Mo Xie had been wounded, a smile rose on his face. After looking at Chu Mu who couldn't resist an longer, he didn't care if the island master found out and he frantically increased his mental pressure, causing Chu Mu to not even have the strength to conduct Mo Xie's fight!

An enormous pain shot through Chu Mu's body. This pain was even more painful and heart wrenching because his soul was being pierced. However, Chu Mu didn't feel anything. His two eyes looked as if they had been ignited, and any sort of mental suppression and pain was insignificant in front of his cold expression that was on the verge of breaking!

Chu Mu frantically let out his own soul power as if releasing the anger inside his heart. His jacket flapped unrestrainedly in the air, and his head full of disheveled long hair suddenly stood straight up!!

"Nie!! Nie!!"

Chu Mu didn't even open his mouth, but the sound of a devil weeping resounded from within his body, causing everyone watching to tremble with fear!

As if it had felt Chu Mu's most intense rage, the White Nightmare inside Chu Mu's body unexpectedly awakened the second Chu Mu let go. This time, the White Nightmare wasn't hungry, but rather influenced by the torrential anger inside Chu Mu's heart. This anger seemed to transform into the most sinister form of demonic remembrance and surprisingly collided with Cao Yi's soul remembrance!

An ice cold aura of death instantly attacked Cao Yi, and his soul suffered from a wave of extremely deep trembling. Currently, he could sense that the feedback abruptly coming from Chu Mu

resembled an evil and cold resentment of death. This surge of mental force caused Cao Yi to feel as if the god of death was standing next to his ear, using its cold voice to recite an ode of soul burial!

The moment Cao Yi's face paled, the mental attack exerted towards Chu Mu momentarily collapsed, even causing Cao Yi to retreat quite a few steps. He sat on the ground in an incomparably wretched manner as if he had lost his soul!!

The instant Cao YI's mental pressure was relieved, Chu Mu's body and soul remembrance recovered their freedom just in time to see the Cyan Nightmare letting out a crafty smile as it approached Mo Xie!

Mo Xie's body was still being burned by the soul fire, and if he were to recall Mo Xie now, not only would Mo Xie's soul be immediately destroyed by the burning of the devil fire, but Chu Mu himself would also die.

Under such a crisis, Chu Mu immediately recited the incantation for the soul technique-Rapid Freeze!

A ball of cold ice appeared in Chu Mu's palm. Following the completion of the short incantation, the ice energy transformed into a line of ice that quickly spread over the defensive net!

The white, frosty ice rapidly covered the defensive net. Once it was completely covered, Chu Mu proceeded to use his body to ram against the defensive net!

“Beng!!”

The frozen defensive net wasn’t sturdy enough, and it was shattered by Chu Mu’s charge. Fragments of ice immediately sprayed all over the ground.

Ignoring the fragments that pierced his body, Chu Mu immediately rushed in front of Mo Xie and used his arm to embrace the scar-riddled Mo Xie into his bosom.

The devil fire had a weird effect of transmission. When Chu Mu’s body touched Mo Xie, the devil fire immediately transferred to Chu Mu’s body, and the pain of his soul burning now coursed through Chu Mu’s entire body.

However, this sort of pain was simply insignificant to Chu Mu. His eyebrows didn’t even crease. He embraced Mo Xie and slowly stood up while coldly glaring at the Cyan Nightmare!

The cyan colored devil fire burned on Chu Mu’s body for a moment before quickly dying out. This was because the instant Chu Mu looked at the Cyan Nightmare, the white colored devil fire around his body abruptly arose, and an eminently enormous sinister aura immediately engulfed the incomparably spacious battlefield!!

This reckless evil aura was incomparable to when the Cyan Nightmare had previously released its sinister aura. It was like a light breeze being compared to the wind from a storm!

Outside the arena, no matter if it were the foremen or the peons, or even the phase four savage Hunting Wolf, under the storm of this terrifying aura, their souls couldn't help but begin to tremble!!

"Nie!!"

The soul shaking sound of a devil weeping once again resounded throughout the arena and mournfully reverberated in the pitch black curtain of night, piercing into everyone's ears!

"White... White colored fire..."

"White Nightmare... White colored fire, White Nightmare!!"

The island master stood up from his seat. His gaze was incomparably shocked as he recognized the white colored fire burning on Chu Mu!

White Nightmare. It had to be a White Nightmare. In this world, aside from a White Nightmare, there wasn't any other living thing that could release such a terrifying aura of death!!!

The entire spacious battlefield only seemed to be occupied by the white colored flame on Chu Mu. By comparison, the Cyan Nightmare's devil fire was negligible!!

Chu Mu stood two meters apart from the Cyan Nightmare and

his two drastically different pupils suddenly released a dazzling Flame Awn!!

Soul Technique - Chong Mei!!

The fire of rage had already been ignited in his body. Facing the Cyan Nightmare that wanted to continue attacking Mo Xie, Chu Mu resolutely performed his strongest soul technique. Furthermore, it was a variation of Mo Xie's Flame Awn ability!

The Flame Awn was originally burning with red fire, but currently Chu Mu's pupils were ignited with white colored flames. Thus the Flame Awn released was a shocking pale white!

The pale white colored Flame Awn shot towards the Cyan Nightmare's body and a bunch of white colored flame specters immediately sparked on the Cyan Nightmare's body. They proceeded to break through the cyan colored flames and unexpectedly began spreading wildly!

A bunch of white colored devil fires surprisingly easily eliminated all the cyan devil fire. The Cyan Nightmare which had attacked Chu Mu's soul was currently experiencing the same pain of having one's soul being burned and it frantically let out a painful shout!

Following the burning of the white colored devil flame, the Cyan Nightmare's specter like body was completely transformed into ashes. Subsequently, a burst of violent wind arose and chaotically drifted above the battlefield...

The Cyan Nightmare's miserable shriek continued to linger. The second phase Cyan Nightmare's strength was eminently strong and was enough to contend against a third phase servant rank soul pet. However, it was still too late for this sort of powerful devil to use any abilities. Instead, it was transformed into nothingness by the white colored flame!

Chapter 64: Devil Fire's Flame Awn - Burning Cao Yi

"White Nightmare!! It's actually a White Nightmare!!"

"It's a White Nightmare which supposedly only Nightmare Palace core members should have!"

"How can a peon feed a White Nightmare?!!"

To these foremen, a Cyan Nightmare was already a terrifying Soul Pet. As for what was ranked above the Cyan Nightmare, there was an even more foreboding Blue Nightmare.

On the entire Cyan Nightmare Island, only the person who possessed the most power, the Island Master, had a Blue Nightmare. The process of feeding a Blue Nightmare was similarly established on top of the lives of a plethora of soul pet trainers. There were very few people who could completely feed a Blue Nightmare.

In the eyes of these Cyan Nightmare formen, a Blue Nightmare was already an existence way above what they could attain. Additionally, another rank above the Blue Nightmare was an even more horrifying White Nightmare!

The terror of a White Nightmare was something that the foremen could easily imagine! Inside the Nightmare Palace, any member who possessed a White Nightmare also controlled the

ultimate power throughout the entire Nightmare Palace!

“Nie!! Nie!!”

The soul shocking weeping sound of the devil continued to echo throughout the arena. It was very clear that the White Nightmare on Chu Mu’s body had only just entered into the second phase!

However, this second phase soul pet was able to release such an overwhelming aura that even a stage four Hunting Wolf would cower under its demonic aura. It’s originally malevolent and sinister appearance had completely vanished, and it simply didn’t dare approach Chu Mu even another half an inch!

The arena was eminently spacious, and everyone’s gaze was fixated on Chu Mu who stood aflame in devil fire within the center of the sandy battle arena.

Chu Mu was carrying Mo Xie and he currently he felt the torrential and raging white flame inside of his heart. His two eyes were locked onto Cao Yi, and he was itching to burn this despicable person into ashes!!

“Third remembrance Spirit Soldier, hmph hmph... What use is that. You soul power has already been used up. Next time, you have no choice but to use your own soul to feed your White Nightmare.” The slightly pale-faced Cao Yi barely managed to break into a cruel smile.

Chu Mu's state was very obvious. He didn't actually summon the White Nightmare. Instead, the White Nightmare had absorbed Chu Mu's negative energy and momentarily attached onto his body and soul. It then transformed its sinister energy into Chu Mu's strength.

"Third remembrance Spirit Soldier!!!"

Hearing Cao Yi say this, the nearby Feng Gu and other peons felt great waves within their hearts!

Could the reason as to why Chu Mu's strength was comparable to theirs was completely because of the existence of the White Nightmare, which was more horrifying than their Cyan Nightmares, inside his body ?!

They were all around the sixth remembrance Spirit Disciples. Chu Mu's strength was greater than theirs by a large amount!!

Chu Mu kept silent. That cold and sinister energy made the surrounding peons and foremen feel a chilliness seep into the depths of their souls!!

Suddenly, Chu Mu's two eyes were ignited and like a devil's torch, he unexpectedly conflagrated the pale devil fire!!!

Soul Technique-Chong Mei, Devil Fire Flame Awn

The white colored flame awn once again shot out from his eyes

and pierced into Cao Yi's body like two exposed and sharp swords!

Chu Mu’s attack was extremely quick and the somewhat despondent Cao Yi simply had no chance of dodging. The devil fire immediately began burning Cao Yi’s body!!

The white transparent fire unceasingly swayed like a weak fire, burning on Cao Yi’s body. This flame, however, didn’t harm Coa Yi’s skin, and could not be put out.

Nonetheless, Cao Yi whose entire face was pale from suffering the flames, opened his mouth and let out a hissing and painful scream!!!

“Fourth... Fourth remembrance! You... actually reached the fourth remembrance Spirit Soldier?!!”

Just previously, when they had confronted each other with their mind, Cao Yi was already certain that Chu Mu was a third remembrance Soul Soldier. However, currently, Chu Mu’s remembrance suddenly rose once more. Furthermore, it had received some sort of sinister energy and went into a surging phase!!

Cao Yi was a sixth remembrance Soul Soldier, so his mental strength could completely suppress Chu Mu’s. Nonetheless, after suffering from the White Nightmare’s Fear attack, it was extremely difficult for him to use any mental attacks against Chu Mu. Presently, Chu Mu’s soul remembrance had suddenly increased, and had surprisingly suppressed his soul remembrance!!

The white colored devil fire began to wildly burn Cao Yi's soul. Cao Yi's entire face was already contorted, and he incomparably and painfully kneeled on the ground whilst screaming and shouting!

Cao Yi possessed a strong soul remembrance, so using devil fire to directly burn away his soul was extremely hard to accomplish. However, this White Nightmare's soul fire was rather terrifying. Even if it could not incinerate one's soul to death, it would bring that person extremely unbearable pain. This sort of pain would make one rather wish for death!!

"I... I will... kill you..." Cao Yi raised his head, shuddered and spat out a few words.

The white colored devil fire continued to burn on Cao Yi's body. Cao Yi, with extreme difficulty, chanted an incantation and summoned his soul pet!

The deep blue colored pattern gradually appeared on the ground and in the midst of this indigo blue frost awn a soul pet full of malevolence quickly appeared !

Dire Wolf!!!

Cao Yi's second soul pet, Dire Wolf!!!

Its dark blue fur made it seem like its entire body was covered in

ice. Each piece of hair was as sharp as icicles, and a terrifyingly cold quickly pervaded the air following the Dire Wolf's howl!

"Attack it!! Attack it!!" Cao Yi laboriously yelled at his Dire Wolf.

The Dire Wolf stood twenty meters away from Chu Mu. The savage wolf attentively gazed at the terrifying aura of the White Nightmare. It unexpectedly didn't dare approach and Cao Yi angrily began shouting louder!

"Cao Yi, are you crazy?!" The Island Master stood up in a flash and indignantly roared at Cao Yi who was trying to attack Chu Mu.

Chu Mu's body possessed a White Nightmare, meaning that behind him had to be someone in Nightmare Palace who wielded great power. This sort of person definitely was not a normal peon. Thus, how could he be killed just because someone said he was going to kill him!

Cao Yi was currently unable to change the situation much. Killing Chu Mu had become the only thought in his head, and nothing could completely remove the rage in his heart.

Only, although Cao Yi was angry, his Dire Wolf was clearly afraid of the aura of Chu Mu's White Nightmare. It unexpectedly didn't dare approach Chu Mu. This made Cao Yi burst with anger, and he suddenly spit out blood despite his soul being injured.

"That thing is only at the second phase!! It hasn't even been...

been… completely summoned. You coward… kill him… I want you to kill him!!!" Cao Yi indignantly roared at his own soul pet!

After being yelled at by his trainer, the Dire Wolf finally summoned a bit of courage and started into a stride, charging towards Chu Mu!!

Seeing that Cao Yi had actually launched an attack, everyone was shocked once more. A high rank General Rank Dire Wolf, even if it was only at the third phase, had strength that was much stronger than Liu Zhen's fourth phase Hunting Wolf! How could a peon defend against this sort of soul pet!!

No one expected Chu Mu, who had a White Nightmare adhered to him, to suddenly attack Cao Yi. Even less people thought that Cao Yi would actually dare to use such crazy actions and make his Dire Wolf attack Chu Mu who possessed a White Nightmare!

Chapter 65: Unexpected Appearance, Fifth Phase White Nightmare

Zeng Ze was standing not far behind. At that moment, he could easily summon his own soul pet to control the scene, but he didn't do that. Cao Yi had completely lost his sanity, and he had attempted to kill Chu Mu. Once Chu Mu died, what he had to do was report this event to Boss Xia. Cao Yi would then definitely get punished, and the person to replace his position could only be Zeng Ze. This scenario was very beneficial to him, so why would he help Chu Mu?

But, even with no one giving a hand to help him, upon facing the strong Fear Wolf's assault, Chu Mu's emotions, which were flooded with the White Nightmare's resentment and wickedness, were unprecedentedly calm.

Chu Mu's already pale eyes stared at the Fear Wolf. Just as the fear wolf was nearing, his eyes, in spite of everything, burned with white devil flames again!

The moment his cultivation improved to the Fourth Remembrance, Chu Mu's soul power transformed into a surging phase. Under this condition, even after leaving enough soul power to feed the White Nightmare, he could still cast Chong Mei once more!

Pale flames quickly flashed by. The ethereal flames directly shot into the Fear Wolf's body. The body of the Fear Wolf immediately began to burn with white devil flames just like Cao Yi!!

“Ao!!” The Fear Wolf let out a painful howl. In the process of running, it seemed to have lost all its energy, and violently face planted as it faced the same pain of a burning soul, just like Cao Yi!

Facing Chu Mu’s instantly cast Flame Awn, the Fear Wolf couldn’t guard against it at all. White devil flames covered the Fear Wolf’s body and started to frantically burn its soul!

“Trash!!” Cao Yi’s face was severely contorted by both anger and pain. Seeing the Hunting Wolf’s soul wounded, he was too crazy to take anything else into consideration and actually started casting another soul pact incantation!

A dazzling green ray and a brilliant light shadow shook in front of Cao Yi. The summoning symbol appeared again. Within the green radiance of the symbol, a Cyan bird covered in plump feathers appeared!

“Yi!!”

Within the summoning symbol, the Cyan Bird opened its wings and let out a shrill chirp!

Instantly, a squall started and caused dust and sand to fly around recklessly, making the arena very turbid and blocking everyone’s view!

Yellow sand filled the skies as the entire stadium became

obscured by the sandstorm, which left everything unseeable

“Kill him!!!” Cao Yi sent another command!

The white devil flames on Chu Mu’s body started to show signs of fading, and the aura of the White Nightmare was no longer as strong. Without the aura of the White Nightmare to suppress it, the Cyan Bird was not afraid of Chu Mu. Opening its wings, its body impressively became a cyan blade, and cut through all the muddiness in an attempt to cut Chu Mu straight into two halves!

Within the dancing yellow sand, the Cyan Bird who cast Wing Slash flit across, swiftly breaking through both air and sand!

“Jiang!!”

(TL: Sound of something clanging against metal)

Suddenly, a shower of sparks flew out from within the sand. It was as if the Cyan Bird’s Wing Slash hit a thick piece of metal, causing its forward momentum to completely stop!

Hitting some sort of object, the Cyan Bird immediately let out a furious caw, spiralling towards a higher place.

Yet, just as the Cyan Bird was rising up, an eye-catching ball of white devil flame burned to life from within the swirling sands!

This ball of flame was a blazing specter within the yellow haze,

upright and arrogant, as its pair of white flaming eyes gazing at the soaring Cyan Bird!

Suddenly the white devil flamed giant opened its mouth and spewed out a wad of searing white devil flames. The white flames immediately lit the air, sending terrifying waves of evil heat throughout the arena, causing thousands of souls to shiver, as if they were also suffering from the pain of a burning soul!

This bloom of imposing fire burned very briefly, as if a careless lightning flit through. The Cyan Bird simply couldn't dodge it, and was instantly engulfed!!

When the white flames flew past, the Cyan Bird, who was big enough to carry a person while flying, thoroughly disappeared- along with the vibrant white flames. If not for Cao Yi's equally dazed expression, everyone would've thought that Cao Yi simply retracted the Cyan Bird.

However, Cao Yi hadn't retracted his Cyan Bird. From the appearance of the white devil flamed giant to its attack on the Cyan bird, only two seconds had passed. In these two seconds, Cao Yi only had time to give one command. With the passing of the flames, the Cyan Bird's telepathic link with Cao Yi was completely severed!

"Nie!!"

"Nie!!"

A soul-shivering demonic cry suddenly exploded out from the center of the stadium, its sound waves causing the entire massive stadium to sway frantically. Accompanying it was an unprecedentedly large evil energy flooding the arena!!!

The temperature plummeted. The winds buffeted recklessly and even the weather darkened.

The frightening evil energy seemed to freeze the souls of thousands in an instant. At that moment everyone, including the Island Master, had their souls penetrated by this demonic sound, shrouded in evil!

Where the devil flames burned, Chu Mu calmly stood there. His eyes pierced the misty dark energy and gazed at the lean man and White Nightmare in front of him. Though he didn't show any expressions, Chu Mu's inner world was in a state of shock!

One soul pet, with just its powerful aura, could shock thousands of souls, causing them to feel a coldness and fear!!

White Nightmare!

The pale flamed devil that abruptly appeared in front of Chu Mu was in fact a White Nightmare, but it wasn't the Second Phase First Stage infant White Nightmare within Chu Mu, but a possibly beyond Fifth Phase mature White Nightmare!!

Chu Mu recognized this White Nightmare. Half a year ago, it was this White Nightmare that appeared on the streets he frequented and defeated his old servant in an absolutely frightening manner,

kidnapping Chu Mu onto the deserted island!

At that time,Chu Mu had been shocked by the terrifying strength the White Nightmare displayed. This time he saw the same Fifth Phase White Nightmare again and his inner mind still couldn't remain calm!

The air slowly settled. The appearance of the evil energy was abrupt and so was its disappearance. The entire scene appeared in one moment like a nightmare or illusion and disappeared in the next without a trace.

"Boss……Boss Xia……"

Cao Yi's pupils dilated. The White Nightmare's flames have already disappeared from his body, but the muscles on his face were even more contorted.

Because, without knowing when, the unpredictably appearing Boss Xia appeared where Chu Mu was standing along with his iconic evil soul pet - The Fifth Phase White Nightmare!

"Boss Xia……Boss Xia……he……his soul power isn't enough to……to feed his White Nighmare anymore, I……I simply wanted to help you get rid of him……I was trying to get rid of him for you!" Cao Yi tried to justify his actions incoherently.

Facing the Island Master, Cao Yi needed to be respectful and obedient, but facing Boss Xia, Cao Yi's heart was filled with terror.

His entire person looked even more pathetic than when his soul was burned by the White Nightmare’s flames.

Chapter 66: Opportunity To Live

Xia Guanghan's entire body gave off an icy aura as he stood there. His emotionless gaze attentively watched the frightened and reverent Cao Yi.

"Senior Xia... Senior Xia..." Cao Yi was still scrambling for ways to justify his previous actions.

In reality, over those three months, Xia Guanghan had actually been to Cyan Nightmare Island once. What made him extremely surprised was Chu Mu's tenacious vitality.

For other soul pet trainers, feeding a White Nightmare was fundamentally impossible. However, Chu Mu had raised the White Nightmare for an entire three months!

Someone who could use his own strength to nurture a White Nightmare to the second phase was of exceptional value to Nightmare Palace. Xia Guanghan had specially instructed the foremen to let Chu Mu continue to develop...

Xia Guanghan didn't directly kill Chu Mu and instead rather let him continue feeding the White Nightmare. This signified that Xia Guanghan already had a bit of interest in Chu Mu and intended on cultivating him.

A few foremen were extremely clear of this matter. Cao Yi's actions today clearly indicated that he was trying to deliberately stifle him. Killing a Nightmare Palace member who had the

potential of raising a White Nightmare had already violated Xia Guanghan's wishes.

"There's no need to explain." Xia Guanghan slowly spoke, "From the beginning of the peon competition, I have been here watching the entire thing, including when you used your mental strength to prevent him from recalling his soul pet."

Xia Guanghan's tone was exceptionally dull, but this sentence was like clap of thunder to Cao Yi, bombarding his head. His entire body actually keeled forth in fear, and he desperately kowtowed in hopes of receiving Xia Guanghan's forgiveness.

On the Cyan Nightmare Main Island, the paramount power of Xia Guanghan was like the existence of a god. The Island Master and subordinate island masters who originally sat in a position of power, as well as the various foremen of islands, all stood up and ran helter-skelter towards the arena from their seats.

Very soon, all of those who wielded power on Cyan Nightmare Island were kowtowing in front of Xia Guanghan like Cao Yi. Seeing that the Island Master and the other powerful figures were kneeling down, why would the spectators in the arenas and the foremen dare to continue sitting? They all kneeled down as well, and the entire arena suddenly became dead silent!

An arena holding thousands of people, and everyone was kneeling on the ground towards Xia Guanghan. Their faces were all facing the floor, and they all held a humble appearance.

Many foremen perhaps didn't know what kowtowing for this Senior meant, but the most powerful person on Cyan Nightmare Island, the Island Master, was kowtowing in fear. Why, then, would these foremen dare to lift their heads?

Chu Mu stood in his original position and slowly chanted an incantation, allowing Mo Xie to return to the soul pet space in order to recuperate her wounds.

After recalling Mo Xie, Chu Mu gazed at Cao Yi who was struggling at death's door. Subsequently, his eyes swept over the scene of thousands of people kowtowing. At this instant, he further understood exactly what power truly meant!

Facing the worship of thousands of people, Xia Guanghan's expression remained indifferent. He even completely ignored the Island Master's reverend and flattering speech.

Xia Guanghan slowly chanted an incantation, and he recalled the fifth phase White Nightmare, which had made everyone in the arena palpitate in fear, back into its soul pet space.

Xia Guanghan indifferently turned around. Step by step, he walked towards the only person who hadn't kowtowed-Chu Mu.

Chu Mu didn't kneel because he didn't understand the circumstance. Instead, he knew that if this fellow wanted to kill him, then even if he kneeled down and begged, it would be to no avail. The sole reason why he was able to live until now was because his soul force could supply the White Nightmare.

Chu Mu looked at Xia Guanghan attentatively, and watched him walk closer to him.

Chu Mu's clan also had many strong soul pet trainers. However, those with strength stronger than the man in front of him were few. Moreover, these people could all be considered a bit young!

Even though he harbored a deep anger and hatred towards this person who had thrown him into an environment of death, Chu Mu couldn't help but admit that this man called Xia Guanghan was extremely strong. Of the people Chu Mu knew of, this Xia Guanghan was an existence at the peak!

"Your will to survive is extremely strong. It can be said to be exceptionally rare. What makes you so unwilling to forsake your pitiful life?" Xia Guanghan's two arrogant eyes looked down upon Chu Mu as he spoke.

Chu Mu similarly stared at him. His silver pupils gradually restored their original deep black color.

The man in front of him was slender and thin, his skin was pale white making his entire body seem like a frosted idol. When he didn't move, there was no difference between him and someone dead...

However, for some unknown reason, as Chu Mu's mood became turbulent, Chu Mu found his vision growing more and more narrow. Ultimately, he was forced to tolerate Xia Guanghan's

clearly protruded face. In his ears was the unceasing echo of Xia Guanghan's indifferent voice.

"What makes you unwilling to forsake your pitiful life?"

"What makes you unwilling to forsake your pitiful life?..."

"Pitiful life..."

Finally, Chu Mu's line of sight went completely dark. He was unable to see any object, and his head felt strange. Gradually, the white colored devil fire covered his entire world, making Chu Mu feel no pain at all. This was because his consciousness had already left....

Being tired and dizzy caused Chu Mu to feel as if he had fully fallen asleep. Nonetheless, during this sleep, he could see the perpetually burning pale-colored fire.

Occasionally it was the White Nightmare's hungry malevolent look, or it was Mo Xie's bruised delicate body. At other times it was the scene of thousands of people kowtowing. Myriads of disorderly images drifted about in his mind, causing Chu Mu's head to spin...

At some unknown time, Chu Mu's consciousness finally went settled and his abnormally exhausted self finally fell asleep. A heavy sleep...

Advancing to the fourth remembrance Soul Soldier from the

third remembrance Soul Soldier used up too much of Chu Mu's soul power. Especially since the White Nightmare had already entered the second phase, and required a large amount of soul power to be fed.

Having all of his soul power being momentarily overused wasn't a good feeling. It was like he had exhausted his body's physical capabilities to the limit.

Whilst in this befuddled state, Chu Mu could feel that the bit of his recovered soul power would be eaten by the White Nightmare. Thus, in his mental world, it continued to stay empty.

After a long period of time, the White Nightmare eventually stopped devouring his soul power; Chu Mu's soul power gradually recovered. When his soul power had been restored by half, Chu Mu finally awakened from his faint state.

Throughout his faint state, Chu Mu felt his soul wander to faraway places. Sometimes, he was facing the crashing of the ocean waves. At other times he was in the middle of the sky, swiftly moving from cloud to cloud...

Finally, Chu Mu opened his eyes. He wasn't blinded by the light for when he opened his eyes, it was a pitch black sky. The layer of clouds stirred restlessly, and under the spurring of the violent winds, surged towards the horizon...

The smell of the sea breeze quickly rushed into Chu Mu's nose. Chu Mu slowly propped up his body and surveyed his

surroundings; he saw that there was still a vast and boundless ocean, making one perplexed and at a loss with direction…

Memories gradually poured back into Chu Mu's mind and he remembered the last sentence he heard.

'What makes you unwilling to forsake your pitiful life?"

Just as Chu Mu woke up, he heard another sentence with the same accent and tone.

Chu Mu cleared his mind a bit and gazed at Xia Guanghan, who had appeared in his field of view. His expression became grave and he coldly said: "If you give me the same ten years, you won't be more than a pitiful bug in my eyes."

Xia Guanghan wasn't very surprised by Chu Mu's answer. However, he momentarily let out a laugh before saying: "Strength isn't a concept of time. I could kill you right now. In my eyes, you are but a pitiful bug. At a certain time you will be able to kill me, thus I am a pitiful bug in your eyes. You're complaining about time? Why don't you just complain about why the Maker (God) didn't make Moonlight Foxes greater than White Nightmares…

Faced with Xia Guanghan's cold retort, Chu Mu was still clearly somewhat calm. He slowly shook his head and said: "I will not complain about Moonlight Foxes being inferior to White Nightmares. In my opinion, my Moonlight Fox is stronger than White Nightmares."

Hearing this come from Chu Mu, Xia Guanghan laughed again. This man surrounded in coldness seemed to rarely laugh. His manner of laughing always made others feel a bit strange.

“I’ll admit that the aptitude of your Moonlight Fox is extremely high. It can even compare with many Warrior Rank soul pets. However, in the end, a Moonlight Fox is just a Moonlight Fox. It will never be the White Nightmare’s opponent. Even if an ant were to become stronger, it would still be crushed to death by one step of a lion.” said Xia Guanghan contemptuously.

Confronting Xia Guanghan’s ridicule, Chu Mu didn’t actually reject it. In truth, a White Nightmare was definitely a soul pet of extremely high ranking race. Even if it were to reach the second phase, perhaps those fourth phase Servant Rank creatures wouldn’t be its opponent.

Nevertheless, although the White Nightmare was admittedly strong, its potential had no way of comparing to Mo Xie, who could continuously mutate. With enough time, Chu Mu believed that there would be a day when Mo Xie could defeat Xia Guanghan’s fifth phase White Nightmare!

“You and that lowly Cao Yi who tried to kill me are no different. You are just afraid that one day you will be stepped on by me.” said Chu Mu.

Xia Guanghan’s smiling expression froze and he looked at Chu Mu: “Do you think you’re smart? The only reason why you’re saying this to me is because you want to provoke me and delay your time of death. Only, it’s a pity that Nightmare Palace uses

murder to achieve its goals; your provocation has no effect on me."

With his scheme being seen through, Chu Mu immediately maintained his silence. Indeed, Chu Mu needed time. He deliberately mentioned a difference in time in hopes of infuriating this man and making this man let him go. However, this Xia Guanghan was very evidently not someone who was driven by emotions...

"In truth, I still don't plan on killing you... My employer doesn't seem to want to pay my fee. Killing you would be me doing something without remuneration." Xia Guanghan's raised the corner of his mouth.

Hearing this, Chu Mu's heart also somewhat relaxed. Living was the biggest asset. Only through living could he escape the clutches of this fellow.

"Your performance this half year has somewhat surprised me. By chance, I need someone to help me do something. I can give you a chance to live." Xia Guanghan said.

Chu Mu knew that currently that his life was in Xia Guanghan's hands. Speaking too much didn't have very much meaning, so he just listened instead.

"Of course, I've given a plethora of people this same opportunity. They weren't able to obtain it, and they are still themselves. If you don't obtain it, you are a dead man." said Xia Guanghan.

“Speak, as long as I can live.” Chu Mu didn’t hesitate at all.

Yet, Xia Guanghan shook his head and didn’t tell Chu Mu the specific circumstance. Instead, he said: “I will bring you to Nightmare Palace’s Heng City first. You can spend a period of comfort there, then…”

When Xia Guanghan said this, he suddenly stopped. His eyes surveyed the land gradually emerging in the horizon, “It seems that we have already arrived. The speed has increased a bit…”

The last part of Xia Guanghan’s sentence wasn’t directed towards Chu Mu. Rather it was towards the Blue Dragon Turtle carrying them through the ocean.

Blue Dragon Turtle, Beast Kingdom-Water Attribute-Dragon Turtle Species-Mid Rank Commander Rank. In other words, it was an existence Chu Mu currently could not involve himself with!

Species rank from low to high was Servant Rank, General Rank, Commander Rank…

Apart from the White Nightmare, Chu Mu didn’t have a single General Rank soul pet, not to mention the even higher ranking Commander Rank soul pets.

The coastline gradually occupied Chu Mu’s field of view. What emerged in Chu Mu’s eyes was a vast and boundless continent!

He had spent half a year living on a barren island and now, he finally saw cvilization again. This feeling was hard to put into words. It was like seeing one's hometown after a long period of separation.

The Blue Dragon Turtle slowly approached the estuary. The appearance of a Commander Rank Soul Pet instantly attracted a wave of uproar amongst everyone on the dock.

It seemed that he was already used to these noises of shock as Xia Guanghan indifferently recalled his soul pet and walked forward along the mainstreet.

Heng City could be said to be the Heng Ocean's most flourishing city. This city sat in the Heng Ocean coastline's most perfect harbor. When compared to Heng Ocean's important economic hub, Cyan Nightmare Island's main island was like a sealed village- eminently simple and crude.

Walking into the bustling city, he saw an unending flow of people. If it wasn't for Xia Guanghan walking in front, Chu Mu would have truly felt a feeling a returning to his original life style.

"I'll give you one month. A month later, I will come and find you. At that time, i will tell you what your chance of survival is..." Xia Guanghan suddenly stopped at an intersection, and with his back facing Chu Mu he spoke.

Chu Mu nodded his head, but didn't say anything.

“I’ll also mention that you have a Soul Lock put on your White Nightmare. If you try to escape this city, I will sense it. Therefore it’s best if you don’t leave more than 100 kilometers from the city. Once you leave that area, I will regard it as you forsaking your chance. Additionally, there’s at least a two month distance from here to Luo City. Writing back to your family isn’t of any sense.” said Xia Guanghan.

Chu Mu continued to nod his head and didn’t reveal any intentions of violating the rules.

Currently the strength difference between him and Xia Guanghan was too large. Chu Mu also knew he could only live by obeying Xia Guanghan’s intentions .

“In one month I will appear.” said Xia Guanghao. After speaking, he continued to walk forward.

Chu Mu stood in his original spot and didn’t continue walking forward with Xia Guanghan, who didn’t look back either.

“There will be a day when I ruthlessly step on you!!”

As he watched Xia Guanghan’s lanky figure gradually walk farther away, Chu Mu’s expression grew even more resolute. Using only a voice he could hear, he muttered something.

Xia Guanghan continued to walk forward and eventually disappeared in the busy street. Chu Mu stood still in the bustling

crossroad; for a long while he didn't move at all.

Finally, Chu Mu began moving. He didn't have a purpose and just kept walking forward along the street.

He spent a night on the streets, and on the morning of the second day, Chu Mu went to look for the soul pet's Hunter Alliance.

The Hunter Alliance was naturally a place where those who hunted soul pets gathered. This place was the most direct way of exchanging soul cores and soul crystals.

Chu Mu could currently be considered penniless. Living in this seaside city, those who didn't have enough money would definitely suffer from all sorts of barriers.

Chu Mu's present fights had always relied on Mo Xie, as it was very hard for himself to be useful. If he truly wanted to increase his strength, this didn't mean bitterly training Mo Xie. Instead, it meant that he should raise his own strength.

Chu Mu remembered that Soul Soldiers had a soul technique-Adhering Flame. This soul technique required about 50 gold coins. Chu Mu felt that there was a need to collect 50 gold coins and learn this soul technique, which could increase Mo Xie's strength.

Furthermore, Chu Mu had presently entered the fourth soul soldier stage and could possess another soul pet. A new soul pet could be bought from the market, or captured by himself.

After entering the Hunter Alliance, Chu Mu roughly looked at the soul core prices. The prices that the Hunter Alliance quoted for soul cores weren't that different from the old trader. Chu Mu used all his remaining silver coins to buy a month's worth of Mo Xie's food-dual attributed soul cores. Subsequently, he bought himself rations before leaving the Hunter Alliance and walking out of the city...

As he began exiting the city gates, it was already very late. The pathway outside the city leading towards the gloomy forest had already become rather dark. The bright moonlight spilt over Chu Mu's solitary body, gradually lengthening his shadow.

Beside Chu Mu followed Mo Xie, whose wounds had completely healed already. In her luxurious fur, the small cyan bug which had been hiding the entire time lifted its body and let out a rustling noise. It was unclear as to what it was saying...

Just like this, a solitary youth, an arrogant Moonlight Fox, and a cowardly cyan bug set off under the silver moonlight. Together, they made for a bizarre illustration...

One month later.

"Mo Xie, Dark Assault, Blood Rending Claw!!"

On the rather desolate land, a grand, silver bodied Moonlight Fox's claw indifferently swept across the body of a second phase stage seven Armored Devil Maggot.

The Armored Devil Maggot's thick carapace was immediately ripped apart by the profound claws. Immediately, a nauseating bodily fluid spilled out of this bug attributed soul pet's body, flowing onto the grassy ground.

Chu Mu swiftly collected the bug attributed soul pet's soul core, and put it into his bundle. He used his hand to slowly stroke Mo Xie's head and a faint smile arose on his face.

"It should almost be one month, we should return." Chu Mu said to Mo Xie.

Mo Xie always enjoyed Chu Mu's caress and let out a docile growl.

Ever since leaving the Hunter Alliance, for the entire month, Chu Mu and Mo Xie had remained outside the city and battled non-stop. The easy lifestyle wasn't of any meaning to Chu Mu, as both Chu Mu and Mo Xie had an intense desire-to become strong!

Mo Xie's strength had increased very quickly. In one month, she had gone from the second phase stage four to the second phase stage eight, a growth of an entire four stages. Although she didn't comprehend any new battle abilities, she grew even more adept at the techniques she already knew.

"Final second stage claws, middle second stage flexible fur, middle stage Flame Awn, late stage Dark Assault, middle stage Moonblade, late stage Charm, late stage Pitiful Appearance. Even if

I were to face a General Rank soul pet, I could probably withstand anyone under the third phase." soliloquized Chu Mu.

Of course, in this month, Chu Mu himself also made some progress. His soul technique-Rapid Freeze, had increased to the middle stage and for any soul pet under the second phase, Chu Mu could directly turn them into an ice sculpture.

However, during this month, Chu Mu had not found any suitable new soul pet.

The requirements for Chu Mu to choose a soul pet were extremely demanding. To him, wasting time to raise a randomly captured soul pet was not as beneficial to him as making his existing soul pets stronger.

Therefore, even though he hadn't obtained a new soul pet, Chu Mu continued to put all his attention into Mo Xie. This would happen until he found a satisfactory soul pet.

After returning to the city, Chu Mu didn't harbor any reluctance towards leaving this beautiful city. He walked directly towards the Hunter Alliance and sold all the soul cores he had earned.

"104 second rank soul cores, 232 first rank soul cores, 2 third rank soul cores... let me check the quality of these soul cores first." The Hunter Alliance's old manager stroked his beard. He completely ignored Chu Mu and from the start to end, his gaze was fixated on the soul cores in Chu Mu's hand.

Chu Mu wasn't worried either, and silently waited for the old manager to to quote a price for his month's gains.

The old manager obviously couldn't appraise every single soul core. For institutions like the Hunter Alliance that brought in large quantities, managers would usually generally classify all the soul cores before giving a price to each classification.

"Second rank soul cores, a total of 42 gold coins. First rank soul cores, a total of 16 gold coins. Third rank soul cores, a total of 6 gold coins. In total it's 64 gold coins.... If you have any objections to my appraisal, you can find others. If you don't, these cores will go to me and the 64 gold coins to you." The old manager said to Chu Mu.

Chu Mu himself had estimated about 60 gold coins and candidly sold all the soul cores to the old managers. He took away 64 gold coins.

"50 gold coins should be enough to buy the soul technique-Adhering Flame. I will bring the remaining money to the Soul Pet Palace to look around. Perhaps I will encounter someone selling soul pets." After putting away the money, Chu Mu directly walked towards the commercial district and looked for a place selling soul techniques.

Chapter 67: Prison Island - One Out Of Three Thousand Survives

The selling price of Heng City's soul techniques was actually much cheaper than the old trader's-they only cost 40 gold coins. Chu Mu easily bought the book, but he didn't begin learning it right after. Instead, he directly went to the Soul Pet Palace to look for another good soul pet.

Chu Mu roughly looked through Soul Pet Palace, but still didn't find any suitable soul pet. Perhaps it could be said that even if Chu Mu was extremely satisfied with a soul pet, its price was hundreds or thousands of gold coins. Currently, Chu Mu simply did not have the economy to purchase a soul pet at this price.

"It seems that I have to capture one myself. Only, I don't know where Xia Guanghan will bring me." said Chu Mu.

Of the remaining 24 gold coins, Chu Mu spent ten of them buying Mo Xie's food. Mo Xie presently ate second rank dual attributed soul cores, which weren't of too low quality. Therefore, it wasn't a small expenditure to feed Mo Xie, and he currently needed at least 10 gold coins a month.

Of course, the better Mo Xie's food was, the better the rate at which Mo Xie grew, and both her strengths and attributes would definitely increase. Thus, Chu Mu had no choice but to spend this money.

With the remaining 14 gold coins, Chu Mu bought another two

soul techniques. These two soul techniques were Tornado and Wind Ride.

Tornado-this was a technique that many wind attributed soul pets could use. Moreover, this ability was extremely useful.

Wind Ride-this technique was naturally used to assist. It could use the power of the wind to increase oneself or a soul pet's speed.

The White Nightmare had entered the second phase and Chu Mu had become a fourth remembrance Soul Soldier. The balance in soul power between them still hadn't been disrupted and Chu Mu could still only use 20 percent of his soul power.

Naturally, Chu Mu's current 20 percent soul power was definitely much larger than before. After all, his present soul remembrance had become stronger, and the amount of soul power he could hold was more.

He spent approximately two days waiting in Heng City before Xia Guanghan appeared as expected. This time, Xia Guanghan wasn't alone. Beside him was a young lady whose face was covered. The young lady's clothing was particularly beautiful, and one could see that all the jewelery on her body was extremely valuable.

"You were talking about him?" When the veiled young lady saw Chu Mu, her expression didn't change.

The young girl's pupils were exceptionally beautiful. Chu Mu had

seen all sorts of distinguished beautiful women in his clan in Wangluo City, but had never seen anyone with such enchanting pupils as this young lady. Even if he couldn't see this young lady's face, Chu Mu was sure that she possessed an extremely beautiful appearance.

"No, he is only one of my slaves. We'll dump him halfway through the journey." Xia Guanghan indifferently replied.

Chu Mu maintained silence, but carefully listened to the conversation between the two. Their tones were very calm, but Chu Mu could still discern a few details. At least when Xia Guanghan spoke, Chu Mu could hear his respectful intentions towards this mysterious young lady.

Chu Mu didn't say a single sentence. If Xia Guanghan wanted him to follow, Chu Mu would follow. In his heart, he was silently conjecturing what identity this young lady had in order to make such an eminently arrogant Xia Guanghan display a bit of reverence.

Chu Mu stayed in Heng City with Xia Guanghan and the young lady for one day before leaving the city and entering Heng Ocean.

Seemingly in order to show consideration for the veiled face young lady, Xia Guanghan didn't summon his Blue Dragon Turtle. Rather, he rode a luxurious ship on the ocean.

Xia Guanghan didn't restrict Chu Mu's actions in the slightest. He also simply didn't care if Chu Mu had any tricks.

Chu Mu currently was still trying to discern where Xia Guanghan wanted to bring him and could only blindly follow him.

Late at night, Chu Mu sat alone on the deck's banister. He faced the oncoming ocean breeze and his gaze surveyed the black ocean in front of him.

Half a year in confined living had already made Chu Mu somewhat loathe the smell of the ocean. However, when he was at a loss, Chu Mu would still habitually sit facing the oncoming ocean breeze, mesmerizingly staring at the distant and the unknown sea, stars, and world, …

"Is this your house pet?" A beautiful noise like the wind sounded in his ears. Chu Mu lost his train of thought due to the sound and turned his head around.

What entered his vision was a graceful and curvaceous young lady. Her veil lightly fluttered in the wind and vaguely, one could see her delicate china and pink lips.

"She is my soul pet." Chu Mu corrected the woman's words and used his hands to stroke Mo Xie's head.

When Mo Xie didn't maintain her Pitiful Appearance, she had a unique charm. Every time Chu Mu brought Mo Xie around as he walked through the city's streets, it would attract numerous excited shouts of young girls. They all wanted to stroke and hug the beautiful Mo Xie. Only, when they saw Chu Mu's stern

appearance, these young ladies no longer had the courage.

“Soul pet?” The young lady seemed rather surprise. Clearly, she didn’t expect a youth like Chu Mu with his stern indifference to carry such a soul pet.

Chu Mu didn’t want to explain any further.

The veiled young lady seemed to not like Chu Mu’s mild attitude and after looking once at Chu Mu’s Moonlight Fox, stood alone to the side as her gaze shifted towards the ocean.

Chu Mu shifted his eyes and looked at the back of the young lady’s wonderful figure.

However, just then, the previously rather docilely behaved Mo Xie quietly extended her claws. Her two silver eyes became acute as she stared at the young lady ten meters away.

“Leave it, it’s too dangerous like this…”

Ultimately, Chu Mu shook his head and used his hand to pet Mo Xie’s supple fur. When Mo Xie’s claws retracted, her gaze returned to its normal docile nature, and she lay on Chu Mu’s thigh like a spoiled young lady.

Mo Xie fell asleep on Chu Mu’s thigh and Chu Mu took out the three soul techniques that he had bought. He then began to practice the incantations.

Soul Technique - Adhering Flame was a Soul Soldier ability, and even for a mere incantation, Chu Mu would probably have to spend 10 days to truly finish reading through the techniques. As for actually using it, it would most likely be very hard without half a month's worth of practice time...

The trip on the ocean was very dull, and it continued this way for almost half a month.

In this half a month's time, the White Nightmare had already advanced a stage. Although Mo Xie didn't fight at all, by being fed excellent quality soul cores, she still reached the second phase ninth stage.

As for Chu Mu himself, he finally finished learning the soul technique, Adhering Flame, and could fully annex flames on Mo Xie's body.

"Prison Island is a unique island of our Nightmare Palace. A few people who once committed an error and would be put to death are thrown there to give them a chance." Standing on the deck, Xia Guanghan looked at the vast ocean surface and spoke to Chu Mu.

"This island opens once every three years. Every time, we will send 3000 prisoners in. Three years later, Prison Island will open once more and the Nightmare Palace foremen will dispatch a boat to collect the survivor..."

Xia Guanghan slowly narrated in a very dull tone, but Chu Mu

felt a shiver through his body while listening!!

Xia Guanghan purposefully put emphasis on the words “The survivor”. This meant that among the 3000 prisoners, only one survived!

Chapter 68: The Option Of Seeking Death

“Didn’t you think you could be stronger than me?” Xia Guanghan gazed at Chu Mu, as a devilish smile appeared on his face. “Ten years ago, I survived there for three years……”

Xia Guanghan’s words were, as always, said lightly, but it still set off huge waves in Chu Mu’s heart……

One man out of three thousand. It was such a cruel competition, and even disregarding the battle between each other, one still had to face countless savage soul pets.

Seeing Chu Mu’s surprised emotions, Xia Guanghan simply lifted the corner of his mouth and pointed at the mysterious girl gazing out towards the open sea on the railing, saying, “She signed a contract with the White Nightmare when she was thirteen, and has fed that White Nightmare until now. Her White Nightmare is already at the Fourth Phase.”

“You’re a Fourth Remembrance Spirit Soldier, but you only have two soul pets. Though I don’t know what’s wrong with your body, I’d imagine that even if your body was normal, you would still be easily defeated by her.”

Shock!!!

After hearing this sentence, Chu Mu’s heart was even more shocked, as his eyes immediately locked onto the mysterious girl!!

This girl gave Chu Mu a feeling of gorgeousness and indifference. Her entire being was emanating both grace and royalty. She didn't deliberately place herself high up, but others still got the same impression anyways.

However, Chu Mu would never have thought that such a seemingly delicate and noble princess-like girl had also signed a soul pact with a White Nightmare. On top of this, she had even fed it to Fourth Phase with her own power!

The White Nightmare was already a scary enough devil. Chu Mu personally knew the pain that accompanied signing a soul pact with a White Nightmare all too well. Even if one constantly had enough soul power, when the White Nightmare improved its strength, one's soul would still have to withstand the pain of being attacked.

Chu Mu currently had only fed his White Nightmare to the Second Phase, but he had already fully experienced the suffering both in his body and in his soul. The feeling of constantly being chased by death, being coerced by death, was almost worse than death itself.

Yet, this girl of similar age to himself could withstand this unimaginable torture and still feed her White Nightmare to Fourth Phase. Chu Mu found this hard to believe!

"You can say, if you kept living in your clan, even within twenty years, all your soul pets added together wouldn't compare to a

single one of her secondary pets.”

Xia Guanghan disparaged without any restraint.

Chu Mu stopped talking. Having a Fourth Phase White Nightmare at this age was almost outside of Chu Mu’s knowledge range. Especially because the person in question was a seemingly frail girl-this was a huge blow to his confidence.

“Your clan is waning. Nowadays, it has already left the list of the top four clans in Gang Luo City. In fact, they may be disqualified to elect positions for the Battle of the Realm. You should know perfectly well what losing this power means……”

Hearing this, Chu Mu’s heart immediately sank. The Chu Clan had indeed been declining constantly in the past few years, so getting removed from the top four clans was expected, but Chu Mu didn’t think that it’d come about this quick.

A centennial family could thrive and deteriorate in just a few rises and falls of the sun. This feeling must not feel well. Chu Mu could imagine his father and ancestors’ decrepit and sentimental looks after hearing this news.

Xia Guanghan had asked before the reason Chu Mu wasn’t willing to give up his pitiful life. The reason was that the declining clan and his father who was every busy for clan business.

Chu Mu understood the clan situation. According to Chu Mu’s

estimate, the clan should still be able to maintain its current position for two or three years.

But now, within half a year, the clan had already completely exited the top four clan list. What could cause this sort of change could only be the disappearance of him.

Chu Mu couldn't make sure what his father and the clan did after his disappearance, but to think that he caused the entire clan to decline two or three years earlier as a result, Chu Mu couldn't help but feel a pang of grief.

Seeing Chu Mu emotionally affected, Xia Guanghan simply lifted the corner of his mouth and looked at the girl who always liked to gaze into the distance alone and said, "Little princess told me to give you a way to survive……"

Xia Guanghan paused and continued, "The orders of the little princess I cannot disobey. I can leave you a way to survive-you can return to your clan right now……"

Chu Mu looked on unexpectedly. Only after a moment did he abruptly direct his eyes towards the girl mysteriously shrouded within a veil!

The girl remained standing there, bearing a trace of melancholy that no outsider could decipher. Her enchanting body and unique manner unknowingly depicted a captivating image when contrasted with the depths of the sea and the blues of the sky……

Chu Mu was very astonished. From his understanding, this Nightmare Palace girl should be just like the other Nightmare Palace members, cold and ruthless. In fact, during the inadvertent times they made eye contact, Chu Mu could feel the pride within her eyes. But it was this girl that Chu Mu thought was indifferent and aloof that ended up helping him without a reason.

“She……Why would she help me……” Chu Mu looked at this peculiar girl as this girl’s image in his mind drastically changed yet again.

“Maybe she pities you……” Xia Guanghai laughed indifferently and continued.

“In reality, so what if I give you a path to survive? Your clan can no longer provide you with strong support. If someone wanted to kill you, they could still hire someone like me to get rid of you. You, the future hope of your clan, in the eyes of others, are nothing more than an ant that could be squashed at any time.”

Facing Xia Guanghan’s sardonic comments, Chu Mu didn’t have any rebuttal. In reality, Xia Guanghan wasn’t wrong. The clan has already dilapidated. The moment he went back, they would face a new wave of attacks. Chu Mu would only be able to grow behind the constant protection of his elders.

It could be said that Chu Mu’s return would only bring a greater burden to his clan……

“Now, you have two roads to choose from. The first, return to

your clan. If you choose to do so, I will retract your White Nightmare and you can live an easy and comfortable life. But, I imagine that your achievements would end there. You won't be able to surpass me for the rest of your life, nevertheless people like the little princess."

Xia Guanghan's word were unimaginably heavy, so heavy that Chu Mu found it hard to breathe. The matters of the clan was like a mountain on Chu Mu's body, the sole reason Chu Mu could live strongly until now. But Chu Mu clearly recognized that he, in his current state, couldn't possibly revive the clan, and even further, couldn't possibly walk out of the clan and become a truly top tier soul pet trainer.

"The White Nightmare is undoubtedly a devil, but it can also continuously force out your greatest potential, forcing you to pursue power with no time to rest."

"The second path is the path I gave you: I don't need to say it, you should know what this path means. If you can walk out of this alive, this unusually talented White Nightmare will be yours, and we will accept you as a member of our Nightmare Palace. You will receive a position of power and, as long as you keep on progressing as a trainer, what you can get from the Nightmare Palace is definitely not something your clan can provide……" Xia Guanghan said.

"These are two different paths. The first path may let you struggle but live on with your pitifully declining clan. The second path, as long as you walk upon it and survive, you will have the qualifications to become a god among men!"

Xia Guanghan's words were like daggers, piercing straight into Chu Mu's heart!!

Chu Mu looked at the haughty Xia Guanghan, and his emotions once again started violently fluctuating!

In a short time, Chu Mu's emotions had already fluctuated several times.

Without Xia Guanghan saying, Chu Mu understood the path Xia Guanghan planned out for him.

Only one person lives in three thousand people, the race against death within Prison Island!

If it were a day ago, of the paths Xia Guanghan gave him, Chu Mu would've unhesitatingly chosen the first path. The past half year caused Chu Mu to feel unusually tired. Only returning home could mend this wound……

But, at this moment, Chu Mu didn't have the courage to choose the path with a predictable ending……

Xia Guanghan's power, the girl's surprising strength, the clan's decline and humiliation, the other clans' overbearance and neglect……

Just as Xia Guanghan said, he was still very weak. So what if he could return to his clan? He would only be able to witness the continuous and gradual decline of the clan……

Additionally, Chu Mu could be sure that once the clan had fully fallen, the other clans would never give the youths of the Chu Clan a chance to get strong again. They would be constantly pressured and constantly restricted, creating a vicious loop.

“Hualala!”

Seawater bubbled around the boat, one wave after the other, and Chu Mu’s heart was just like these waves-restless every moment.

This was a choice, a choice that could change his entire life!

Xia Guanghan smiled while staring at Chu Mu, waiting for his decision without any sign of impatience.

At this moment, Chu Mu thought of many things……

“Hualala”

An agitated wave abruptly clapped, sending water everywhere and spraying Chu Mu. His body was instantly frigid. This feeling brought all his thoughts back to reality.

Chu Mu’s chest kept on inflating and deflating. He looked at Xia

Guanghan and asked, “Was the person who hired you to kill me Yang Luobin?!”

“I can’t say if it is him specifically, but it is someone from the Yang Clan. The Yang clan did not give me what I wanted, so I’ll deal with them eventually. Of course, without the hiring of the Yang clan, you are but a pure stranger to me. The reason I’m tell you this is simply because I admire your potential and I believe that you can become a strong individual……” Xia Guanghan said.

Chu Mu nodded. At this moment, he already had a decision in mind.

Chu Mu watched Xia Guanghan high above and said with a firm tone, “I choose the second path!”

Hearing Chu Mu’s reply, Xia Guanghan laughed. His laugh was very demonic, and chilling to the ear.

“Are you sure you choose the second path? Prison Island is a place where even “nine deaths and one alive” is an understatement……”

“I’m sure.” Chu Mu nodded. This time Chu Mu had no hesitation, his eyes full of unwavering determination!

“Very well, it seems like I won’t even have to release you in front of the little princess and then secretly assassinate you.” Xia Guanghan suddenly laughed.

Chu Mu anticipated that Xia Guanghan wouldn't let him off easily, so he wasn't very surprised at Xia Guanghan's words.

"This is what you planned on sending out right?" Xia Guanghan said. As he said this, a letter suddenly appeared in his hands.

Chu Mu's expression slightly changed. The letter in Xia Guanghan's hand was from when Chu Mu wrote it in Heng City. Alhough he didn't expect the clan to save him, he still wanted to send them the message that he was alive and that they had no need to worry about him.

But, Chu Mu didn't imagine that Xia Guanghan was this powerful. A letter which he gave to a random person also landed back in his hands.

"This letter does not need to be sent. They think you're dead already. In three years, if you survive, you can go and tell your clan that you are still alive. If you can't, then there's no need to give them false hope and let them wait painstakingly for three years." Xia Guanghan offhandedly threw the letter into the ocean.

Seeing the letter flutter in the gale, Chu Mu also tightened his fist and was even more determined.

Three years! In three years time, if he has to walk out of Prison Island alive, he could stand at a height able to carry the entire clan, and able to firmly stamp on the other clans!

“Tomorrow I will send my soul pet to deliver you to Prison Island. Three years later, regardless of whether you are alive or death, this soul pet of mine will fly past the island once more……” Xia Guanghan said.

Chu Mu nodded and said, “What if within two years, I become the only one left?”

“Then you will live by yourself with the fierce soul pets on Prison Island for a year. Soul pet resources on Prison Island are very plentiful. If you utilize them well, it could still change your entire life.”

“Oh, by the way, I’ve already thrown Cao Yi onto the island. Whether you can kill him or not will depend on your luck.”

Xia Guanghan finished speaking and turned around, leaving the deck that welcomed the approaching sea winds and returned to his room.

After Xia Guanghan left, Chu Mu’s inner emotions remained in turmoil for long.

The path has been chosen. Chu Mu didn’t regret it. It was just battling and killing. If Xia Guanghan could do it, then so could he!

……

The sea breeze mellowed in the night, gently stirring the long

hair of the girl by the rails. Her clothes fluttered with the wind, gorgeous and splendid……

The girl had already stood there for a long time, silent and careless of others' glances, simply calmly gazing on.

"Wuwuwu"

A tender murmur sounded. The delicate and lovable little Mo Xie lept onto the rails. Holding a piece of paper in her mouth, she used her pair of beautiful eyes to watch the unique girl.

The girl snapped back to reality and saw little Mo Xie suddenly appear. A hint of astonishment flashed through her eyes, but in a moment her gaze again became incomparably gentle, unable to resist the urge to extend a hand and pet Mo Xie's clean and silver fur……

The girl very quickly discovered the little piece of paper that Mo Xie was biting. Taking it, she opened the slip, holding some suspicion.

"Thank you."

There were only two simple words on the paper, but the girl still understood very quickly, turning around to find Chu Mu's figure, but she didn't see him. She remembered that in the past Chu Mu would always sit on the deck and practice incantations……

Unable to find Chu Mu, the girl ceased searching and rather extended her hand to pick up the delicate Mo Xie and asked with a clear voice, “Little guy, can you stay with me to watch the ocean?”

“Wuwuwu~~”

Mo Xie didn’t resist and just peacefully laid down on the girl’s lap, her eyes also gazing into the ocean……

In another place, Chu Mu stood at the back of the boat path, distantly watching the girl who held Mo Xie. WIthout knowing why, he had a strange feeling lingering within him, propelling him to chat with the girl, to lift up her mysterious and hazy veil, to understand that glimmer of melancholy deep within her heart……

White seagulls pursued the ocean spray as grey clouds chased the sea breeze. An azure sky, a deep blue sea-these tranquil yet beautiful surfaces brought each other out to create the most enchanting blue world……

“Oh, is that so, he chose himself?” The girl with the veil questioned, her eyes watching the gradually disappearing black Ice Winged Tiger.

"Yes, he chose himself." Xia Guanghan nodded, also glancing at his soul pet who was sending Chu Mu away.

The girl went silent as an image of the boy sitting on the edge of the boat hugging his Moonlight Fox floated into her mind. In this

half month of sea voyaging, she could always see the boy with his Moonlight Fox. The boy was stern and indifferent, but when he talked with the Moonlight Fox, his eyes always changed a bit. These scenes should be very uncommon……

“Do you think that after three years, he can walk out of the place alive?” the girl asked.

“Maybe not, but this was his choice……” Xia Guanghan said.

The girl once again looked at the leaving Chu Mu and didn’t say much more. Maybe, after three years, she would forget about this entirely.

In the sky, sitting on a magnificent Ice Winged Tiger’s broad back, Chu Mu turned around and looked at the boat, his eyes revealing complicated emotions……

The girl wouldn’t mind such a normal event, but Chu Mu would always remember the melancholic and mysterious girl within the extremely evil Nightmare Palace.

She was both a target for Chu Mu to surpass, as well as a unique lily within Chu Mu’s dark and gloomy inner world, wavering around in the gusts of his mind.

However, three years was the minimum before Chu Mu felt like he could stand at the same stage as her……

Chapter 69: An Unknown Creature

Ice Winged Tiger: Beast Kingdom - Beast Type (Winged Type) - Tiger Species - Winged Asian Tiger Species - High Class Commander Rank

Currently, Chu Mu was riding on top of this majestic, Commander Rank soul pet. Chu Mu's knowledge of soul pets was limited to those under the Commander Ranks. Towards the Ice Winged Tiger, he didn't understand everything about it, and was also unable to determine either its phase or stage from its appearance. He could only approximately guess that it was above the fifth phase...

High Class Commander Rank-even a first phase sixth or seventh stage soul pet of this kind could contend against a second or third phase Servant Rank soul pet. A species rank difference was the most direct form of strength difference.

With such an almighty and powerful soul pet in front of his eyes, Chu Mu was rather envious. If he could obtain one like it, he could definitely occupy a seat in Wangluo City!

The island was already slowly approaching. A bizarre mist curled around the enormous island, making it look like a floating cloud over the ocean, covering the earth beneath.

The mist's area was so large that it simultaneously illustrated the immensity of the island. So much so in fact, that in Chu Mu's opinion, it was like a small continent.

“Hou!!!”

When the Ice Winged Tiger approached within the range of the island’s mist, it suddenly let out a thunderous roar. Subsequently, it slightly retracted its wings and dove down from the air above towards the island...

The misty white fog quickly floated across Chu Mu’s surroundings. A violent wind swatted at his face and Chu Mu grasped at the Ice Winged Tiger’s fur to maintain his balance.

“Gugu~”

“Gugu~”

Chu Mu’s vision had been completely covered by the mist and he could faintly hear odd yells resounding from within the mist.

Chu Mu’s heart tightened. Generally speaking, this sort of omnipresent island mist ultimately had to have a few strong wing type creatures living within it. These creatures were very conscious of their territory, and if any creature were to come near, it would arouse their animosity.

The bizarre cries originally were from a very distant place, but Chu Mu found that as the Ice Winged Tiger approached the island, the noises became even closer and more intense.

“Hou!!” The Ice Winged Tiger clearly noticed other soul pets approaching and let out an angry roar through the hazy white fog, stunning the threatening creatures!

“Huhuhuhu”

The intense weeping noises disappeared, but Cu Mu could still clearly hear the repeated flapping of wings. Moreover, he could feel that there was an odor proliferating in the surroundings. Occasionally, he would suddenly see feathers and wings within the hazy mist.

The more sounds of wings flapping in the surroundings there were, the more Chu Mu felt flustered.

The Ice Winged Tiger was a High Class Commander Rank creature, and had definitely reached at least the fifth phase. This sort of soul pet would be called a hegemon, no matter where it was, and any soul pet would give way to this superior strength.

However, just as Chu Mu was approaching Prison Island, there unexpectedly were numerous soul pets provoking the Ice Winged Tiger’s dignity!

Chu Mu lowered his head and leaned forward on the Ice Winged Tiger’s back. The surrounding aura of the various wing type soul pets were extremely strong. If it wasn’t for the Ice Winged Tiger’s prestige, Chu Mu could be sure that he would be torn to pieces in an instant.

“Gu~~gugu”

“Yi~~”

Suddenly, a clamor sounded out in the surroundings and Chu Mu could feel a trace of panic from its cry.

The noises grew even heavier and suddenly a chaotic stream of air swatted Chu Mu’s body, almost immediately carrying him away.

The noises grew more and more distant and the creatures originally lingering around the Ice Winged Tiger gradually disappeared into the mist.

Very soon, the surroundings quieted down. Only the occasional bird sound would come from a distant place.

“Hu!!!” The Ice Winged Tiger continued to dive downwards, but it seemed to feel something as its breathing unexpectedly became more ragged!

There had to be something unusual about the encompassing silence!!

When danger appeared, the small cyan bug on Chu Mu’s neck would always let out a “shashasha” noise to warn him. However, this time, the small cyan bug had completely huddled onto Chu Mu’s neck. Using a white thread to hang on, its small body was

unexpectedly trembling, and it didn't dare to make even the slightest of noises!

Suddenly, the Ice Winged Tiger's dive abruptly halted and its flapping wings stopped in the middle of the air. It didn't let out any sort of roar and only floated there.

Even if Chu Mu was stupid, with the continuous appearances of peculiar circumstances, he could still guess that there was definitely an eminently strong creature in the vicinity!

Chu Mu had no idea what this soul pet was, but it was enough to make wind type soul pets brave enough to provoke a Ice Winged Tiger flee in panic, the small cyan bug tremble and not let out a sound, and the arrogant and mighty Ice Winged Tiger to stop its flight. This all meant that this unknown creature was so strong that it completely surpassed Chu Mu's knowledge!

An Ice Winged Tiger, this High Class Commander Rank soul pet, was already considered a peak existence in Wangluo City. Chu Mu completely didn't think that the second he entered Prison Island, he would unexpectedly see an unknown, mysterious and eminently powerful creature!

Chu Mu's breathing also slowed to a stop. The misty fog continued to linger around the surroundings, blocking Chu Mu's vision. Only, this vision barrier made Chu Mu feel even more flustered, because the aura had already completely enveloped this place!

Suddenly, a long, gorgeously tinted tail appeared on the top of Chu Mu's head. The tip of this long tail had a purple, whisker-like, wooly end. These tail wools lightly swept across the top of his head...

The entire world fell into deathly stillness. In this moment, Chu Mu's heart also seemed to stop beating. The clear feeling of that creature's tail sweeping across his head-how frightening would that be?!!

That unknown creature was above him!

At this moment, Chu Mu fundamentally could not raise his head. Even the Ice WInged Tiger floating in the air didn't dare to raise its head to look at that soul pet!!

Time suddenly turned incomparably slow. Chu Mu's mind went completely blank!

Powerful! In this instant, Chu Mu felt true strength. It was something that completely surpassed other soul pet's strength and realms-something that could not be assessed and even more so something that could not be resisted!!

It was unknown how long had passed before that aura finally slowly dissipated. The Ice Winged Tiger seemed to let out a sigh of relief and took in deep breaths.

Chu Mu's deathly still heart suddenly surged into a huge billow

after the unknown creature flew away. For a long while it was hard to calm down.

Despite having only seen the creature's gorgeous tail from a certain angle, Chu Mu could ascertain that this soul pet was a mysterious and ancient soul pet unknown to humans. Moreover, there fundamentally wasn't anybody that knew its name!

Meeting an eminently unknown soul pet in this sort of unique Prison Island, how could Chu Mu's heart stay calm? An uncontrollable thirst and desire to personally see this soul pet's actual appearance slowly grew in Chu Mu's heart!

Chapter 70: Middle Class Warrior Rank

The Ice Winged Tiger continued to dive downwards. As it approached the island, Chu Mu's heart gradually began to calm down. After passing through the mist, Chu Mu began to see a bit of green and verdant vegetation.

Various sounds of creatures rang out together. A few were cheerful, a few were peculiar, but when the Ice Winged Tiger descended, all of the creatures fled like a rocket. Another silence followed the clamorous noise.

"Beng"

The Ice Winged Tiger's imposing body stepped into the middle of a short underbrush. It retracted its wings, and in that instant, caused a wave of violent wind to sweep across the surrounding vegetation. The small and weak creatures within the surrounding 100 meters were suddenly scared away...

"Hou"

The Ice Winged Tiger twisted its head and let out a low roar at Chu Mu.

Chu Mu hadn't learned the language of beasts, and thus temporarily could not understand the Ice Winged Tiger's words. However, he guessed that the Ice Winged Tiger wanted him to get off its back.

High species creatures had greater wisdom, and a few soul pets even had wisdom that could compare with that of humans. These creatures thus had their own arrogance and dignity.

It could be considered extremely difficult to capture an Ice Winged Tiger. Even if one managed to capture it, the Ice Winged Tiger may still not let others aside from its master approach it.

This time, the Ice Winged Tiger had been ordered to bring Chu Mu here. Since they had already arrived, the Ice Winged Tiger naturally wanted to return. It didn't have any obligation to protect Chu Mu's life on this island.

"Hou~"

After Chu Mu jumped off its back, the Ice Winged Tiger let out another roar. Its massive wings suddenly unfurled, revealing blade-like feathers that were neatly embedded. Each edge showed distinctly, creating an imposing aura!

"Hu! Hu!!"

The Ice Winged Tiger raised another wave of chaotic airflow, and it quickly rose into the air before gradually disappearing into the white fog.

"This island's surroundings are completely made up of reefs and whirlpools. Even if there are water type soul pets, they would find

it hard to pass through. In the skies, there are territory-conscious flocks of winged type soul pets. Aside from possessing a soul pet with amazing strength, it is impossible to escape from here. It truly is a prison-like island." Seeing the Ice Winged Tiger leave, Chu Mu spoke with regret.

Because he wanted to remain safe, Chu Mu summoned Mo Xie and made her follow along beside him. Mo Xie currently had ample fighting strength, and there was no need to keep her inside the soul pet space.

"This island is truly unique. I'm sure that there are many priceless and unusual creatures." said Chu Mu.

"Wuwuwu~~" Little Mo Xie maintained her pitiful appearance and did not even feel like walking. Instead, she lay on Chu Mu's shoulder with her tail curled around Chu Mu's neck.

"You know Mo Xie, when I first saw you, within 10 days you had changed your species twice. How come right now, after so long, a mutation in species hasn't happened?" Chu Mu said, as he walked forward into the jungle.

"Wuwu" Mo Xie displayed an expression of grievance. It seemed that she herself didn't know why her species hadn't changed. At the very beginning, she only had to eat her fill and sleep. Then, after waking up, her appearance would have already changed...

"Perhaps it's determined by the precipitating of strength. When one's strength has been stored for a sufficient period of time, a

change will happen.” Chu Mu rubbed Mo Xie’s supple fur as he spoke.

“Wuwu” Mo Xie adorably nodded her head.

“It seems that I must obtain a soul crystal. That previous first rank soul crystal only gave you a few more attributes.” Chu Mu said.

When he mentioned soul crystals, Mo Xie instantly opened her small mouth and translucent saliva began to flow out. It was an expression of extreme gluttony…

Soul crystals were delicacies to soul pets. Especially regarding soul crystals with types that matched oneself, any soul pet would find it hard to resist a soul crystal’s temptation.

“Shashasha”

As he was walking, the small cyan bug suddenly let out a faint noise to warn Chu Mu.

Little Mo Xie maintained her Pitiful Appearance. Her body was clearly smaller than normal, enough so that she could lie on Chu Mu’s shoulder and sleep. As for the small cyan bug, it had squeezed into Mo Xie’s grand fur, and would normally only flee when a fight was happening.

The signal the small cyan bug let out wasn’t one that warned of

nearby creatures. Instead, it informed Chu Mu that there was something ahead.

Chu Mu himself also heightened his alertness slowly walked closer with Mo Xie.

When Chu Mu pushed aside a shrub, he suddenly discovered that the ground had congealed into a layer of ice. This ice had frozen the lowest layer of the shrub, and when Chu Mu walked over it, he easily crushed these weeds, causing a cracking sound.

Chu Mu walked forward slightly and immediately discovered a person's corpse. This corpse had been unsurprisingly frozen into an icecube, and his waist and abdomen areas had been ripped apart.

"Rapid Freeze. From the effects of the freeze, it must be at least a late stage Rapid Freeze. Perhaps this prisoner wasn't able to summon his soul pet in time and was immediately frozen to death." Chu Mu inspected this corpse, and only found a few soul cores. He didn't find any valuable items.

"Shashasha!!"

Suddenly, the small cyan bug's voice became somewhat urgent!

Chu Mu instantly maintained his vigilance. When the small cyan bug let out a noise, it meant that it had immediately detected the arrival of danger!

Frozen Ice Rapid Freeze. From high above on the treetop, a white line of ice abruptly flew downwards and quickly attacked the place where Chu Mu was standing!

“Mo Xie, Flame Awn!”

Chu Mu immediately reacted, and he gave Mo Xie an order.

Mo Xie’s response was extremely fast, and a demonic red light began flickering in her silver eyes. The fiery light flickering indicated that this middle stage Flame Awn clearly had a burning effect!

The burning Flame Awn very precisely struck the line of ice in the middle of the air, causing it to shatter.

“Ice Falcon! No wonder it could instantaneously kill a soul pet trainer.” Chu Mu’s gaze followed the line of ice, and immediately located the soul pet hiding on the treetop.

Ice Falcon, Beast Kingdom - Wing Type - Falcon Species - Middle Class Warrior Rank.

While immobile, the Ice Falcon was exactly like a lifelike ice sculptured falcon. It differed from the falcon because it had a tail about as long as its body that could also be used to determine its stage.

This Ice Falcon had three long, white-colored tails. This meant that it was a third phase Ice Falcon.

“A third phase first stage middle class Warrior Rank soul pet. Mo Xie, be a bit careful.” Chu Mu stared at the aggressive Ice Falcon that had already begun gathering soul power.

“Wuwuwu!!” Despite facing a soul pet much stronger than her, Mo Xie wasn’t scared in the slightest. Instead she let out a sound of provocation.

“Adhering Flame!”

Chu Mu quickly finished his incantation and a red colored flame was formed in between his hands.

The red flame rapidly rose into the air and slowly enveloped the gradually reddening fur of Mo Xie. In a split second, the scarlet red colored flame ignited on Mo Xie’s body-even her eyes were burning!

“Mo Xie, go injure it. I want to capture it.” After using Adhering Flame on Mo Xie, Chu Mu immediately gave her an order.

Chapter 71: Little Cyan Bug's Unprovoked Anger

In the past month, Chu Mu had seen many soul pets. Many of them were soul pets above the Third Phase, but of those soul pets, not a single one was good enough for Chu Mu to even consider catching. The Third Phase First Stage Ice Falcon before his eyes indeed had some strength. Though Chu Mu wasn't fully satisfied, he reasoned that it could still suffice as his Spirit Soldier level secondary soul pet……

The additional fire attribute of Adhering Flame had already started blazing on Mo Xie's body, as its scarlet flames added a splash of wildness to Mo Xie's silver fur!

This was Chu Mu's first time casting Adhering Flame on Mo Xie. Soul Technique - Adhering Flame was a technique that any non fire-repelling soul pet could use. It allowed a soul pet's body to have a degree of fire damage attached to it.

But when this soul technique was cast onto fire type soul pets, it created an even more distinct result.

Mo Xie was currently only at the Second Phase Ninth Stage. Restricted by her species rank, it was undoubtedly hard for her to fight with a Third Phase Middle Class Warrior Rank Ice Falcon. After all, the Ice Falcon's feathers were Third Rank feathers. Even if Mo Xie casted Blood Rending Claw, it would be hard for her to do damage without a direct hit.

Most importantly, the Ice Falcon also had terrifying ice magic. With just the slightest inattention, Mo Xie could immediately be frozen into an ice cube.

But, after being imbued with Adhering Flames, Mo Xie's entire body was now covered in strong flames. These flames not only increased Mo Xie's claws to Third Rank claws, but also covered her body, giving her a degree of immunity towards the Ice Falcon's ice abilities-equivalent to increasing her fur to the Third Rank as well. With Chu Mu conducting the battle, battling someone else who was above her phase, stage, and rank was not impossible!

After the power of Adhering Flame was cast upon Mo Xie, Mo Xie's fur was as if lit with fire. Against the Ice Falcon's cold air, there was no need for dodging anymore. Over a few skirmishes, Mo Xie didn't seem to be disadvantaged at all.

The Ice Falcon could fly. This was the only thing that Mo Xie couldn't deal with. If it flew into the skies and Mo Xie missed any attack, Mo Xie wouldn't be able to dodge when she free fell back onto the ground.

"Ice Spike! Mo Xie, use Dark Assault to dodge it and knock over that tree!"

Chu Mu immediately commanded.

Mo Xie's speed abruptly quickened. All the ice spikes raining down from above embedded themselves into the ground. The occasional spike hit Mo Xie, but would immediately be melted

away by the fiery crimson flames on her.

“Shua!!”

The late stage Dark Assault swept past as Mo Xie’s sharp claws suddenly slashed through the upright tree. The tree toppled over loudly, falling straight towards the Ice Falcon!

The Ice Falcon’s reactions weren’t slow either, though, and it immediately dodged to the side.

Seeing the Ice Falcon move, Chu Mu immediately smiled, and quickly started an incantation.

Before, the Ice Falcon kept hiding within the tree canopy, utilizing the dense treetops to dodge Mo Xie’s attacks. Once the tree fell, the Ice Falcon was instantly within sight and exposed in the empty skies.

“Rapid Freeze!”

Chu Mu’s incantation completed quickly. Two icy balls solidified on Chu Mu’s hands, quickly forming a line of ice spreading towards the sky!

The white line of ice sprang into the air and very accurately hit the Ice Falcon’s snow white wings!

Ice magic obviously did minimal damage to Ice Type soul pets, but Chu Mu wasn't hoping for his Rapid Freeze to do any damage to the Ice Falcon; he only hoped he would slow its movement slightly!

"Mo Xie, Ripping Claw!!"

Mo Xie's claws immediately latched onto the tree, causing her to dash into the canopy unusually quickly. Using the branch as leverage, she jumped straight into the air!

Blood Rending Claw: Fire!!

Raging flames burned on Mo Xie's claws. The effect of Adhering Flames finally completely showed itself through the Blood Rending Claw's scalding fire damage!

Ice Type soul pets could defend against fire damage very well, but once the fire was a certain degree, its damage towards Ice Type soul pets would be very evident!

The scorching flames quickly melted the thick ice armor covering the Ice Falcon. Without the ice feathers to stop it, Mo Xie's claws sliced straight into the falcon's flesh!!

"Yi!!"

The Ice Falcon immediately let out a pained screech, and was on the verge of falling out of the skies, barely keeping flight!

“Mo Xie, keep attacking, don’t let it regain flight!” Seeing the Ice Falcon hurt, Chu Mu immediately said to Mo Xie.

Mo Xie landed on another tree’s branch, adjusted her position and jumped again, her silver flamed body drawing an arc within the treetops.

“Yi!!” The Ice Falcon let out an angry call, striving to flap its wings and carry its wounded body into the air. Mo Xie’s attack only swiped past its claws, and she actually didn’t hit it down!

Seeing Mo Xie’s attack miss, Chu Mu immediately felt a pang of regret. The Ice Falcon could still fly, and since it was hurt now, it would definitely not fly low enough to fight Mo Xie anymore.

“Shashasha”

Just when Chu Mu thought the Third Phase Ice Falcon would get away, the little cyan bug on Chu Mu’s shoulder suddenly let out a light call and spat out white silk out of its little mouth!

The white silk quickly flew into the air, and to Chu Mu’s surprise, it quickly latched onto the Ice Falcon’s wings!

“Yi!!Yi!!”

The falcon let out a panicked cry and crazily started flapping its

wings, trying to struggle free of the white silk on its wings.

“Shashasha~~”

The little Cyan Bug kept spitting silk, swiftly wrapping it around the Ice Falcon many times. Just as it was about to escape, it was trapped again.

Without being able to flap its wings, the falcon couldn’t maintain itself in the air. Very soon, it slowly wobbled down from the air and fell straight into the forest.

“Well done!” Chu Mu smiled. This little cyan bug’s silk was indeed a counter to all Winged Soul Pets. Once they were entrapped, it was impossible for them to escape.

“I will reward you greatly in a moment.” The little cyan bug’s behavior was very unexpected by Chu Mu, so he patted the little guy’s head.

Finished saying that, Chu Mu immediately ran towards the place where the Ice Falcon fell.

However, just as he walked forward a few steps, Chu Mu stopped because right as he was about to cross this bush and chase after the hurt Ice Falcon, he saw a figure in front of him.

“What great luck, I seem to have found a heavily wounded Third Phase Ice Falcon.” the voice of a teen sounded.

Chu Mu didn’t immediately show himself but instead hid behind a tree, his eyes fixed on the teen, as he looked through the leaves.

“Shashasha” the little cyan bug seemed to be very angry at the person who was getting a “free lunch”.

“Don’t say anything, let's check out this person’s strength out first.” Chu Mu said quietly to the little cyan bug.

The island only contained Nightmare Palace prisoners. Any human seen was the most direct enemy, so Chu Mu naturally had to be more vigilant. If he could kill the other person he would, but if he couldn’t, then he would decisively leave.

“Shashashashashasha”

The little cyan bug seemed to be slightly unstable these days. It unexpectedly and very strangely stopped listening to Chu Mu, and instead suddenly jumped off of Chu Mu’s shoulder. It then crawled through the ground filled with branch and leaves, arriving at the teen’s feet without anyone else noticing.

The little cyan bug’s actions spooked Chu Mu. Being together for this many months, the little cyan bug was always very obedient and would always send danger signals at the most crucial moments. But, this time, it very brashly charged forward! This was an action that caused Chu Mu to feel very shocked!

Chapter 72: Accidentally Entering The Resting Grounds Of Ice Falcons

Three layers in and three layers out, the white silk was getting thicker and thicker. The soul pet trainer didn't even have time to react what had happened before being completely wrapped up!

Not too far away, Chu Mu idly stared at the teen who had completely become a white cocoon at the hands of the little Cyan Bug. He was stunned, completely not expecting this tiny vermin to spit out this much silk. Without anyone knowing, it bundled up a living person whole!

Being completely covered in white silk, this young prisoner couldn’t even breath. After struggling around on the ground for a while, he completely fell silent, probably dead by suffocation.

“Shashasha”

The little Cyan Bug crawled around the prisoner’s dead body, letting out furious sounds. It had an appearance that suggested that its fury hadn’t fully been let out, as it blamed this despicable man who stole the product of his labour.

Mo Xie, like Chu Mu, also showed a dazed expression, watching the suddenly “scarily strong” little Cyan Bug.

“Uhh, little guy, why did you suddenly become this aggressive?” Chu Mu walked up beside the little Cyan Bug, capturing the

abnormally behaving little guy.

“Wuwu~~” little Mo Xie immediately nodded, showing her approval of Chu Mu’s words. She also didn’t think the little gluttonous and lazy parasite would suddenly spit this much silk out.

“Shashasha” The little bug still stared at the corpse with unreleased anger, letting out a string of incomprehensible sounds to Chu Mu.

“It’s ok, it’s ok, stop being angry. We got the pet back.” Chu Mu calmed the bug and glanced at the whitened corpse……

This young prisoner probably just finished battling and had retracted his soul pet into his soul pet space. Otherwise, when the injured Ice Falcon fell, he would have immediately summoned his soul pet, instead of dying a tragic death from the little Cyan Bug’s white silk.

After comforting the little bug, Chu Mu walked in front of the Ice Falcon and started his soul pact incantation, attempting to capture this falcon as his Spirit Soldier secondary pet.

After casting it multiple times, the Ice Falcon clearly still showed signs of struggling, yet when Chu Mu cast it the seventh time, just when the soul pact halo enveloped the Ice Falcon, the wounded falcon suddenly closed its eyes……

“It died……How fragile……” Chu Mu watched the Ice Falcon slowly become lifeless and shook his head with a bitter laugh.

The Ice Falcon couldn’t be said to be a soul pet Chu Mu was very satisfied with. If it failed, Chu Mu wouldn’t have thought that it was a pity. Let alone the fact that this Ice Falcon’s fighting strength and vitality was indeed a bit too weak. Even if he succeeded in capturing it, it would probably be very difficult for the falcon to have any significant achievements.

Retrieving the Ice Falcon’s soul core, Chu Mu had wanted to also look around on the teen’s body for anything, but after seeing the tightly wrapped white silk around the body, he gave up the thought.

The little Cyan Bug’s silk spitting ability had clearly gotten stronger, because Chu Mu couldn’t even cut through it using his dagger anymore……

“Yi~~”

From the canopies came another shrill call. The vigilant Chu Mu immediately looked towards the source of the sound and found, within the deep green foliage, a few white feathers shaking.

“Another Ice Falcon?” Chu Mu said.

With enemies appearing, Mo Xie’s eyes immediately changed, her silver pupils glaring towards the direction of the falcon. The

Adhering Flames could approximately last five minutes, so the flames on Mo Xie's body were starting to disappear already.

"Yi"

Another shriek sounded and Chu Mu immediately turned around to face another direction.

"Two……"Chu Mu immediately creased his brow. On a treetop about fifty meters behind Chu Mu, another Ice Falcon eyed Chu Mu and Mo Xie as if they were but prey.

"Yi!!Yi!!!"

Abruptly, another two Ice Falcons' calls passed through the leaves above. Their voices seemed to bring an icy power with them, piercing straight towards Chu Mu.

"Is it possible that this is the resting grounds of Ice Falcons?!" Chu Mu's expression immediately changed. Looking around, he found that the white feathers that were faintly discernible through the treetops were growing in number!

"Run! Mo Xie!!"

Chu Mu didn't dare to hesitate for a single second. Immediately choosing a direction with the least Ice Falcons, he broke out into a full sprint!

Mo Xie also realised they had arrived at the wrong place, and followed close behind Chu Mu while protecting him.

“Yi!! Yi!!”

“Yi!! Yi!!”

The ear piercing screams instantly started on the treetops noisily, sending gusts of frigid air from above, and forming a thick layer of frost on the grounded plants!

The cold formed a cone and quickly spread along the ground, closely chasing the sprinting Chu Mu. The moment Chu Mu slowed down, he would definitely be frozen into an ice cube!

“Mo Xie, use Flame Awn to attack.” Feeling the Ice Falcons nearing, Chu Mu’s heart pumped even quicker.

Mo Xie swiftly climbed onto a tree ahead. Standing on the branch, her silver pupils flashed a demonic red. A flash of fire quickly weaved into existence in mid air. As if lighting the very air on fire, it created a faintly discernible flame, burning a Second Phase Ice Falcon’s wings.

The Ice Falcon’s feathers were Ice Type, so fire could hardly do much harm. The Flame awn simply caused minor burns to the Second Phase Ice Falcon, but didn’t inflict any substantial damage.

“Mo Xie, come back.” When Chu Mu saw that Mo Xie’s attacks would no longer be effective, he stopped Mo Xie’s meaningless assaults.

“Yi!!”

The Third Phase Ice Falcon was clearly faster, already arriving in the skies above Chu Mu. This Ice Falcon was clearly stronger than the one Chu Mu met earlier. Stirring up an impressive Ice Blade Whirlwind, it crazily started an attack towards Chu Mu and Mo Xie.

Ice Blade Whirlwind, the combination of an Ice and Wind type ability. No matter if either Chu Mu or Mo Xie were hit, they would definitely sustain serious damage.

With a diameter of six meters, the white whirlwind was like countless white blades mixed together, containing a devastating ability to damage. The dense forest Chu Mu ran past was immediately torn beyond recognition!

Seeing the completely disordered forest, Chu Mu’s heart still contained a lingering fear. If not for the forest’s plants blocking the majority of the attacks, this Ice Blade Whirlwind could’ve spelled the end for him.

After the Third Phase Ice Falcon’s attack failed, it let out a furious call and quickly flapped its wings into a dive, keeping its wings flat and cutting through the air like a white blade!

“Shashasha”

Just as Chu Mu was about to command Mo XIe, the little Cyan Bug on his shoulder let out an emotional sound. Before Chu Mu could even react, the little Cyan Bug’s sticky silk sprayed out again. Like a streak of white water droplets, it very accurately landed onto the Wing Slashing Ice Falcon!

Chapter 73: Cyan Bug Pupates

“Yi!!”

The Third Phase Ice Falcon’s Wing Slash abruptly ended mid air, its wings immediately bundled together by the incomparably sticky white silk. Even flapping its wings was beyond its capabilities, causing its body to eventually sway and fall diagonally from the treetops.

“Well done, Mo Xie, kill it!” Chu Mu glanced at the stuck Third Phase Ice Falcon and quickly sent a command to Mo Xie.

Mo Xie lept between the two trees, and quickly climbed to a high place. Leaping from there, her claws impressively ripped open the frozen Ice Falcon’s body!

The Ice Falcon’s wings were trapped, so it couldn’t put up any effective defense. Mo Xie’s Blood Rending Claw very accurately hit the falcon’s neck!!

The Ice Falcon’s neck was the weakest part of its defense, so even without the effects of Adhering Flame, Mo Xie’s claws was still able to completely rip through its defense, hitting its neck. Immediately, blood sprayed out into the sky as its white body plummeted right into a rigid thorn vine, piercing its body.

“Yi!! Yi!!”

The Ice Falcons who were chasing from behind saw the Third Phase Ice Falcon die in midair and instantly let out angry cries. Five or six Ice Falcons promptly started flapping their wings, causing darts of razor sharp icicles to rain from above, frenzily assaulting where Mo Xie was.

“Ding ding ding ding ding!!”

Icicles sprayed down, causing the forest to be riddled with holes. The trees and brushes were disfigured beyond recognition and the ground was covered in ice shards.

Mo Xie passed through the forest and inevitably got scraped by some icicles. Mo Xie had a Fire Type now, and ice counters fire. Ice attacks could also cause freeze damage to her defensive fur. Also, the Ice Falcons had the ability to fly. If not for the dense forest, Mo Xie would be hard pressed to fight the falcons.

“Sha sha sha~”

The little Cyan Bug made another sound. Just when Mo Xie was cut off by a Second Phase Ice Falcon between two trees, the little cyan bug spit out a white line of silk.

White silk began to fly across, but while it was still mid air, the little guy spewed another few equally long lines.

Every line of silk was nearly ten meters in length, and were spat

out at different angles, but both ends of every silk unerringly and accurately stuck onto the trunks of the two trees.

With a few short spits, the silk criss-crossed and actually magically created a white silk net between the two trees!

The agile Mo Xie just passed through under the silk web, but the falcons chasing Mo Xie crashed into the huge “spider” web without any defenses!

After the white silk net was hit, the silk connected to the two ends fell off. The Ice Falcons kept their momentum for a distance, and the white web conveniently wrapped around them!

Chu Mu stared blankly. He didn’t even know the little guy had this sort of ability!

Chu Mu’s little bug was pitifully small, yet such a small thing could spit out a silk web with a radius of ten meters, straightforwardly hitting down a Second Phase Ice Falcon. This was completely out of Chu Mu’s expectations.

“Yi!!”

Chu Mu didn’t even have the time to praise the little guy before another two Ice Falcons appeared in the air. Those two falcons were like two ice cold daggers held above Chu Mu’s head, causing Chu Mu to feel a wave of apprehension!

“Shashasha!!”

The little Cyan Bug was very weird today, always maintaining an air of “Don’t mess with me”. Facing the appearance of the two Ice Falcons, the little guy unexpectedly leapt straight off of Chu Mu’s shoulder.

Chu Mu didn’t wish for the little Cyan Bug to become the food of the Ice Falcon, and grabbed at the bug as fast as possible.

But this little guy’s ability to jump was insane. The little cyan body flew straight into the air. Quickly following it, white nets of silk exploded outwards, spreading everywhere in the air and formed white silk lumps as if balls of clouds indescribably condensed nearby!

“Yi!! Yi!!”

The two Ice Falcons instantaneously showed an expression of panic, doing everything they could to flap their wings. Seeing the clouds of silk that the little Cyan Bug spewed out was like seeing their scariest enemies.

“Shashasha”

The little guy’s anger was torrential. Seeing the two Ice Falcons fly away, it strangely controlled four silky threads from the clouds of silk to precisely tangle the Ice Falcons’ claws.

After the two falcons' claws were caught, they still kept flapping their wings, forcibly dragging the clouds of silk into the air along with the little bug itself.

"Little guy, quickly come back……" Seeing the little bug being pulled towards the Ice Falcon cast, Chu Mu's expression changed.

The little Cyan Bug's anger was crazy today. Different from its usual timid nature, it was incomparably brash. It actually just laid down on the clouds of silk and used its round eyes to glare at the cast of Ice Falcons aggressively.

Neither Chu Mu nor Mo Xie had the ability to fly, so they could only watch from below as the strange little bug was dragged towards the falcons.

"Wuwuwu" Little Mo Xie let out a sorrowful cry, telling Chu Mu to save the little guy.

But Chu Mu had no way to save the bug currently. The little guy was unusually reckless today!

"Shashasha"

The feeble sound echoed in the skies. Watching the little bug who was slowly nearing the falcons, the expression in Chu Mu's eyes changed. This little guy had spent four months with him and they had feelings for each other already. How could he simply watch as it was consumed?

Just as Chu Mu was about to spend his soul power to cast the soul technique Chong Mei, the cloud of silk suddenly expanded in mid air!

Lines of white silk spat out like crazy, as if countless tentacles were extending out of the silk cloud!

The silk cloud the little Cyan Bug cast unceasingly spewed out silk. These silk threads criss-crossed in the air, becoming unimaginably dense, and almost occupying all the air above-where the Ice Falcons were. Many Ice Falcons were instantly caught by the silk!

“Yi!! Yi!!”

“Yi!! Yi!!

The Ice Falcons’ panicked cries echoed through the skies as even more threads flew all over the place. In a short period of time, the vast majority of the Ice Falcons were trapped!

Chapter 74: Abnormal Metamorphosis, Gigantic Cocoon

As the silk dramatically increased, the silk thread cloud floating in the air that the little Cyan Bug spewed out had now completely become a white cloud lump, enveloping all the arrogant Ice Falcons.

On the ground, Chu Mu and Mo Xie both faced upwards, staring in disbelief at the cloud of silk that had consumed all the Ice Falcons. They couldn't say a single thing for quite a while.

"Wuwuwu~~" Mo Xie tilted her head towards Chu Mu and let out a mumble, her eyes full of questioning and puzzlement.

Chu Mu himself didn't understand the current situation either. The usually timid and cowardly little Cyan Bug unexpectedly performed such a miraculous feat!

"Gazhi……"

The cloud was airborne no longer and tumbled out of the air, falling straight onto the treetops, causing the branches to bend under the pressure. The silk hung up and down all along the tree tops.

Seeing the unfathomable mystery of the silk clouds, Chu Mu suddenly realized something and immediately rummaged through his pack for his "Pet Encyclodedia", flipping to the section

describing the Beast World - Bug Type - Cocoon Species!

There are innumerable soul pets. Ever since a young age, Chu Mu had started to recognize soul pets and understand all of the different kinds, but even soul pet trainers who had lived an entire century couldn't say they could recognize every single soul pet. Thus, as a qualified soul pet trainer, he had to have a "Pet Encyclopedia" on him at all times.

Chu Mu quickly flipped through the "Pet Encyclopedia" for related information on the little Cyan Bug while watching the humongous cocoon that spanned ten meters envelop the dozen Ice Falcons.

"Beast Kingdom Bug Type soul pets have a very peculiar development process. Often times, during every transition between phases, their bodies may become completely different. This, like tadpoles turning into frogs, is known as Metamorphosis. Within the Cocoon Species of Bug Types, many are like this-having an abnormal Metamorphosis when entering Second Phase."

Chu Mu read with astonishment the passage relating to the Cocoon Species and looked up again at the massive white cocoon, staring at it wide-eyed!

"This little guy's actually a soul pet?" Chu Mu said to himself with surprise.

Flipping down some more, the Pet Encyclopedia quickly revealed all sorts of soul pets similar to the little Cyan Bug, but none had the

exact same appearance as the little Cyan Bug.

Flipping all the way through, Chu Mu finally found, within a very rare subspecies of the Cocoon Species, a sentence that fit the little Cyan Bug.

“Prior to Second Phase, it is weak and cowardly, often leeching off a stronger organism. Cyan in color, larva form, has keen perception and can spit white silk……”

When Chu Mu read this sentence, an image of the little guy instantly appeared in Chu Mu’s mind.

This sentence was the fine print in the “Pet Encyclodedia”- the type of print that everyone would ignore. Especially for this soul pet’s description, there was barely more than a sentence. No sketch of its appearance, no description of its abilities, no tips for training……

“After the Second Phase, it will metamorphose, entering its real soul pet state, and will gain a surprising fighting strength.”

There were two sentences in total, summarized with unusual brevity. The “Pet Encyclopedia” contained almost any soul pet that any trainer could meet in the wild. Situations like this where only two sentences were written to describe a soul pet were extremely rare. The only reason this may happen is that the soul pet is rarely seen and owned.

“Little fellow, what species are you really……” Watching the humongous, white, and spherical cocoon, Chu Mu was left with even more questions.

Two densely leaved trees whose treetops connected in the air. But, within the complicated branches of the treetops, a cocoon wrapped from the inside out with white silk pressed down on the branches, seeming awfully prominent within the verdant forest…….

The “Pet Encyclopedia”’s explanation was only that long. Chu Mu only knew that the little Cyan Bug was entering into the second phase, metamorphosing into a real soul pet. Though looking forward to it, he didn’t know what to do.

As a result, Chu Mu and Mo Xie kept watch beside the little Cyan Bug for a few days.

But in these days the little Cyan Bug still remained a huge cocoon. In fact, Chu Mu noticed that the white silk was slowly expanding, and it enveloped three trees instead of two.

“Wuwuwu” Little Mo Xie didn’t understand.

“Bug Type soul pets often pupate in their transformation from phase to phase. If I had known it was a soul pet, I would’ve signed a soul pact with it, letting it metamorphose within my soul pet space. Now that he’s this big of a cocoon, I can’t even bring him around, yet the book said that it takes a very long time to pass through the pupal stage…… ”

“Wuwuwu, wuwuwu” Little Mo Xie let out bitter and sad calls, as if suddenly she suddenly lost a friend.

Chu Mu flipped through the “Pet Encyclopedia” just to check on the description for the Cocoon Species again and, feeling helpless, he found that most of the Cocoon Species took very long to metamorphose, and the higher the Species Rank, the longer the metamorphosis……

“Even the Servant Rank Cocoon Species Soul Pets need at least a month to complete its metamorphosis. The little guy just displayed such terrifying battling capabilities, so it probably isn’t simply at the Servant Rank. This metamorphosis will take at least a few months……” Chu Mu laughed bitterly as he watched the cocoon gradually expand day by day.

“Wuwuwu” Little Mo Xie let out a call.

“Waiting like this isn’t really an option. Let’s go to somewhere else for now, and come back to check on it after a while.” Chu Mu rubbed Mo Xie’s head and said.

“Wuwu” Mo Xie nodded.

“Don’t worry, its cocoon is very thick and not many soul pets can penetrate its defense. Additionally, there’s still a bunch of Ice Falcons living here. Those Ice Falcons don’t dare to trouble the little guy, but other soul pets won’t easily enter this area either.” Chu Mu said.

The little guy's cocoon was already nearly twenty meters in diameter. This defense was absolutely formidable. If there were really any soul pets that could break through all that, the soul pet's strength would have to be ridiculously strong as well, meaning there wasn't any point for Chu Mu and Mo Xie to stay.

"Let's go, Mo Xie." Chu Mu patted Mo Xie but noticed that Mo Xie's eyes were on the steep cliff behind the huge cocoon……

"What's up?'

"Wuwuwu" Mo Xie looked at the foliage covered cliffs and let out a weak noise.

"There's something there?" Chu Mu asked.

Mo Xie immediately nodded, took a step forwad and lead the way.

Chu Mu didn't know what Mo Xie discovered, so he also walked through the cocoon that the little guy had created and ran towards the cliff.

"It's a forest, yet there are so many Ice Falcons. Maybe there's some special Ice Type item……" Chu Mu's eyes brightened a bit.

When he neared, Chu Mu instantaneously noticed an embedded

cave on the suddenly uprising cliff. Around the cave was a bunch of Iron Green Vines, plants which were unafraid of cold.

Chapter 75: Ice Air Fairy

Crawling up the iron green vines, the cave was approximately 20 meters up the cliff. Chu Mu told Mo Xie to find a path in front before he himself slowly began crawling up.

“I should learn Wind Ride as soon as possible. The next time I’m being chased by something, I can run faster.” Chu Mu muttered to himself.

Wind Ride could lighten his bodyweight and when it reached the final stage, he could even float for a short instant. It was extremely practical.

“Wuwu.” Mo Xie had already crawled up to the cave’s entrance and was informing Chu Mu that there weren’t any beasts in the cave.

“This place should be the Ice Falcons’ nest. The previous flock of Ice Falcons were probably guarding the cave, but were ultimately turned into the small cyan bug’s food for its chrysalis stage...”

After Chu Mu crawled into the cave, he immediately felt a wave of cold air wash over his face. He couldn’t help but shiver.

As he walked deeper into the cave, the cold aura became even colder. The sides of the cave were no longer covered by the green-colored iron green viness, but rather thick white chunks of ice.

“Huhu”

The piercing cold caused Chu Mu to exhale a cloud of fog. He was just previously still in the tropical jungle and now, in a short instant, he was walking through an ice cold environment. Chu Mu was not used to this sort of temperature change.

Ultimately, Chu Mu started hugging Mo Xie and let her release a bit of heat in order to resist the onslaught of coldness.

The cave gradually darkened, and Chu Mu also released his soul remembrance in order to know what was ahead.

Suddenly, Chu Mu felt some movement from within the depths of the ice covered cave. This wriggling movement was extremely minute, and it was as if two chunks of ice were lightly rubbing against each other-no sound could even be heard.

“Mo Xie, Flame Awn.” Chu Mu put Mo Xie down and gave an order.

Mo Xie immediately jumped down, and a demonic ray of fire instantly blossomed from her two silver eyes. Suddenly, the two rays of fire began interweaving amidst the pitch black cave.

The moment the fire was ignited, the entire cave became extremely lustrous due the cover of ice crystals. The red colored light of fire ceaselessly reflected around causing the cave to turn even brighter.

“Ling~”

The moment the fire was ignited, a melodious shout instantly rang out from within the cave. With one glance ahead towards the area which he had sensed something, Chu Mu saw a snowy white creature.

“Ice Air Fairy!”

Even though the fire illuminated the cave for only a short while, Chu Mu was able to instantly recognize the soul pet hiding in the icy cave.

Ice Air Fairy, Elemental World - Ice Type - Fairy Species - High Class Warrior Rank

The upper half of its body took on a humanoid figure, and the lower half was composed of ice. The Ice Air Fairy’s body was covered by thick layers of ice, and it seemed like it was using the technique Ice Armor at all times. It possessed the ability to control ice that surpassed any other creature. Its strength would unceasingly rise when cultivating in this sort of extreme environment filled with ores.

“It’s still at the second phase sixth stage, but can already create such a large iced over cave. To become the patron saint of the Ice Falcons, this Ice Air Fairy is incredible.” Chu Mu revealed a happy expression.

The reason why the Ice Falcons would stay here was clearly because of the ice covered cave created by the Ice Air Fairy. In order to have a better life, the Ice Falcons would naturally consecrate this special Ice Air Fairy as their patron saint. Moreover, this Ice Air Fairy had definitely received special attention from the Ice Falcon group and was thus much stronger than normal Ice Air Fairies.

The small cyan bug still needed a long while before it finished its pupate stage and transformed into an actual soul pet. Chu Mu naturally didn't want the second soul pet spot from his Soul Soldier stage to be vacant. Fortunately, this Ice Air Fairy happened to be a soul pet that Chu Mu was extremely satisfied with.

"Mo Xie, it's up to you!" Chu Mu intentionally retreated a bit as he spoke to Mo Xie.

Mo Xie naturally knew of Chu Mu's fondness towards this Ice Air Fairy. Her pair of eyes that were already ignited with flames closely watched the eminently stunned Ice Air Fairy.

This Ice Air Fairy seemed to have lived its entire life in this cave and had received the Ice Falcons' protection. It didn't harbor any malevolent intentions towards any other creatures, so its conscience was extremely pure. It wasn't until Mo Xie launched herself at it that this Ice Air Fairy finally recognized the opposing party's evil intentions.

While Chu Mu retreated, he chanted an incantation and used the

last of his soul power for Adhering Flame, and attached it to Mo Xie's body.

Mo Xie was at the second phase ninth stage, and was three stages higher than this Ice Air Fairy. However, the Ice Air Fairy was a high rank Warrior Rank soul pet and its defensive and magic damage abilities were rather terrifying. Even five phase two stage six Servant Rank soul pets would be no match for it.

This stage two phase six Ice Air Fairy's body was always covered by Ice Armor and the defense of the skin on its body was extremely strong. Without Adhering Flame, Mo Xie fundamentally could not render any damage upon this Ice Air Fairy.

"Huhu"

The flames on Mo Xie's silver white fur were ignited, and the Soul Soldier ability let Mo XIe annex the ability to burn on her claws!

Blood Rending Claw!

Mo Xie's battle experience was way too rich in comparison to the Ice Air Fairy. After Chu Mu's order, Mo Xie located the most optimal attack location and her Blood Rending Claw abruptly swept across the Ice Air Fairy's body!

"Zizi"

Like it was slashing across glossy metal, Mo Xie's Blood Rending Claw fully struck the Ice Air Fairy, but didn't cause any fatal damage to it. It only left a scratch on the Ice Armor.

Chu Mu was shocked. After all, he had given Mo Xie the addition of Adhering Flame and had increased her attack power to the very limit. However, in this situation, with a direct attack, it had surprisingly only left a mere scratch on the Ice Air Fairy's body. The Ice Air Fairy's defensive ability was astonishingly strong!

"Ling!!"

The Ice Air Fairy which received the attack let out a somewhat stunned yell. It seemed to have felt pain and due to some instinct, it released an ice attribute technique.

A plethora of frosted ice blades appeared around the Ice Air Fairy's body.

"Shuashuashua!!"

The frosted ice blades burst out and flew around the cave like ice blades. Instantly, myriads of deep blade scars appeared in the rocks on the sides of the cave. An ear-piercing noise resounded around the cave.

Chu Mu decisively retreated, but Mo Xie didn't move and instead performed Moon Shadow, dodging the chaotically attacking frosted ice blades that were flying about.

“Mo Xie, continue to attack.”

After dodging the frosted ice blades, Mo Xie’s fierce claws were covered by a scarlet, red colored flame. She continued to charge towards the Ice Air Fairy.

The Ice Air Fairy had zero battle experience and seeing Mo Xie, completely covered in scarlet colored flames charge forth, it revealed an expression of panic and unexpectedly immediately turned around and fled.

Mo Xie’s Blood Rending Claw struck the Ice Air Fairy’s skin once more and another mark appeared on its body. Only, this time it still didn’t cause too much harm to the Ice Air Fairy.

“Mo Xie, circle around its retreat and continue to run.” Seeing that the Ice Air Fairy simply did not have much of an intention of fighting, a smile instantly appeared on Chu Mu’s face.

Mo Xie’s running speed was exceptionally quick and as she chased after and moved around the Ice Air Fairy, the flames on her body continuously danced about. It created a scarlet colored ring of fire around the Ice Air Fairy.

The ring of fire only caused a bit of a burning injury to the Ice Air Fairy, but it was still extremely afraid. It unexpectedly let out a panicked shout.

“It possesses a unique environment, but it doesn’t have any will to fight...” Chu Mu looked at the incomparably cowardly Ice Air Fairy and said, “However, that doesn’t matter. Lots of training will definitely make it it into not a bad soul pet.”

Chu Mu let Mo Xie continue to maintain the ring of fire. The Ice Air Fairy didn’t like the fire’s temperature and didn’t even release its frosted ice blades. Instead, it ceaselessly let out the weird shout.

“This Ice Air Fairy... it truly is foolishly adorable...” Chu Mu helplessly shook his head. Immediately, he felt that there was simply no need to injure it. Directly chanting the Soul Pact Incantation would be better.

“Yi!!! Yi!!!’

Just at this time, from outside the cave rang the piercing sharp cries of Ice Falcons!!

Chapter 76: Capture-A New Soul Pet

The sharp noises continuously echoed inside the cave and Chu Mu's expression instantly changed. It was very clear that the other Ice Falcons had already discovered that something was wrong, and had flown back from far away.

Chu Mu immediately looked towards the even deeper part of the cave. Time was pressing and he didn't have any longer to think, so he immediately chanted the Soul Pact Incantation. No matter if the capture this time was successful or not, Chu Mu would bring Mo Xie away from here.

The incantation's blue halo of light gradually appeared and gently enveloped the Ice Air Fairy's body. It continued to curl around the Ice Air Fairy for an abnormally short period of time, sometimes growing smaller, and sometimes growing larger.

"Yi!!"

Even sharper noises rang out as Chu Mu felt wave after wave of cold wind attack his back, making him feel a chill on his neck.

"Mo Xie, we're leaving!" Chu Mu didn't hesitate any longer and immediately ran deeper into the cave.

Mo Xie also stopped running around the Ice Air Fairy and followed beside Chu Mu as they ran deeper into the cave.

There was wind blowing outwards from within the cave, indicating that the cave was connected to the outside world. Chu Mu was also not worried about being trapped by the Ice Falcons within the depths of the cave.

“Yi!!”

The sounds grew increasingly closer, and Chu Mu was already able to hear the beating of their wings. However, Chu Mu didn’t look back, and he instead ordered Mo Xie to use Flame Awn, using the flames as a barrier for the Ice Falcons behind him.

However, as he was running, Chu Mu distinctly felt a trace of his remembrance connect with an ice cold aura. In the next instant, Chu Mu felt his consciousness enter the ice cave. It was exceptionally cold. After the cold, though, it was an amiable familiarness.

“This… this Ice Air Fairy…” Sensing the trace of a special mental connection, the expression on Chu Mu’s face seemed rather strange.

This strange expression was a mix of pleasant surprise, suspicion, amazement, and helplessness.

Chu Mu had already discarded any hopes of capturing the Ice Air Fairy. Yet, as he was running away, the ice-like pure consciousness of the Ice Air Fairy had unexpectedly acknowledged the Soul Pact between it and Chu Mu, successfully completing the Soul Pact!

“Yi!! Yi!!”

After the Ice Air Fairy connected its mind with Chu Mu’s, the Ice Falcons seemed to have sensed that their patron saint no longer belonged to them. They let out an even more terrifying screech, and surprisingly used a formidable Ice Blade that was sent roaring towards the depths of the cave.

Feeling the turbid whirlwind from the Ice Blade and hearing the roaring sound, Chu Mu didn’t dare to hesitate in the least and immediately chanted an incantation. The Ice Air Fairy, which had extremely low wisdom, was recalled into his soul pet space.

“Huhuhuhu!!”

The roaring whirlwind of Ice Blades filled the entire cave and closed in upon Chu Mu, making him already feel wave after wave of lacerating pain on his back.

“Mo Xie, this way!”

Just as the roaring Ice Blades swept past them, Chu Mu hastily picked up Mo Xie and dived into a small cave off to the side.

“Longlonglong”

The roaring Wind Blades furiously whistled by Chu Mu’s ear and continued to sweep through the depths of the cave. In the middle of the iced over cave, a plethora of ice fragments were scattered all

over the ground.

“Wuwuwu”

Mo Xie jumped out of Chu Mu’s embrace and used her tongue to lick his cheek as if she was asking him something.

“I’m fine, I’m fine…”

“Wuwu”

“Yes, yes I succeeded… but I think that this Ice Air Fairy has no idea as to what a soul pact entails, and for some reason just accepted it…” said Chu Mu.

Standing up, Chu Mu swatted the dregs of ice off his body and followed down the forked off cave.

Currently, Chu Mu only had enough soul power to feed the White Nightmare. He could only summon the Ice Air Fairy after recovering a bit of soul power .

“Linglingling~”

In Chu Mu’s mind, the Ice Air Fairy’s melodious voice instantly rang out. This voice was clearly due to its suspicion of both the soul pet space and the unfathomable mental connection.

“This is your new environment. Heal the two wounds on your body first.” Chu Mu used soul remembrance to speak to the Ice Air Fairy.

The Ice Air Fairy had a blank expression and ceaselessly wandered around Chu Mu’s soul pet space in a rather confused state.

Seeing the Ice Air Fairy’s state, Chu Mu let out a bitter laugh. Elemental Kingdom creatures evidently had lower wisdom than other soul pets. It wasn’t uncommon to capture one without having to fight.

However, capturing a high ranking Warrior Rank Ice Air Fairy without a fight was definitely something rare. Moreover, from the Ice Air Fairy’s display of wisdom, this fellow was like a child-it didn’t understand anything…

Elemental Kingdom soul pets had rather strong immunity against mental abilities, so Chu Mu wasn’t afraid of the Ice Air Fairy being defeated by a mental attack due to its low intelligence. As for fights, Chu Mu could completely command them. The Ice Air Fairy only had to be in the right position, and the low wisdom of Elemental Kingdom soul pets wouldn’t affect it that much.

Additionally, Chu Mu felt that the main cause for the Ice Air Fairy’s low intelligence was due to it being raised by Ice Falcons. Once it came into contact with the external world, its wisdom would naturally develop and mature.

Chu Mu was definitely extremely lucky, as he was a fourth remembrance Soul Soldier that was able to obtain a High Class Warrior Rank soul pet.

No matter what rank a soul pet trainer was at, he could make a soul pact with any species of soul pets. However, no soul pet trainer, when weak, would ever make a soul pact with a high ranking soul pet.

High species ranking soul pets possessed strength that developed extremely quickly, and their intelligence would also mature very quickly. Moreover, they had their own pride and dignity which was rooted in their bones. Even if one were to sign a pact with a human when the pet was young and had low intelligence, after advancing to a certain stage, the said soul pet would still rebel.

This sort of rebellion would not remove the soul pact between the two. Nevertheless, the soul pet would still not listen to any of the soul trainer's commands and would often wander off by itself, effectively removing itself from its master's control.

Once the soul pet left the master, it would be impossible to recall it. Unless it died, it would forcibly occupy one of the soul pet trainer's soul pet spot and summoning positions.

Therefore, soul pet trainers signing a soul pact with a high ranking species soul pet was not very wise.

Normally, it would be best for Soul Disciples to sign a soul pact with a Servant Rank soul pet. Soul Soldiers would sign a soul pact

with Warrior soul pets and below, and Soul Masters would sign a soul pact with Commander Rank and below.

Chu Mu was currently a fourth remembrance Soul Soldier, and signing a soul pact with a High Class Warrior Rank soul pet was but the most fitting.

Chu Mu walked towards the direction the blowing wind came from. As he got deeper, the layer of ice on the cave gradually grew thinner, and slowly iron green vines began to appear once more.

“There’s light. This should lead to another area.”

The light rays permeated through into the cave, but Chu Mu didn’t rush to leave. Instead, he rather excitedly flipped through the <<Pet Encyclopedia>> and looked for what abilities his new soul pet, the Ice Air Fairy, possessed.

Chapter 77: Innate First-Rate Ice Type Talent

Ice Air Fairy:

Elemental Kingdom - Ice Type - Fairy Species - High Class Warrior Rank

With its exceptionally advantageous ability to control ice, any ice attribute technique in the hands of the Ice Air Fairy would reach perfection when performed. Thus, it was the soul pet in the Warrior Rank with the best innate ice talent.

Species Technique: Ice Armor (Constantly maintains the Ice Armor status. The Ice Armor technique is added on top of its originally defensive ice skin)

“The Ice Air Fairy’s defensive skin should be of the final stage second rank Ice Skin. With the additional effect of Ice Armor, its defense should rival that of a middle stage third rank ice attributed defensive skin. No wonder Mo Xie’s Blood Rending Claw, even with the attachment of Adhering Flame, was unable to break apart the Ice Air Fairy’s defense.” said Chu Mu.

Basic Techniques: Rapid Freeze, Frosted Ice Blade, Ice Wall, Ice Sword

Primary Techniques: Ice Blade Roar, Thorny Ice Flower,

Freeze Slow

High Ranking Techniques: Hail, Snowstorm, Ice Air Dance

The description of the Ice Air Fairy's techniques in the <<Pet Encyclopedia>> immediately made Chu Mu's eyes light up.

The Ice Air Fairy was truly worthy of being a high class Warrior Rank soul pet. In total, it had 10 techniques which all possessed threatening attack power. Moreover, the Ice Air Fairy's Ice Armor Technique could be used on his own body. If he were to encounter danger, Chu Mu could make the Ice Air Fairy put the Ice Armor onto his own body in order to resist a few soul pet attacks.

Chu Mu looked through the introduction of the Ice Air Fairy in the <<Pet Encyclopedia>> very carefully. The description inside the <<Pet Encyclopedia>> was only for the common Ice Air Fairy. Different Ice Air Fairies could also comprehend different techniques, and the specifics regarding control over the Ice Air Fairy would still need to be figured out through battles.

"Today, we'll first rest here. There aren't any traces of other creatures here, so it should be relatively safe." Chu Mu had used Adhering Flame twice, Rapid Freeze once, and one soul pact today. The soul power he held had pretty much all been used up, and the remainder of his soul power needed to be used to feed the White Nightmare.

Chu Mu didn't recall Mo Xie and instead made her used Flame

Awn to heat up the cave's rocks. Then he embraced the warm Mo Xie and awaited for dusk's arrival.

"Nie"

Not long after, the White Nightmare awoke from its slumber. Chu Mu immediately used his soul power to feed the White Nightmare.

The White Nightmare's species rank was extremely high. If Chu Mu's strength didn't increase quickly, the White Nightmare wouldn't defect, but instead immediately devour his soul.

Once all his soul power had been used up by the White Nightmare, Chu Mu closed his eyes and entered a silent cultivation state. He tried to recover as much of his soul power as possible.

In one night, Chu Mu was only able to recover about 20-30% of his soul power. However, it was enough to summon the Ice Air Fairy.

Chu Mu recalled Mo Xie into the soul pet space and chanted the Ice Air Fairy's summoning incantation.

A snowy white radiance gradually began shimmering in front of Chu Mu, forming a white design. The Ice Air Fairy's body slowly appeared in the middle of the design...

The Ice Air Fairy emerged and its expression was still eminently

lost. It seemed as if it would feel fear if there wasn't ice in its surroundings. Unconsciously, it drew closer to Chu Mu a bit.

The Ice Air Fairy's body was extremely cold, and normal people simply could not bear it. However, Chu Mu had already signed a Soul Pact with the Ice Air Fairy, so when he came in contact with it, Chu Mu only felt a wave of cold but wasn't frostbitten by its body.

The Ice Air Fairy was the purest elemental creature. It was naturally most adept at using ice attribute magic, so the direction Chu Mu would cultivate the Ice Air Fairy would be through the purest ice attribute. He absolutely would not raise any other non-sensible attributes of the Ice Air Fairy.

"This mountain cave isn't bad. We'll rest here then. We've been chased the entire night by a group of Hunting Wolves..." Suddenly a male voice from outside the cave was heard.

"Yes, this place seems relatively safe." Another somewhat coarse voice rang out.

The cave only had one straight path. When the two prisoners walked into the cave, they immediately saw Chu Mu and the Ice Air Fairy beside him.

"There's someone here!" The male with the coarse voice instantly saw Chu Mu and his eyebrows immediately creased. This man's clothing was in rags, and his hair was unkempt. His entire being seemed like a prisoner who had just escaped prison.

The other male's body was slightly skinny. The clothes on his body had a few torn holes in them, and there were also a few bloodstains on top. It seemed like he had just experienced a fight.

"Slaughter him!" Seeing that Chu Mu was alone, killing intent immediately appeared in the coarse male's eyes. He rapidly chanted an incantation and summoned his soul pet.

Under Prison Island's unique environment, everybody had to maintain an acrimonious relation with each other. If one had the opportunity to kill the opposing party, he wouldn't be compassionate or lenient. The two people saw that Chu Mu wasn't more than a 15 year old boy and, under this circumstance, why would they easily let him off?!

"Yi!!"

The sound of an Ice Falcon resounded once more and the coarse male instantly summoned a third phase Ice Falcon that immediately attacked Chu Mu.

"Yi~~" Suddenly, the flying Ice Falcon stopped in mid-air. As it was approaching, it was slightly stunned as it looked at the Ice Air Fairy.

The man's Ice Air Falcon was clearly obtained from within the surrounding area. The obvious pause that had appeared should have been due to puzzlement of the Ice Falcon's old patron saint appearing here.

Chu Mu wouldn't let such an opportunity in battle slip by, and promptly gave an order to the Ice Air Fairy to attack the dazed Ice Falcon.

The Ice Air Fairy's intelligence was as pure as snow. The order Chu Mu gave through soul remembrance would be followed by the Ice Air Fairy. There wouldn't be any hesitation. Immediately, the Ice Air Fairy lifted its hands and recited a fairy species' incantation!

Frost Ice Blade!

Six razor sharp frozen blades were instantly suspended around the Ice Air Fairy's surroundings. Following the direction of the Ice Air Fairy's two snowy ice hands, they transformed into terrifying lacerating weapons that rushed towards the Ice Falcon.

The Ice Air Fairy's species ranking was slightly higher than the Ice Falcon's. Moreover, the lower the Ice Air Fairy's intelligence was, the better the usage of ice attributed techniques would become. The Frosted Ice Blade was at least at the final stage; this sort of attack was enough to break apart the Ice Falcon's defense!

"Yiyi~~" The Ice Flacon instantly let out a panicked and confused screech. It flapped its wings and a fanned up a chaotic Ice Blade Whirlwind in an attempt to defend itself.

The Ice Blade Whirlwind's power clearly could not resist the quickly piercing Frosted Ice Blades. The six Frosted Ice Blades flew

across, and the Ice Blade Whirlwind instantly subsided!

“Shuashuashua!!”

The sharp blades swept past, and one of them managed to strike the evading Ice Falcon, turning one of its wings into shattered ice!

“It’s an Ice Air Fairy!”

The skinny male immediately let out a fearful cry!

Previously, the light in the cave was dim and he had only seen Chu Mu. He hadn’t seen the Ice Air Fairy in the shadows.

Chu Mu’s appearance was only that of a fifteen year old or so youth. The two males naturally didn’t believe that this sort of person could be of any threat. Yet, they didn’t think that this person unexpectedly had a high ranking Warrior Rank Ice Air Fairy. This illustrated that this youth was a Soul Soldier!

“Double Ice Wall!” Chu Mu also discerned that the strength of these two males was average. A smile immediately emerged on his face, and he continued to order the Ice Air Fairy to release magic.

“Ling!!” The Ice Air Fairy produced a clear shout and an incantation was chanted once more!

A snowy white halo began revolving around the Ice Air Fairy and

following the completion of its last incantation, two ice walls suddenly burst up from the ground, sealing the entire cave.

"Run!" The two prisoners realized that Chu Mu's Ice Air Fairy wasn't the best enemy to provoke and they promptly turned tail and ran.

He gazed passed the transparent ice wall and as he looked at the two fleeing prisoners, Chu Mu helplessly shook his head. He said to the Ice Air Fairy: "There should be one wall in front and one wall behind in order to seal them inside. However, your ability to use two ice walls at once made me rather surprised. Your Ice Wall should be at the late stage."

"Ling." The Ice Air Fairy, which had made a mistake during the fight, was somewhat grieved as it produced a tiny voice.

"It doesn't matter. Your battle experience is too little. In the future you'll be able to quickly understand what I mean." Chu Mu patted the Ice Air Fairy and laughed as he spoke.

Chapter 78: Fragmented Map

The Ice Air Fairy was extremely naive. Once Chu Mu consoled it, it immediately produced a cheerful noise.

Chu Mu made the Ice Air Fairy remove the Ice Wall and brought it out of the cave to see the world outside.

However, after just walking a few steps, a shabby scroll appeared under his feet. Looking at its appearance, it seemed to have been accidentally dropped by the two flustered and fleeing men.

Chu Mu picked it up and slowly opened it.

The scroll was clearly a Nightmare Palace scroll, and the background design depicted a Nightmare ignited with devil flames. The scroll was split into four sections, and each section was full of names. Most of these names had a particular magic lustre to them.

Chu Mu felt a bit suspicious as to what this scroll full of names was for. He scanned through most of it, but didn't find anything useful.

"Lingling" The Ice Air Fairy inquisitively moved its head over and looked at the weirdly shaped words; it looked confused and at a loss.

"These are human characters, you can't comprehend it... I also don't know what their meaning entails. There are so many

names.” Chu Mu said to the Ice Air Fairy.

The Ice Air Fairy produced an animated voice and extended its extremely thin finger. It slowly floated in front of Chu Mu and then pointed at a name on the fourth section of the scroll. It then let out an excited noise.

Chu Mu followed the Ice Air Fairy’s finger and looked at the name. He immediately revealed a rather flabbergasted expression.

The name that the Ice Air Fairy was pointing at was “Chu Mu”. Chu Mu hadn’t realized that the scroll also contained his name.

“Could this be the Prison Island’s 3000 prisoners list of names!?”

Chu Mu made this conjecture, and he promptly began looking through these names row by row.

As expected, Chu Mu found Cao Yi’s name in the second section. Xia Guanghan had mentioned that Cao Yi had also been thrown onto Prison Island.

Finding Cao Yi’s name made Chu Mu even more sure of his conjecture. In other words, the names of the three thousand prisoners on Prison Island were all on this scroll carrying a magic lustre.

Chu Mu began carefully examining the scroll full of names and found that the majority of names had a lustre circulating on them.

A very few portion of the names were completely dark without any lustre.

"These dark names..." Chu Mu immediately linked it to a possibility.

Chu Mu remembered that Xia Guanghan possessed something that could lock his soul remembrance onto Chu Mu's White Nightmare. This particular ability gave Xia Guanghan knowledge of the White Nightmare's location.

"Could it be that the Nightmare Palace officials left a soul imprint on all the prisoners on the island and then engraved them onto this scroll? Once someone dies, his or her soul imprint would disappear..." Chu Mu made another speculation.

After counting, Chu Mu promptly found that about 100 people's soul imprint had disappeared from this special scroll. If Chu Mu's guess was correct, then these should be the 100 prisoners on this island that had already lost their lives. Perhaps they were murdered by other prisoners, or perhaps they were killed by the dangerous soul pets on this island.

"Nightmare Palace's Imprint Master is truly exceptional. He surprisingly was able to imprint this special death scroll." Chu Mu muttered to himself.

If such a death scroll was held by many of the prisoners, then they would know that there were still enemies on this island. Thus, it would put an end to a few people hiding in certain areas,

evading this cruel massacre.

“Lingling~”

The Ice Air Fairy seemed to have discovered something, and it pointed to another area on the scroll while letting out a soft voice. It seemed to want to tell Chu Mu something.

Chu Mu turned the scroll over and found a small, tinted drawing on the other side. It looked like a small map.

]The small map was pasted onto the scroll and with a light pull, it was ripped off.

Chu Mu examined it up and down. This badly damaged map was on an oddly shaped bamboo shoot. The end of the bamboo shoot continued to extend, but the map was extremely small and only clearly displayed a small portion of the island.

Chu Mu more or less looked through the map and attempted to compare it with his current surroundings.

Outside the cave was an enormous basin. The inside of the basin was covered with trees and vegetation. As far as he could see, it seemed like it was a green sea .

Standing at the edge of the cave, Chu Mu could see an empty spot

in the middle of the forest. There was probably a lake there.

Chu Mu carefully examined the map and found that this small bamboo shoot shaped map seemed to contain an area that resembled where he was at. In other words, this little map piece showed the type of island in the area he was within

“It should be here, right?”

After comparing once, Chu Mu quickly found a precipice and forested basin point. He instantly determined his current location.

With this small map, Chu Mu could have a better grasp of his surroundings. He was also unlikely to get lost in certain areas.

Chu Mu specially made a marking on the small cyan bug’s chrysalis place, and he then followed the map’s directions towards the lake’s location.

The fresh water sources on the island were not particularly abundant. During this entire day, Chu Mu was already somewhat parched and had to replenish his water supply.

It was hard to fathom danger in the forest, so Chu Mu made the Ice Air Fairy follow along beside him in order to avert sneak attacks from a few terrifying creatures.

“Little Bai?”

“Ling~” The Ice Air Fairy instantly shook its head, determined to not let Chu Mu give it that name.

Chu Mu, however, felt that “Little Bai” rather fit this Ice Air Fairy and its feeble-mindedness. As a high ranking Warrior Rank soul pet that made a soul pact with a human so easily, it truly did lose a bit of face for high ranking Warrior Rank soul pets...

“Ning?” Chu Mu still paid particular attention to soul pet “civil rights” and when giving a name, he still sought out the opinions of the soul pet.

The Ice Air Fairy immediately nodded its head. It seemed to like this name. Simple, but not lacking in meaning. Wild, but not lacking in grace. It excitedly produced a melodious sound.

“Second phase sixth stage, second rank late stage Ice Skin. Frosted Ice Blade is at the late stage, Ice Wall is at the complete stage and the other techniques have not been learned yet...” After obtaining a new soul pet, the first order of business was to completely understand his soul pet. This way, Chu Mu could utilize it better in battle, and he could raise the soul pet’s fighting ability to the max.

“Lingling”

“Okay okay. I know you’re hungry. We’ll look around at the lake. There are probably a few ice type soul pets resting there.” said Chu Mu.

From the very beginning, Chu Mu had matched his gait with the Ice Air Fairy as they walked. This way, they could prevent hidden attacks. Chu Mu's soul power had a limit, and he couldn't constantly release his soul remembrance to feel the movements in his surrounding.

Previously, when the small cyan bug was with him, Chu Mu didn't need to worry about this. The small creature's perceptive ability surpassed many strong soul pets. However, currently, Chu Mu had no choice but to be careful.

He and the Ice Air Fairy walked forwards towards the lake. Just as they saw the clear reflection of waves in sunlight, Chu Mu suddenly stopped his advance and his eyebrows creased.

"Ning, Ice Wall!"

Chu Mu immediately spoke an order. His tone had clearly become more serious!

The Ice Air Fairy was stunned at first and its gaze was somewhat blank. Shortly after, it became aware of the surrounding temperature rapidly dropping. It haphazardly chanted a fairy incantation.

Chapter 79: Dual Soul Summons

A white frost began coagulating around the Ice Air Fairy. Following its piercing chant, suddenly, two five meter tall Ice Walls appeared. One in front one and one behind, sandwiching the Ice Air Fairy and Chu Mu in the middle!

“Ding! Ding!! Ding!!”

Ear piercing noises instantly resounded as the Ice Blades struck the Ice Wall, leaving numerous cavities upon the five meter tall Ice Wall.

After being subjugated to numerous Ice Blades, the Ice Wall began to sway. Thick blocks of ice began to fall off and smash to the ground.

“Put Ice Armor on me.”

“Ling~~”

Once the Ice Air Fairy finished its Ice Wall, it chanted another incantation, and its two hands began wielding a plethora of ice crystals. These ice crystals coiled around Chu Mu’s body and quickly covered up his body. Aside from his head and joints, Chu Mu’s body was completely covered by the Ice Armor!

Practically the same moment that the defense was put onto Chu Mu’s body, a ray of cold light abruptly swept past Chu Mu, hitting

him heavily.

Chu Mu's stomach was hit, and his body immediately slid backwards, heavily smashing into the Ice Wall.

The force of impact made Chu Mu feel a wave of pain; the Ice Armor on his stomach was clearly a bit more cracked. Fortunately, the Ice Air Fairy's casting speed was fast enough. Otherwise, the Horn Awn technique would have pierced through Chu Mu's stomach.

"It's those two from earlier!!" Through the Ice Wall, Chu Mu immediately saw the two prisoners from earlier. These two prisoners had evidently come back in order to steal back the scroll that they dropped.

Chu Mu glanced at the third phase Ice Falcon, and he looked at the long horned second phase Rhinoceros. The Ice Falcon was Middle Class Warrior Rank, and it was a combination of the winged beast type and ice type. Even if its phase was higher than the Ice Air Fairy, its ice attribute magic abilities was definitely not as pure as the Ice Air Fairy's ice attributed power.

The Rhinoceros was the most beast type soul pet and was of the Low Class Warrior Rank. Its most terrifying aspect was naturally its horn. Just now, the Horn Awn was its technique, and if the Ice Air Fairy's Ice Armor technique hadn't already reached the late stage, Chu Mu would have suffered a fatal wound.

Facing a pincer attack from two people, Chu Mu tried to maintain his cool as much as possible. His gaze fell on the Rhinoceros and he instantly gave an order to the Ice Air Fairy.

“Freeze Slow, freeze its legs!”

The Ice Air Fairy didn’t hesitate at all this time, and it rapidly began chanting. Its two hands hoisted up two gusts of cold wind that quickly rushed towards the Rhinoceros’ legs. A thick frost coagulated on the Rhinoceros’ legs.

The Rhinoceros’ body was enormous. Its four hooves had been covered by a layer of ice and it found it hard to move. When the skinny prisoner saw that the Rhinoceros’ body had received a slow effect, he immediately began chanting.

Subsequent to the skinny prisoner’s chanting, a ray of blue light slowly appeared and imprinted itself on the ground.

From within the blue colored pattern gradually appeared another soul pet figure. Astonishingly, it was a Black Wood Demon!

“Dual Soul Summoning-he’s also a Soul Soldier!” Seeing that the opponent had summoned two soul pets, Chu Mu’s eyebrows immediately creased.

A soul pet trainer’s cultivation was determined by Soul Remembrances. For every increase in three remembrances, one could sign a new soul pact with a soul pet. With each one Soul

increase, one could then summon another Soul Pet.

(TL: We're changing Remembrances to Soul Remembrances. The Chinese for it is 魂念, which technically can just be simplified to the one word "Remembrance". However, the author has now introduced a reason for using two words, making it the literal translation "Soul Remembrance". The 魂 part is the "Soul" and the 念 part is the "Remembrance")

A Soul Disciple had one soul while a Soul Soldier had two souls. Therefore, a Soul Soldier could simultaneously summon two soul pets to do battle!

Chu Mu gritted his teeth, and his gaze immediately turned towards the seemingly coarse prisoner. As expected, this prisoner had already chanted an incantation and summoned a third phase Hunting Wolf!

A second phase seventh stage Low Class Warrior Rank Rhinoceros, a third phase third stage Middle Class Servant Rank Black Wood Demon, a third phase first stage Middle Class Warrior Rank Ice Falcon, and a third phase second stage High Class Servant Rank Hunting Wolf. If there had only been two of these soul pets, with the Ice Air Fairy's use of ice attributed magic, dealing with them probably wouldn't be a problem. There currently, however, were four soul pets. Even if Chu Mu switched Mo Xie in to fight, under the four soul pets' attacks, Chu Mu himself would find it hard to survive.

"Ning, leave, don't fight with them." Chu Mu very decisively chose to avoid this danger.

The Ice Air Fairy's defense was astonishing. Even after being engulfed by a round of attacks from the four soul pets, only a few marks were left on the Ice Air Fairy's body.

Chu Mu quickly headed towards the jungle to hide. The Ice Air Fairy followed closely behind, as gust after gust of cold air ceaselessly rushed forth from within its body.

The most useful technique while running was naturally Ice Wall, so Chu Mu continuously made the Ice Air Fairy put up Ice Walls to hinder the four soul pets' attacks.

"Ao Wu"

The Hunting Wolf's running speed was extremely fast, and its movements were very agile as it circumvented the Ice Walls. It quickly appeared in front of Chu Mu and the Ice Air Fairy, using the most direct attack on Chu Mu-Ripping Claw!

"Shua!!"

Ripping Claw ripped open the Ice Armor on Chu Mu's body. Under the Hunting Wolf's claws, his body was instantly and completely exposed.

When the Ice Air Fairy saw that the Hunting Wolf had made its way in, it immediately produced an angry yell. Its body fiercely rotated...

“Continue to use Ice Wall and obstruct the other three soul pets.” Chu Mu promptly gave the Ice Air Fairy an order.

After giving the order, Chu Mu quickly chanted an incantation as two white swirls of cold air quickly coagulated between his hands.

His two hands were together and a line of ice instantly shot forth. Being so close, the Hunting Wolf simply could not dodge. Its head and leg was instantly hit by Rapid Freeze. Thick ice crystals quickly spread up the Hunting Wolf’s fur, freezing its body.

“Lingling~”

After the Hunting Wolf was frozen, the Ice Air Fairy proceeded to put up two more Ice Walls. The white colored frozen walls stood tall, surrounded by nothing, and separated the slower Black Wood Demon and Rhinoceros!

“Yi!!! Yi!!!”

The Ice Falcon possessed the ability to fly, and the Ice Walls fundamentally could not obstruct its nimble movement around the jungle’s treetops. The second Chu Mu restrained the Hunting Wolf, four to five eminently sharp Ice Cones suddenly fell from high above.

This time, without Chu Mu’s command, the Ice Air Fairy immediately stood in front of Chu Mu and used its body to resist

the incomparably sharp Ice Cones.

Ice attribute magic wasn't very effective towards the Ice Air Fairy, and although the power of the four to five ice cones was astonishing, it still only left light scars on the Ice Air Fairy's body.

"Ling!!"

Suffering from a group attack, the Ice Air Fairy seemed to also be angry. It produced a penetrating shout and chanted its fairy language. Instantly, a peculiar language resounded amongst the entire forest!

The Ice Air Fairy lifted its two hands and its body suddenly began to spin. Its white transparent lower body abruptly released a white, cold fog. The fog was extremely thick, and as the Ice Air Fairy quickly spun, the fog rapidly pervaded a perimeter of twenty meters, seemingly enshrouding all signs of life in this frosted fog.

Chapter 80: The Ice Fairy's Potential

Chu Mu and the Ice Air Fairy already had a soul pact between them, so the the cold air that the Ice Air Fairy emitted wouldn't have much of an impact on Chu Mu. However, as the Ice Air Fairy's body continued to rotate, an increasingly concentrated frost covered the surrounding plants...

The third phase third stage Hunting Wolf madly shook its body, but just as it freed itself from Chu Mu's Rapid Freeze and was about to continue attacking Chu Mu, it was instantly covered by the icy fog's cold air!

"Kill the Hunting Wolf!" Taking advantage of the building frosty fog, Chu Mu immediately spoke to the Ice Air Fairy.

Chu Mu and the Ice Air Fairy became the last item covered by the frosty fog. Chu Mu quickly retreated behind the trees and the Ice Air Fairy's gaze locked onto the Hunting Wolf with rather slow movements. A fairy language incantation produced the screaming sound of a cold wind!

"Huhuhu~"

Wave after wave of cold wind ineffably swept through, blowing around the indispensable frosty fog. Yet, it only made the white cold fog become even more vagrant!

The Hunting Wolf let out a howl, but in the next moment, this rather intimidating howl suddenly turned into an eminently

painful scream!!

Fresh red blood freely spurted out from the Hunting Wolf's abdomen. The Ice Air Fairy's Thorny Ice Flower had unexpectedly burst out from under the Hunting Wolf's abdomen!

The sharp end of the Thorny Ice Flower had pierced through the Hunting Wolf's abdomen, skewering its body onto the Thorny Ice Flower's blooming ice thorns!

"My Hunting Wolf! I'm going to kill this trash!!"

This prisoner had evidently felt the lost mental connection with his Hunting Wolf, and he let out an extremely angry shout in the midst of the icy fog.

Once a soul pet died, the mental connection between the soul pet and the soul pet master would immediately be severed. This severing process would cause a certain injury to a soul pet trainer's Soul. Moreover, before the injury on this Soul had completely recovered, it would be very difficult to summon other soul pets.

The Hunting Wolf was a High Class Servant Rank soul pet. It was probably captured by this prisoner while at the Soul Disciple level. Thus, it could be summoned through the first Soul and acquired a mental connection.

The Ice Air Fairy's Thorny Ice FLower had instantly killed the Hunting Wolf while also injuring the prisoner's first Soul. For a

short period of time, this prisoner wouldn't even think of summoning the soul pet he captured while at the Soul Disciple level.

"Yi!! Yi!!"

The Ice Falcon ignored the pierced Hunting Wolf. This wing and ice type combination soul pet had a very clear target. It was entirely set on rushing towards Chu Mu.

However, under the pervasion of the icy fog, the Ice Falcon simply could not find Chu Mu's hidden figure. It could only hover above the jungle that was now covered in ice crystals.

The icy fog was created by the Ice Air Fairy, and since Chu Mu's thoughts were connected with the Ice Air Fairy, the lack of vision in the icy fog didn't affect him.

Quickly chanting an incantation, Chu Mu, who was hiding behind a tree, locked his gaze onto the Ice Falcon flying above the icy fog. A demonic light of fire suddenly lit up in his black eyes.

Chong Mei-Flame Awn!

Chu Mu's Soul Remembrance had already reached the fourth remembrance Soul Soldier level. Although his soul power wasn't sufficient, his Soul Remembrance was strong, and with his current cultivation, the power of his Flame Awn was at least three times stronger than Mo Xie's!

In the air, two rays of fire rapidly interweaved into one piece that accurately struck the Ice Falcon's body. The Ice Armor covering the Ice Falcon's body immediately displayed signs of melting.

"Ning, dispose of it!"

Chu Mu sounded an order and the Ice Air Fairy chanted an incantation once more. Surrounding them, white crystals began to quickly condense. In a short while, they transformed into eminently sharp ice blades that laid suspended in the air next to the Ice Air Fairy.

"Shuashuashua!!"

After being struck by Chu Mu's Flame Awn, the Ice Falcon's body lost its balance. Once the frosted ice blades slashed forth, it immediately let out a wretched shout. Struck down from the sky, it pummeled into a tree top.

The Ice Falcon could pursue its prey from the air so once he got rid of it, Chu Mu could freely travel in the jungle.

"GezhiGezhi~"

Suddenly, Chu Mu felt a slight movement from under the frost covered ground at his feet.

“The Black Wood Demon!!”

Chu Mu’s eyebrows creased and he glanced at the already rather exhausted Ice Air Fairy.

At once, Chu Mu also chanted an incantation and didn’t hesitate to recall the Ice Air Fairy that had much of its magic energy depleted back into its soul pet space.

Chanting once more, Chu Mu then used the remainder of his soul power to summon Mo Xie in front of him.

A light blue colored pattern appeared under Chu Mu’s feet, and from within the radiance Mo Xie’s figure slowly appeared .

Mo Xie’s movements were much nimbler than the Ice Air Fairy’s. Moreover, she didn’t require Chu Mu’s instruction to understand his intentions.

“Shua!!”

A Blood Rending Claw swept forth as Mo Xie, who had just appeared, instantly noticed the Black Wood Demon’s Piercing Black Wood Roots. Her claws proceeded to rip apart the earth and severed the Black Wood Demon’s roots that had extended towards them.

“Don’t continue fighting. If there’s a chance later, we’ll get our payback then.” Chu Mu said to Mo Xie.

The icy fog continued to persist for a short while, completely covering the two prisoners' fields of view. Chu Mu decided to quickly head towards a denser part of the jungle.

Mo Xie was extremely smart and unexpectedly knew to help Chu Mu draw the enemy away.

Without even needing Chu Mu to say something, she deliberately used Flame Awn to create a fire, drawing the Rhinoceros and Black Wood Demon to another direction.

Chu Mu hid in an underbrush. Through the gradually dissipating fog, he discovered the faint burning of a cyan devil flame that was quickly chasing after Mo Xie's running position.

"I'm afraid people here can all summon Nightmares to fight."

Looking at the cyan devil flame floating past him, Chu Mu inwardly remarked in fright. The reason that they probably didn't summon it earlier to fight was most likely because the Cyan Nightmare was still in a weak condition. If they were to summon the Cyan Nightmare at the beginning, even with the Ice Air Fairy there, it would have been harder for Chu Mu to flee.

After using his mental connection to warn Mo Xie of the Cyan Nightmare's appearance, Chu Mu made sure that the two people were far away before walking in a completely opposite direction.

Mo Xie's intellegence was rather developed. With her speed and quick-wittedness, even without his instructions, Chu Mu didn't believe that those fellows could catch Mo Xie in such a complex jungle.

As expected, after approximately twenty minutes, Chu Mu had already walked to the opposite end of the lake when Mo Xie, who had lead the clumsy fellows around in a circle, appeared in front of him.

"Soul Soldiers have at least four soul pets; moreover they can summon two soul pets at the same time to fight. Even if I were to face one Soul Soldier, it would be rather hard to deal with him or her. It seems that I have to be very careful in the future." said Chu Mu.

"Wuwuwu~~" Mo Xie expressed deep approval as she nodded her head.

Although he had ultimately fled from the battle, Chu Mu wasn't discouraged at all. Instead, he was rather happy with the Ice Air Fairy's powerful ice magic.

Different from past enemies, the soul pets Chu Mu had encountered this time, apart from the Hunting Wolf, had all been at the Warrior rank. Moreover, they had reached the second or third stage. If a third stage Ice Falcon had appeared in the peon battle back then, it wouldn't have been much of a problem to dispose of the ten peons' soul pets.

For the Ice Air Fairy to manage to fight one versus four and last for that long period of time already made Chu Mu feel surprised. After all, the Ice Air Fairy was still at the second phase sixth stage. Chu Mu even believed that if he himself could understand the Ice Air Fairy's techniques better and that if the Ice Air Fairy had more battle experience, fighting one versus four under the icy fog-like conditions just now could be possible.

Chapter 81: Rare Blood Beast, Yang Family

Chu Mu's mental energy had pretty much been depleted. With the intention of being safe, he didn't dare to walk anywhere and everywhere. After finding a hole in a tree, he hid inside.

Just after finding this small habitat, Chu Mu felt fortunate because a light drizzle of rain began to fall onto the island, covering the jungle in dampness.

The hole in the tree was probably left by some kind of climbing creature. The inside still had a bit of hay, and Chu Mu hugged Mo Xie as he sat inside the tree hole. This position was just good enough to see the sky through the fog that completely covered the island.

The field of view on Prison Island was extremely narrow. Being enveloped by dark clouds gave people an even further gloomy feeling. Looking at the vast jungle and horizon, Chu Mu gradually became a bit entranced.

His thoughts began to follow the drifting rain and wind as a few scenes from the past couldn't help but appear once more in his mind. Gradually, his expression sullened...

Chu Mu had lived with his father, Chu Tiancheng, from a very young age. In Chu Mu's heart, Chu Tiangcheng was like a teacher and a friend. In front of Chu Tiancheng, Chu Mu wasn't as reverent and reserved as he was towards other elders. Instead, he was often calm, and he would communicate from the heart with a

smile. Chu Mu, at the age of fifteen, possessed this sort of calm sophistry and wisdom because of Chu Tiancheng's guidance.

Despite always being impolite in front of Chu Tiancheng-he would sometimes even make sarcastic and cutting remarks-Chu Mu still harbored a deeply rooted adoration for his father in his heart. He adored his abundant life experience, his wise and farsighted thinking, and his powerful strength.

Chu Mu really enjoyed this sort of lifestyle. Even though because of his very first soul pact he almost didn't become a soul pet trainer, Chu Mu had never genuinely been dispirited. This was due to Chu Tiancheng's perpetual encouragement...

However, good things never last forever. His clan's decline caused the person who would often appear in front of him with a smile to change into the back of view of a person with a hurried figure. He would only speak a few short sentences, or write a one or two line curt letter...

Chu Mu also wasn't a child who adhered to his parents, and he was gradually capable of functioning independently. He began to understand that a clan required, aside from the support of the elders, a next generation with potential. In this way, the clan would have hope for the future.

When he was ten, Chu Mu had more contact with other similar aged people from other clans. Various comparisons, competitions, fights and schemes began to constantly appear between these young ten year old boys and girls...

Only, the first soul pact and the second pact that had mysteriously disappeared caused Chu Mu to lose the ability to compete with similar aged people…

“The first soul pact…” Thinking about this, Chu Mu’s eyes suddenly became pained and troubled.

Each time he thought about his first soul pact, a trace of emotion would always rush forth from his heart…

The first soul pact was an enormous shadow in Chu Mu’s heart. This shadow caused Chu Mu to faintly ache in his heart each time he thought of it. Simultaneously, it would arouse a bit of anger and determination.

Many times, Chu Mu would relate his first soul pet with his mother. However, this wasn’t because the two had some sort of relation; rather it was because his mother gave Chu Mu a similar feeling.

Chu Mu’s memory of his mother’s appearance was already a bit hazy. From his impression of her, she always enjoyed immersing herself in his affairs. She had a cool and elegant face - she was a beautiful mother. However, she seldom smiled. Her eyes were like stars that touched people, and that could be considered Chu Mu’s deepest impression of her. Only, those eyes were full of hints of haughtiness.

This icily arrogant mother would often go away and, within a

few years, they would only see each other twice. Chu Mu remembered the last time he saw her was when he was twelve. It had been three years and a half since then, and Chu Mu was certain that she didn't even know of her own son's disappearance and 'death'.

Thinking about this, Chu Mu couldn't help but shake his head. His feelings for his mother were extremely weak. Chu Mu didn't even know her name. He had only heard his father call her by her nickname. Those in the clan also wouldn't directly address her by her name. Normally, they would strangely call her Madam Chu. In Chu Mu's view, aside from the beautiful and arrogant appearance that she left in his memory, there wasn't anything else...

The continuous drizzle continued to gently fall. Without the spurring of a violent gale, the curtain of rain was rather distinct. One could make out the full outline of the soaked trees. In between the trees, there was the occasional soul pet which didn't mind the falling rain and would spread their wings and fly towards the grey horizon searching for a suitable place to rest.

The weak rain continued for approximately two days. In these two days, aside from quietly cultivating, Chu Mu had also learned the Soul Technique-Wind Ride.

In simple terms, the ability Wind Ride could at least make Chu Mu run a bit faster. Of course, its main functionality was to make soul pets faster.

Wind Ride was a Soul Disciple technique and it wasn't hard for Chu Mu to learn. But what made Chu Mu helpless during these

past two days was that the White Nightmare had advanced another stage again.

In the month that Chu Mu was at Heng City, the White Nightmare had advanced a stage. In the half a month riding Xia Guanghan's boat, the White Nightmare had advanced another stage. Currently, it had reached the second phase fourth stage.

Chu Mu had asked Xia Guanghan what stage the White Nightmare had to reach before it could participate in fights. Xia Guanghan's answer was that it depended on the White Nightmare's mood.

Generally speaking, a majority of White Nightmares could be summoned to fight after reaching the third phase. However, there were a few stubborn White Nightmare that would wait until the fourth stage...

Chu Mu could only silently pray that his White Nightmare wasn't a stubborn fellow...

In reality, Chu mu felt that summoning his White Nightmare to fight right now wasn't too sensible. After all, the species rank of a White Nightmare was extremely high, and whether he would be able to control it while fighting with his weak Soul Remembrance was always an issue.

When the rain had finally stopped and he walked out of the tree cave, he was met with a fresh and clean atmosphere.

Chu Mu was about to delightedly breathe in and out when suddenly a pungent smell rushed into his nose.

“The smell of blood?” Chu Mu’s eyebrows creased and he carefully hid with Mo Xie behind the tree.

Chu Mu had just hid his body when a male covered in blood suddenly fled from the top of a nearby short tree. Beside this male a second stage Barbaric Dog followed only. The Barbaric Dog’s body was also full of blood and was following the male as he ran.

“Shua!!”

Abruptly, a bloody light appeared from the top of the short tree. The bloody light travelled parallel to the ground and accurately struck the Barbaric Dog, instantly severing it into two halves. The internal organs and skeleton were completely exposed to the atmosphere and an eminently pungent smell was added to the jungle after the rain.

In the next moment, a creature whose fur was covered in fresh blood scuttled from the tree. This soul pet’s build was about two meters, and its fur was abnormally exuberant. Its four limbs were robust and it didn’t have a tail. Its head was like a wolf, but it had the horns of a bull which were blood red colored.

“Rare Blood Beast!”

Seeing the Rare Blood Beast, Chu Mu was instantly moved. It

could be said that on Prison Island, Chu Mu wouldn't find it strange to see any soul pet. However, the appearance of the Rare Blood Beast made Chu Mu feel extremely surprised.

The Rare Blood Beast was one of the four dominant soul pets in Wangluo City. The clan that possessed Rare Blood Beasts was the clan controlling Wangluo City, the Yang Family. This clan had used the Blood Beast soul pet to gain notoriety, and had rushed headforth into the surrounding large piece of territory.

Rare Blood Beast: Beast Kingdom - Beast Race - Blood Beast Race - Rare Blood Beast subrace - Middle Class Warrior Rank

The biggest trait of a Rare Blood Beast was that it possessed the techniques Blood Yearning and Blood Frenzy. Under the state of Blood Yearning, the Rare Blood Beast's fighting power would increase and it would become fearless.

Blood Frenzy was even more terrifying. The soul pet would enter a berserk mental state and, after locking on its target, would turn eminently savage and ruthless. Not only would its fighting power momentarily increase, but it would also not spare anything during the fight.

"Someone from the Yang Family... why would one of their people be thrown onto this island? Who else could it be?!" Chu Mu instantly recognized that this Rare Blood Beast belonged to the Yang Family because on the Rare Blood Beasts forehead was the Yang Family's most distinctive mark!

Chapter 82: The Enemy Met With The Blade

The Yang Family was definitely the main culprit behind the decline of Chu Mu's clan. As for how he himself ended up in Xia Guanghan's hands, it was from the orders of someone from the Yang Family. Once he thought about them, a ball of raging fire ignited within Chu Mu's heart!

"Let... let me go... I don't have it, I really don't have it..." Once the male covered in blood saw that his Barbaric Dog had been killed, he no longer harbored any intent of resisting and began to beg.

The Rare Blood Creature's rows of teeth were exposed. Between the teeth were bits of flesh and blood. It let out a breath that reeked of a bloody stink at the male.

The wounded male didn't dare to run. He crawled on the ground and incessantly begged.

"You even dare to interfere with my plans!" A voice came out from within the thicket. A male wearing rather bright and neat clothing walked out from within the jungle.

The majority of those thrown into Prison Island were prisoners. There were times when it was hard to even find things to eat, let alone hope for clothing. It was very rare when someone's clothes were neat and tidy. When Chu Mu saw that the Yang Family person's clothing was special, he immediately felt it to be rather strange.

“Little me is unlearned, little me is unlearned. I thought that senior was also a prisoner… disturbing senior, I deserve to die tens of thousands of times for my sins. Little me can work very hard for senior… but please let me live…” The male that was covered in bruises and cuts and wearing shabby and bloody clothing was probably a prisoner.

“Cut the nonsense. Where is the map? Hand it over!” Yang Zhide haughtily looked down upon the prisoner crawling on the ground. Currently, all he had to do was give an order, and the Rare Blood Beast would directly bite off this fellow’s head.

Chu Mu pried apart the leaves and his gaze fell upon the overbearing Yang Family youth. He examined this fellow’s face.

“Yang Zhide!!”

After clearly seeing his appearance, Chu Mu was even more flabbergasted.

Chu Mu recognized this fellow. Yang Zhide was a direct descendant of the Yang Family. Even though he was a concubine’s son, because of his cultivation, he still had a bit of status within the Yang Family.

“With your stupidity, when I become a soul pet trainer that can summon three soul pets, you will still be vexing over your unproficient and misguided Soul Pact Incantation.”

This was a jeer that Yang Zhide had made towards Chu Mu at a public occasion. Chu Mu had remembered the words ever since. At the time, Chu Mu's third brother, Chu Ning, had fought a fight with Yang Zhide over this and had killed one of Yang Zhide's flashy soul pets.

However, Chu Ning then received a challenge from the Yang Family's older generation because of this, and had one of his soul pet killed as well, one that he had meticulously bred for many years .

Since this situation had originated because of him, Chu Mu felt somewhat guilty towards Chu Ning. He had always wanted to exact revenge for Chu Ning but his strength was too small.

In front of him, this fellow had mysteriously appeared on Nightmare Palace's Prison Island. In his heart, Chu Mu felt both suspicion and a heavy amount of anger.

"It's not with me... It's not with me... Many of us prisoners were brought to this island and many of us have it, but I don't... This little one remembers that our map of the island is with a skinny long faced fellow. The foremen used the boat to throw us into this place and gave the region's map to a skinny prisoner..." said the wounded prisoner.

Hearing him mention a map, Chu Mu immediately fished out the scroll from his bosom carefully. He flipped the scroll to the district and topography map drawing on the back.

“A skinny prisoner. Map. Could it be that Yang Zhide is looking for the item in my hands? But isn’t this an item used by the people of Nightmare Palace to ensure that this game of slaughter is thorough?” Chu Mu was even more confused.

“If you don’t have it, then die!” Suddenly, Yang Zhide cruelly laughed.

In the next instant, the Rare Blood Beast abruptly opened its bloody mouth and ferociously bit the prisoner’s neck. Immediately, fresh blood spurted forth and began to flow onto the muddy ground.

“Truly boring. This island is so big and the prisoners are many. How long do I have to kill until I finish collecting all of it. It’s better if I return to their place first.” Yang Zhide spat on the corpse and turned around, planning to leave.

However, the moment Yang Zhide turned around, a silver figure appeared from within the thicket. Almost instantly, it arrived in front of Yang Zhide. A formidable Blood Rending Claw suddenly swept across Yang Zhide’s location!!

“Hou!!”

The Rare Blood Beast’s reaction was extremely quick and it quickly pounced over, simultaneously performing Blood Rending Claw. Immediately, two rays of bloody claws intersected, emitting the piercing noise of metal rubbing on metal!

“Thinking of sneak attacking me?” Yang Zhide was somewhat astonished before a rather contemptuous look appeared on his face. His eyes locked onto Chu Mu’s location.

Chu Mu had already confirmed that there weren’t any other Yang Family people in the surroundings. He didn’t hide and slowly walked from out from the thicket. His two black eyes coldly stared at Yang Zhide!

“Another one courting death. Hmph. I’ll sort all of this out like the rest…” Yang Zhide subconsciously believed that the person hiding in the vicinity was a Nightmare Palace prisoner.

However, when he saw Chu Mu’s appearance, his words abruptly stopped and he unexpectedly revealed a shocked expression!

“Chu Mu!” Yang Zhide cried out!

Half a year earlier Chu Mu’s disappearance had spread through Wangluo City. Almost everyone believed that the Chu Family’s successor had already died.

However, Yang Zhide didn’t expect that the fellow who should have already been assassinated would unexpectedly appear here, on Nightmare Palace’s eminently cruel island of prisoners!

“You probably didn’t think I was still alive right?” Chu Mu produced a cold smile.

Chu Mu's death had become a fact. Yet, the sort of shock from seeing Chu Mu on Prison Island made Yang Zhide feel rather alarmed, stunned and unbelieving!

"You... how are you here?!!" Yang Zhide was extremely alarmed.

"Aren't I just paying respect to what your Yang Family has caused?!" Chu Mu stood there. Killing intent had already appeared in his eyes.

Feeling Chu Mu's gaze, an ineffable fear appeared in Yang Zhide's heart.

For some unknown reason, Yang Zhide felt that the young man in front of him had changed!

Back then, at Wangluo City, Chu Mu was merely an ordinary youth. All day he would hide in his clan under the protection of his family. He was constantly cowering and would never dare to accept the challenge of someone of the same age.

However, in the span of half a year, Yang Zhide felt that this young man's entire temperament had undergone a change. He had become immeasurably cold, and he was sharp and calm, like a wild beast. Especially those two eyes that unexpectedly emitted a terrifying killing intent!

Having been missing for half a year, Chu Mu had undergone the

most cruel survival training of Nightmare Palace. Chu Mu had also personally killed so many people during training that he himself couldn't count anymore. Nightmare Palace method of cultivating peons wasn't merely through soul power. They also trained the peons' cruelty. This was perhaps to prepare them to receive the demonic Nightmare soul pet. Having experienced such slaughter, how could Chu Mu currently be the same as the naive youngster in the past?!

Chapter 83: Fourth Phase Bloodthirsty Beast

“Even if he’s still alive, what is there to be afraid of……” Yang Zhide clenched his teeth and said to himself, suppressing the unwarranted fear that was bubbling up.

How could Yang Zhide not know Chu Mu’s strength? Half a year ago, any soul pet of Yang Zhide’s could rip this guy to pieces, and this shouldn’t have changed.

“Rare Blood Beast, kill him!” Yang Zhide pointed at Chu Mu, and he telepathically told his soul pet through their mental connection.

“Hou!!” The Rare Blood Beast immediately let out a furious roar, stretched out its body, and fiercely pounced towards Chu Mu.

The Rare Blood Beast was built very sturdily and could run very quikcly. Under the trampling of its blood hooves, the muddy ground created countless mud splashes.

Chu Mu, standing where he was, didn’t even need to move. Seeing that the Rare Blood Beast in front of him was merely of the Second Phase Eighth Stage, Chu Mu didn’t have anything to fear.

“Shua!!”

Just when the Rare Blood Beast ran within five meters of Chu

Mu, a silver Moonblade abruptly appeared from the forests to the side, very accurately slashing towards the Blood Beast's waist.

Yang Zhide's battle awareness wasn't bad as he commanded his Rare Blood Beast to immediately dodge. After evading Mo Xie's Moonblade, it gave up attacking and backed up a bit.

"Moonlight fox?" Yang Zhide's gaze fell onto the Moonlight fox and let out an expression of astonishment that soon transformed into belittlement.

Because of Chu Mu's change in temperament, Yang Zhide thought that Chu Mu might have a few strong soul pets. After seeing this Moonlight Fox, however, Yang Zhide had the urge to burst into laughter again.

His Rare Blood Beast and the Moonlight Fox weren't even on the same level. Even if the Moonlight Fox reached the Fourth Phase, a Second Phase Eighth Stage Rare Blood Beast could still easily rip it into pieces. Seeing Chu Mu revealing such a soul pet, how could Yang Zhide not find it humorous?

"Chu Mu, oh Chu Mu, you really are just like your Moonlight Fox. Cowardly and weak……"

Yang Zhide originally wanted to summon his other soul pet, but after seeing Chu Mu's Moonlight Fox, he felt there wasn't the need for it. Obviously, the fear he felt previously mostly stemmed from a misperception and a lack of confidence.

In reality, Yang Zhide wasn't wrong. Chu Mu was very much like Mo Xie; but, they weren't similar in that they were both weak and cowardly. They were similar in that they were both calm, decisive and, when angry, merciless and crazy!

Mo Xie's species rank was very low. Coupled with Pitiful Appearance, these were the fatal mistakes that almost all soul pet trainers made when judging Chu Mu, and Yang Zhide was no exception.

Seeing that Yang Zhide didn't summon another soul pet, the corner of Chu Mu's mouth rose into a demonic smile. It seemed like the intentional holding back in the first two attacks was having its expected effect.

"Rare Blood Beast, devour that pitiful little fox!" Yang Zhide commanded straightforwardly through speech.

Facing such a low species rank soul pet, the Rare Blood Beast treated it with the same disdainful attitude as its owner.

Mo Xie hunched down in the slightly muddied ground and just as the Rare Blood Beast dashed forwards, Mo Xie started as well. Her silver body instantly flew forwards, spraying mud everywhere, her speed almost double that of the Rare Blood Beast!

Shadow Assault!

Mo Xie's body sped up again, raising her speed to the extreme!

Seeing the Moonlight Fox dash forward with such terrifying speed, Yang Zhide's expression immediately shifted.

Moon Shadow!

Mo Xie's shadow slowly became fuzzy in the process of running. Three moonlight fox silhouettes became vaguely visible, running neck to neck with Mo Xie.

Blood Rending Moonblade!!

The combination of Moonblade and Blood Rending Claw, even without moonlight, caused the razor sharp arc drawn by the Moonblade to be just as radiant. Though untouched by blood, the smear of captivating red that flitted through the air was still striking!

Crimson and silver claws ripped through the neck of the Rare Blood Beast. The Rare Blood Beast's stayed frozen in the air; it wanted to swipe forth, but suddenly went rigid.

The next moment, blood spurted out crazily from the head of the Blood Beast, flowing out endlessly!

"Hou~~" The Rare Blood Beast let out a strange mourning roar as its body heavily thudded into the water puddles, its blood instantly mixing with the dirty water.

Seeing his own Rare Blood Beast fall, Yang Zhide's face showed

extreme fear. He hastily chanted an incantation and before his Rare Blood Beast's blood flowed dry, he retracted it back into his soul pet space.

A blood red symbol quickly appeared under the Rare Blood Beast. While the radiance still glimmered, the Rare Blood Beast had already disappeared from its spot.

"Mo Xie, kill him!" Chu Mu naturally didn't let go of any opportunity to attack Yang Zhide directly and immediately ordered Mo Xie.

Mo Xie continued to run straight towards Yang Zhide with her still-bloody claws shining ominously!

Yang Zhide quickly backed off a distance, and as he saw the bizarrely quick Mo Xie approach, he frantically chanted another incantation.

"Wind Bind!" Yang Zhide's speed of chanting wasn't slow. As Mo Xie neared, he already finished the casting of his soul technique. A swirling stream of air spiralled up from the ground, quickly enveloping Yang Zhide within it!

Wind Bind was a defensive technique. Once it was casted on oneself, the moment any enemy neared, they would be flung into the air.

Mo Xie didn't have time to stop anymore so she immediately

slammed into the Wind Bind that had sucked in countless puddles of mud!

“Wu”

The power of the wind quickly threw Mo Xie into the air. Mo Xie continuously spun in the air until she finally fell into a quagmire ten meters away……

The effects of Wind Bind slowly dissipated. Yang Zhide’s face muscles were still quivering, his face seemingly pale. Clearly, Mo Xie’s lethal attack had killed his Rare Blood Beast. Even after Yang Zhide retracted it, he still couldn’t stem the flow of blood from the Rare Blood Beast’s neck.

The Rare Blood Beast was clearly Yang Zhide’s second soul pet, so the death of it would inevitably cause damage to his soul.

“I’ll tear you to pieces!” Yang Zhide’s facial expressions contorted and started chanting again!

Chu Mu knew that Yang Zhide still owned a stronger soul pet. At this distance, Chu Mu couldn’t cast any techniques either, and could only let Mo Xie raise her guard.

Yang Zhide’s incantation finished very quickly. The blood red symbol that emerged shined a glaring red radiance, and from within the red light an even larger organism covered in blood red fur slowly appeared.

“Bloodthirsty Beast!”

Chu Mu stared at the soul pet that emerged from the symbol and put on a grave expression.

Bloodthirsty Beast: Beast Kingdom - Beast Type - Blood Beast Species - Bloodthirsty Beast Subspecies - High Class Servant Rank

The Bloodthirsty Beast was a soul pet even crueller than the Hunting Wolf, where its species rank could compare to many Low Class Warrior Rank organisms. Furthermore, the Bloodthirsty Beast that Yang Zhide summoned was a shocking Fourth Phase First Stage soul pet!

“Hou!!” The Fourth Phase Bloodthirsty Beast immediately let out a wild roar that scared all the nearby smaller organisms away!

“The Bloodthirsty Beast’s speed and strength are both very strong. After going berserk, it willbe even more terrifying. Mo Xie it’ll be hard for you to deal with it, let Ning finish this.” Chu Mu said to Mo Xie.

The power of the Bloodthirsty Beast was very terrifying and Mo Xie’s defense could be said to be very weak. The moment she got hit, it could very well be fatal. Let alone the fact that Chu Mu hasn’t even figured out all of Yang Zhide’s soul techniques. Under these circumstances, Chu Mu didn’t want Mo Xie to have any accidents.

“Wuwuwu!!” However, facing the Bloodthirsty Beast’s arrogance and malevolence, Mo Xie had no fear. Covered in dirty blood, she still kept her battling stance, her silver pupils fixed onto the Blood Beast, as if a fire burned within!

“Mo Xie?” Feeling Mo Xie’s emotions of battle, Chu Mu felt a bit bewildered. Although the disobedient emotions weren’t strong, it was still the first time Mo Xie hadn’t directly listened to him.

Chapter 84: Species Mutation, Proud Mo Xie (1)

“Since you still want to fight, fight as much as you want!” Chu Mu could feel Mo Xie’s arrogant fighting dignity.

In reality, no matter the strength, battle experience, techniques or mutual understanding, Mo Xie’s was at a much higher level than the Ice Air Fairy. The Ice Air Fairy possessed a sturdy defense and powerful ice magic, but that was it. Relying only on its second phase sixth stage strength to defeat a soul pet that could rival a fourth phase Low Class Warrior Rank would be rather difficult.

Moreover, Yang Zhide now knew Mo Xie’s strength, so he wouldn’t give her another instakill chance. After the fourth phase Bloodthirsty Beast, he would definitely summon another soul pet, so Chu Mu definitely had to keep a few trump cards.

“Houhou!!!”

The Bloodthirsty Beast stepped into a measured pace and immediately its body aura was violently released. A dense, bloody aura surged forth and engulfed the surrounding area. The nearby plants were successively bent over!

The fourth phase Bloodthirsty Beast’s bloody aura collided against Mo Xie, causing her stained fur to stand up. Mo Xie didn’t get rid of the dirty stains on her body and let the dirty sewage roll off her body drip after drip. Her keen pupils motionlessly stared at the Bloodthirsty Beast.

“Hou hou!!” The Bloodthirsty Beast faced Mo Xie and let out a roar at her. Its four hooves abruptly stomped on the ground!

The Bloodthirsty beast was one of the Yang Family’s symbolic soul pets. Chu Mu was extremely knowledgable of the Bloodthirsty Beast’s techniques and abilities. Currently, the technique that the Bloodthirsty Beast was using was Earth Splitting Trample. It was full of vibration properties!

Chu Mu knew of Earth Splitting Trample’s might and instantly retreated to a safer location. Mo Xie, who was directly facing it, gracefully jumped up and over the fissure that suddenly appeared.

“Hou!!” The Bloodthirsty beast seemed like it was waiting for Mo Xie to dodge, as it suddenly opened its mouth and spat out a blood-colored tornado towards Mo Xie!

The blood-colored tornado’s speed was extremely quick. The instant Mo Xie landed on the ground, she was attacked by the tornado. Mo Xie didn’t have time to dodge, and could only use her claws to tenaciously grasp the ground!

“Huhuhuhu” A dense, bloody whirlwind covered Mo Xie’s tiny body. The fur on her body immediately changed and transformed into Annealed Woolen Fur, which resisted the spurring of the tornado.

Although the impetus of the tornado was extremely intense, the rotational power was also abnormally strong. Very soon, Mo Xie’s

body was picked up by the blood colored tornado and was once again thrown into the air.

"This Bloodthirsty Beast has an additional wind attribute..." Chu Mu's eyebrows creased as he looked at the Bloodthirsty Beast that could use the blood colored tornado. Clearly, Yang Zhide's Bloodthirsty Beast had used soul crystals to train!

"Wind Riding!"

Chu Mu naturally wouldn't just watch from the side. He quickly chanted an incantation and used the recently learned soul technique, Wind Riding, on Mo Xie's body.

Mo Xie had already lost her balance in the air. However, after the effects of Wind Riding, Mo Xie's body lightened and she immediately found her balance. With one flip, she smoothly descended onto the ground.

"Hmph, a garbage soul technique!" Yang Zhide coldly sneered and then also chanted an incantation.

"Nature's Force-Root Bind!" Yang Zhide's hair fluttered wildly and, as he was chanting, the surrounding plants suddenly underwent an odd change.

The trees swayed in a weird fashion and the ground produced a peculiar noise, as if there was something squirming!

Feeling the abnormality from the mud under his feet, Chu Mu immediately said something to Mo Xie. After speaking, he chanted an incantation again and used Rapid Freeze, freezing the mud under his feet.

The line of ice descended onto the ground and quickly froze the mud, creating a large layer of ice. A five meter perimeter of land was completely frozen.

“Beng!!! Beng!!”

Two roots abruptly extended from within the mud and twisted around like snakes. Only, the ground under Chu Mu’s feet had already been frozen, so these roots couldn’t coil around Chu Mu even if they wanted to.

“Hou!!”

The Bloodthirsty Beast’s red eyes immediately locked onto Chu Mu. Its four hooves rushed forth, bringing about a wave of rumbling noise as it charged towards Chu Mu!

“Charm!”

Mo Xie quickly appeared in front of the Bloodthirsty Beast. Her two silver eyes released a demonic lustre that penetrated the Bloodthirsty Beast's eyes.

Yang Zhide wasn’t a normal person either, and seeing that the

opponent had used a mental technique, he didn't hesitate to use the dense bloody odor pervading the air from the Rare Blood Beast to make the Bloodthirsty Beast enter the Bloodthirsty state.

Under the Bloodthirsty state, Charm simply didn't have any effect, and Mo Xie's body was unable to resist the Bloodthirsty Beast's stampede. After letting out a whimpering cry, she was promptly knocked aside.

The Bloodthirsty Beast's charge didn't stop. Yang Zhide's target was Chu Mu, who was trapped by the roots on the layer of ice.

Chu Mu continued to maintain his cool. His black eyes gazed at the truculent Bloodthirsty Beast and he silently chanted an incantation!

From within the depths of his eyes revolved a sliver of white gloss that gradually caused Chu Mu's pupil to turn completely white, becoming contrastingly and demonically bewitching !

"Chong Mei - Double Ice Wall!"

Chu Mu once again performed his Soul Soldier technique-Chong Mei. This time, Chu Mu used the mental connection with the Ice Air Fairy to use its ice type technique!

Two ice walls instantly sprang out of the muddy ground, standing in front of the Bloodthirsty Beast. The Bloodthirsty Beast's hefty body directly smashed into the Ice Wall.

Immediately, the Ice Wall began to violently shake!

“Crush it directly!” Yang Zhide coldly said.

The Bloodthirsty Beast rocked its head and charged once more, directly smashing into the first wall of ice. Promptly after, it performed Blood Rending Claw on the Ice Wall. Two continuous claws slashed forth, and the first Ice Wall instantly shattered!

‘Wuwuwu!!”

Mo Xie had already crawled up from the mud and she now ran in front of the Bloodthirsty Beast. Moonblade suddenly swept across the Bloodthirsty Beast’s body!

However, the Bloodthirsty Beast’s skin was eminently tough. It had at least reached the third rank Thick Skin defense. Moonblade was only able to leave a shallow wound. Even if blood was flowing, it wasn’t able to actually stop its advance.

“This garbage fox wants to contend against my Bloodthirsty beast? Your soul pet is like you, you’re both trash!” Yang Zhide contemptuously swept his gaze over the weak Moonlight Fox.

“Wuwuwu!!” Mo Xie was able to understand the ridicule in human speech. She completely bared her fangs and narrowed her eyes. It seemed like she was about to erupt!

“There’s no point in yelling. Watch your master be crushed to

death.” A smile had already appeared on Yang Zhide’s face because, currently, the Bloodthirsty Beast had completely broken through Chu Mu’s Ice Wall defense. A bloody aura already filled the air.

Facing the Bloodthirsty Beast’s attack, Chu Mu’s expression still hadn’t changed. He calmly chanted an incantation and planned on recalling Mo Xie, before instantly switching in the Ice Air Fairy to resist the Bloodthirsty Beast’s attack.

The incantation quickly finished and a light blue colored lustre enveloped Mo Xie’s body. When the lustre faded, Mo Xie would return to Chu Mu’s soul pet space.

“Mo Xie?” After finishing the recall, Chu Mu had originally planned on summoning the Ice Air Fairy. However, when the lustre faded, Chu Mu abruptly discovered that Mo Xie had not returned to her soul pet space. Instead, she had at some unknown time rushed in front of him and was now facing the Bloodthirsty Beast!

Mo Xie unexpectedly disobeyed his recall order! An expression of shock was revealed on Chu Mu’s face!

“Wuwuwuwu!!”

Mo Xie arrogantly raised her head and the sewage on her body suddenly splattered off!

In her eyes a demonic radiance brilliantly blossomed. Immediately, the bundle of massive energy coiled up around Mo Xie's fluttering silver fur like a terrifying hurricane. Recklessly engulfing and sweeping away everything in the surroundings!

Demonic aura permeated ubiquitously. Chu Mu abruptly discovered that Mo Xie's fur was ceaselessly fluttering as she stood in the middle of the demonic aura whirlpool. Her originally fluffy tail underwent an unexpected transformation, astonishingly splitting into two tails!!!

Chapter 85: Species Mutation, Proud Mo Xie (2)

“Huhuhu”

The hurricane’s eruption continuously spurred within the surroundings!

In an abrupt moment, a ball of faint demonic fire rose into the air from the terrifyingly, all-encompassing, demonic aura whirlpool. Another transformation appeared on Mo Xie’s tail which had split into two and astonishingly, her tail changed into three long tails full of a bewitching aura. Together with the vagrant ball of fire, it became a triangle that ignited in the air around Mo Xie’s body!

“This… this is…” Yang Zhide was a bit stupefied as he watched this scene. An incomparably weak Moonlight Fox unexpectedly released such a powerful demonic aura. This demonic aura could rival many Warrior Rank demonic beasts, and was perhaps even stronger!

Mo Xie’s tails continued to proliferate and with each additional tail, Mo Xie’s demonic aura increased again. When Mo Xie reached the fifth tail, Yang Zhide’s fourth phase Bloodthirsty Beast unexpectedly revealed an expression of panic!

Five balls of faint, demonic fire silently burned. Quiet, demonic light slowly blossomed, causing the silver furred Mo Xie to become more charmingly demonic.

Yang Zhide's Bloodthirsty Beast was already in the Bloodthirst State. Under this state, the effect of mental techniques and imposing auras would normally be weakened.

However, when Mo Xie's tails became six, the Bloodthirsty Beast simply didn't dare to approach Mo Xie at all. The powerful demonic aura caused the enormous Bloodthirsty Beast to slowly retreat!

Seeing Mo Xie's current transformation, Chu Mu was even more stunned.

Chu Mu trained Mo Xie with the hope of Mo Xie heading towards the Ninetails mutation. However, Chu Mu knew that Mo Xie mutating into a Ninetailed Demon Fox in one go was practically impossible.This was because before the Ninetails, there was still the Threetails Demon Fox and the Sixtails Demon Fox. It required a slow upgrading process.

Nevertheless, Mo Xie's tails had presently already reached six tails. This signified that Mo Xie had completely skipped the Threetails Demon Fox, and directly entered a stronger state-the Sixtails Demon Fox!

Six imperious tails filled with an unruly aura caused the gradually growing Mo Xie to seem even more arrogant and noble. Simultaneously, it increased her demonically nefarious spirit like a powerful being's imposing aura!

“Wu!!”

A long, resounding howl rang out and six demonic flames began to rotate before slowly descending. The sort of strange and terrifying flame quickly began to rotate around Mo Xie’s four limbs, unexpectedly transforming into hooves of flame that burned under her four limbs!

Mo Xie’s body was still growing bigger. Her body was now slender and had particular curves, but seemingly possessed an unruly feeling of strength. Her four limbs, torso, waist and head were all currently transforming!!

“This... this is a mutation!” Yang Zhide was already completely stupefied! Species Mutations were an extremely rare phenomenon. Yang Zhide had only heard of them, but had never witnessed one before. Especially the case of an incomparably weak Moonlight Fox instantly transforming into an eminently powerful demon and beast type combination-the Sixtail Demon Fox!

As the species mutation happened to Mo Xie’s body, she herself also transformed, and she began to transform into a third phase Sixtail Demon Fox!

When Mo Xie had transformed into the Sixtail Demon Fox, she was only at the second phase ninth stage. This aura was already able to force back the Bloodthirsty Beast. After reaching the third phase, her demonic aura would become even more terrifying. Even Yang Zhide, who was standing in the distance, could feel the frighteningly cold demonic aura. It unexpectedly made it eminently hard for his body to move.

Mo Xie's body was now twice as large as before. Additionally, her gorgeous but maverick-like six tails were twice as long as her body. Occasionally, they would stand up like steel ropes while other times they would take on the form of a spiralling silk string that danced in the air.

"Wuwuwu!!!"

Mo Xie's pupils were completely focused on the Bloodthirsty Beast. However, one could see two balls of demonic flames burning within her two silver pupils.

The complete reveal of a savage blade. In this moment, the only thing in Mo Xie's eyes was this enemy and an inexhaustible battle rage!!

"Hu"

The four demonic flame hooves transformed into ignition. In the next instant, they left four quietly burning flames in their original position as the silver-white colored body of Mo Xie had already rushed in front of the Bloodthirsty Beast!!

The pursuing Mo Xie didn't use Dark Assault, but her speed was twice as fast than when she used Dark Assault previously.

Evil Flame Claw!!

There wasn’t a sharp edge of a blade or a bloody red light. This time, Mo Xie’s claws astonishingly had a layer of demonic demon flames attached. This demon flame burned on top of Mo Xie’s eminently sharp claws. It didn't have any heat, but made Mo Xie’s claws even more imposing!

The Bloodthirsty Beast’s skin had already reached the early third stage of defense. However, it was still incapable of resisting the Evil Flame Claw’s laceration and burn!

“Shua!!”

Blood red skin was instantly torn apart without any resistance, pierced to the bone!

Meanwhile, the demon flame frantically spread on the Bloodthirsty Beast’s agape body. Unexpectedly, it began to eat away at a large chunk of the living Bloodthirsty’s Beast’s flesh and internal organs!!

Mo Xie’s Evil Flame Claws began to rip open the Bloodthirsty’s Beast’s shoulder area, and the demonic flame started to burn its torso from its shoulder. Its burning speed was extremely quick, almost as if everything was being instantly devoured!!

Her four limbs gracefully moving, Mo Xie swept through the air like she was using a momentary levitation ability. Her flame hooves lightly touched down in the air, before actually jumping again. She didn’t need to turn around to look at the Bloodthirsty Beast with half-burnt innards. Incomparably arrogant, she swept

past the beast and her gaze was like a sword that pierced into Yang Zhide's heart.

Having witnessed this terrifying scene, Yang Zhide felt the imminence of his death. Facing this cold Demon Fire Sixtails Fox, the only thing he could do in this crazily flustered state was to use Wind Bind. He wanted to use this method to blow Mo Xie away.

However, why would Mo Xie, who underwent a mutation and transformation, bother with such an insignificant Wind Bind technique? Her six gorgeous and long tails seemed to be transformed into six living spirits. As she ran, her tails swung abou, extraordinarily interweaved with each other!

Following the six tails' astonishing dance, a demonic fire suddenly ignited on Mo Xie's silver fur. The demon fire didn't have any temperature, but as it swallowed Yang Zhide's Wind Bind, it also trapped Yang Zhide within it!

Opposing someone whose soul had been heavily wounded twice in a row, Mo Xie didn't even need to use Evil Flame Claw. Her claws quickly struck across Yang Zhide's arms, and his arms immediately separated from his body!!!

"Ah!!"

A mournful scream suddenly reverberated throughout the jungle. This scream was extremely excruciating as he was hurt to the extreme!

Mo Xie could have easily killed Yang Zhide in one strike, but misgivings still rested in Chu Mu's heart. Why would he let Yang Zhide die painlessly ?

"Wuwuwuwu!!!"

Yang Zhide covered his flesh exposed arm and painfully lay on the ground. Mo Xie arrogantly stomped on this fellow's body and her six tails spread open like a peacock. Suddenly, a powerful demon aura was thrown at Yang Zhide, stunning him!

Chapter 86: Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox

Blood continued to flow from Yang Zhide's shoulder. Because of the pain, his facial features were wrought together. The tears and snot made him seem more ugly.

"Don't... don't kill me. What do you want to know... I, I'll tell you everything as long as you don't kill me..." Yang Zhide's voice trembled as he spoke.

Chu Mu walked up in front of Yang Zhide. Seeing Yang Zhide's despicable face currently begging for his life like a dog, a smile couldn't help but surface onto his face. Yet, this smile only made Yang Zhide feel more terrified.

"Wu!!"

In the jungle, Chu Mu raised a dagger with one hand and fiercely stabbed it towards Yang Zhide's forehead!!

After pulling out the dagger, a sinister bloody hole instantly appeared on Yang Zhide's forehead. Yang Zhide still had that expression of fear, and his eyes were bulging out. He opened his mouth and his head gradually fell backwards. Perhaps Yang Zhide didn't believe at all that he would perish under Chu Mu's dagger!

Wuwuwu"

After the battle had ended, Mo Xie's two eyes gradually turned

soft, and the evil flames on her body slowly dispersed. The silver white hair covering her entire body proceeded to flutter about in the jungle, lightly dancing about.

Chu Mu looked at the mutated Six Tails Mo Xie. A rather gratified expression appeared on his face and he used his hand to stroke Mo Xie's small head. He said: "You've become strong."

"Wuwu." Mo Xie's squinted her beautiful eyes and rested against Chu Mu's body, enjoying the feeling.

Evolving from a Moonlight Fox to a Six Tails Demon Fox, Mo Xie clearly had the ability to skip stages. A Moonlight Fox was a small house pet that many females liked. It had a gorgeous appearance, but its fighting ability was negligible.

On the other hand, although the Six Tails Demon Fox also possessed elegance, beauty and arrogance, its fighting ability was publicly renowned as the strongest amongst its rank. It could even be considered the perfect combination of the demon type and beast type!

After plundering all the items from Yang Zhide's body, Chu Mu decided to leave this area and find somewhere to hide. He somewhat impatiently opened the <<Pet Encyclopedia>> in order to find out what abilities Mo Xie, who had transformed into the Six Tails Demon Fox, now possessed.

After finding the Demon Fox Race, Chu Mu discovered that even amongst the Six Tails Demon Fox sub-race, there was were still a

few subdivisions.

Ordinary Six Tails Demon Foxes, Flame Six Tails Demon Foxes, and Evil Flame Six Tails Demon Foxes.

These three Six Tails Demon Foxes belonged to the same species and could reproduce with each other. The difference between them lay in their blood lineage and innate talent.

Even if they were all Six Tails Demon Foxes, their innate differences would always appear at birth. There were a few Six Tails Demon Foxes who didn't have the demon fire or evil flames on their bodies when born. It wouldn't be until the second or third phase before they could control the demon fire or evil flame.

However, there were a few Six Tails Demon Foxes that possessed this ability shortly after birth. These Six Tails Demon Fox's often had an abnormal aptitude compared to others of the same species.

"Wuwuw" Chu Mu was in the midst pondering what Six Tails Demon Fox subspecies that Mo Xie belonged to when Mo Xie extended one tail and pointed at the Evil Flame Six Tails Demon Fox.

Evil Flame Six Tails Demon Fox: Demon Beast Kingdom - Demon Type (Beast Type) - Demon Fox Race - Six Tails Demon Fox Subrace - Evil Flame Six Tails Demon Fox - High Class Warrior Rank

The Evil Flame Six Tails Demon Foxes were the imperial family

of the Six Tails Demon Foxes. Their innate talent was exceptional, and even if they were categorized as the High Class Warrior Rank, their fighting ability against similar and lower phase and stage soul pets wouldn't be inferior to a Commander Rank soul pet. They were one of the perfect combination soul pets of their respective attributes in the Warrior Rank class.

The Evil Flame Six Tails Foxes had six extremely beautiful tails. It was said that each one of the Demon Fox's six tails represented a characteristic. The six characteristics were: Docility, grace, arrogance, coldness, violence, and a love for slaughter.

The fur of the six tails were white, and they controlled the demon fire evil flame. The effect of the demon fire evil flame could cause the power of any fire attribute technique to increase by one fold. However, the burning duration wouldn't persist, and would be cut down to the shortest amount of time.

Species Technique: Demon Fire Evil Flame

Basic Techniques: Shadow Claw, Death Assault, Sinister Glare, Blink, Demonic Scare

Primary Techniques: Evil Flame Claw, Ignite, Flame Dance, and Six-tailed Lock

High Level Techniques: Illusion, Fire Rain, Molten Fury

After Chu Mu's gaze swept through the Evil Flame Six Tails

Demon Fox's techniques, his eyes lit up. A high class soul pet was a high class soul pet after all. Without even mentioning the plethora of techniques, each individual technique was extremely practical.

The most important thing was that Mo Xie also possessed the Demon Fire Evil Flame, thus increasing the power of any fire type magic by one fold. In this regard, Mo Xie's flame power was not inferior to many Elemental Kingdom soul pets. It was no wonder that the <<Pet Encyclopedia>> would depict the Evil Fire Six Tails Demon Fox as a perfect combination!

"Third phase first stage, claws have already reached the late third stage, and the evil fire is now attached to Fierce Claws."

"Early third stage defensive fur, annealed - fire resistant fur."

"The tails... this, I can't discern them..." Chu Mu was planning on identifying the quality of Mo Xie's body. In the end, he embarrassingly discovered that his own knowledge wasn't abundant enough, and he didn't know how to evaluate Mo Xie's tails to their respective stages.

Six Tails Demon Foxes were relatively rare soul pets. The <<Pet Encyclopedia>> Chu Mu bought was a general book, and it gave a description of millions of soul pets. Obviously, it could not give an overly detailed explanation for every soul pet. If Chu Mu wanted to further understand the Evil Flame Six Tails Demon Foxes, he would naturally have to buy a book that explained the Demon Fox Race. Perhaps he would even have to buy the <<Evil Flame Six Tails Demon Foxes>>. Presumably, it would give an extremely thorough explanation of the Evil Flame Six Tails Demon Foxes.

Of course, Chu Mu was currently on Prison Island, and searching for these books was impossible.

Mo Xie's species metamorphosis to Chu Mu could be regarded as extremely satisfactory.

When he thought of the information that Yang Zhide gave him before he died, Chu Mu's expression became rather pensive!

"Yang Family, this time, I'll make none of them return!"

From what Yang Zhide said, Chu Mu finally realized why these people had come to Prison Island.

Chu Mu had been directly thrown onto Prison Island, and even though Chu Mu's name was on the scroll, he didn't receive any information.

Nightmare palace would only stop by Prison Island once every three years during a maelstrom and throw prisoners onto different locations on the island.

Everyone on Prison Island was on death row. There was no supervision, and the merciless Nightmare Palace wouldn't let them easily live on Prison Island. They gave them a step by step chance to become strong and then leave this Prison Island.

In order to reach the 1 in 3000 chance of surviving, they would leave generous rewards on certain locations on the island and use a complicated map to mark them out. Next, they tore the map into many pieces and distributed them into a few prisoner's hands.

The map was also the scroll, and the front side of the scroll contained the list of dead and alive prisoners. The back side was a map, and if one wanted to obtain the treasures, he or she had to collect all the map pieces from the prisoners. In this regard, slaughter was almost inevitable.

As for the reason why the Yang Family was here, this involved Chu Mu.

The Yang Family had originally wanted Xia Guanghan to kill Chu Mu. Xia Guanghan's identity was extremely high and the cost for completing something like this was equivalently high.

The Yang Family originally hadn't paid much heed to Xia Guanghan and had casually agreed to his reward. However, they very quickly suffered from Xia Guanghan's wrath, whereby the entire family's treasures were stolen by him.

However, Xia Guanghan was not zealous over the Yang Family's treasures and had presented them to Nightmare Palace, wherein these treasures became the most generous reward for the last survivor amongst the three thousand prisoners. In order words, the treasure was the marked location on the map. To recover their family's treasures, the Yang Family had sent a group of people to covertly enter Prison Island to kill the other prisoners and recover their family treasures.

Chapter 87: Soul Technique - Wind Dragon Bind

The Yang Clan's influence was very large within Gangluo City. Naturally, they didn't dare spread this incident of losing their clan's treasure, and they therefore couldn't dispatch large amounts of people to Prison Island.

From Yang Zhide's mouth, Chu Mu understood that the leader of the team that was sent to Prison Island was Yang Zheng. Yang Zheng could be considered to be in the same generation as Chu Mu's father. He was the Yang Clan Master's third child, a Sixth Remembrance soul pet trainer.

Chu Mu remembered that this person had been defeated by his father. What left the deepest impression was this Sixth Remembrance Yang Zheng seemed to have a very talented Medium Class Commander Rank Blood Winged Trioptic Beast!

Chu Mu didn't remember what Phase that soul pet was, but he remembered that this Trioptic Beast was abnormally violent. Presumably, the reason the Yang Clan's fellows could pass through the fog and hordes of the Flying Type soul pets was because of this Blood Winged Trioptic Beast.

Other than Yang Zheng, there were about ten more people. Including Yang Zhide, who Chu Mu killed, there were seven Spirit Soldiers and three Spirit Teachers. Those were people that Chu Mu didn't entirely recognize, but there was one called Yang Jingli that Chu Mu hated to the bone.

Chu Mu's mother was a wanderer. Because of this, Chu Mu's father Chu Tiancheng was alone in many public scenes, causing many indecent and nonsensical rumors to float around about Chu Mu's mother and father.

Yet Yang Jingli had pointed at Chu Mu in public and insulted him about it. Chu Mu was only thirteen at the time, and against his Bloodthirsty Beast, the lonely Chu Mu could only swallow this shame, which became a bomb ready to explode within his heart.

Hearing that Yang Yingli was on Prison Island, Chu Mu's inner heart felt stirred, and his eyes became significantly colder!

Those Yang Clan bastards entered the island, but this was also Chu Mu's best opportunity to unleash his frenzied revenge on them. The original embarrassment and current grudge was enough to let those guys repay their debt with blood!

"Level two healing medicine, level three healing medicine, level three recovery medicine..... Three per type, this Yang Clan sure was affluent. Even a piece of trash like Yang Zhide had this much medicine. He even has a Wind Type Soul Gem." Chu Mu took inventory of the items Yang Zhide had.

Healing medicine and recovery medicine were both unusually expensive consumables. Level two healing medicine, when used on Second and Third stage soul pets, would allow any wound to quickly heal. The level three healing medicine had even stronger effects. Small wounds could completely heal within half a day,

while serious injuries that did not affect the internal organs could recover within two days.

Level three recovery medicine was not an ordinary item. Chu Mu remembered seeing such medicine sell for three hundred gold a bottle. Many soul pet trainers wouldn't use such an item lightly unless a crucial moment came to pass.

Recovery medicine was a medicine that allowed a soul pets' battling strength to quickly recover. Chu Mu's Mo Xie, from exhaustion to full energy, took about two days time. With a Recovery potion, it would only took one day.

For soul pet trainers who needed to fight in the wilderness for long periods of time, these medicines were extremely useful. It was a pity that they were also very expensive, as many soul pet trainers only bought them to prepare for emergencies, and not to use for every battle.

Yang Zhide was but a Third Remembrance Spirit Soldier, yet he had nine bottles of such medicine. That costed no less than two thousand gold, yet with two thousand gold one could buy a Low Class Warrior Rank soul pet with high talent!

Chu Mu's Ice Air Fairy was High Class Warrior Rank with top tier Ice Type talent. This type of soul pet would sell for tens of thousands if put on the market.

But soul pets like his Ice Air Fairy were extremely difficult to find. Remember, it lived in the center of the living grounds of a

massive horde of Ice Falcons. If not for the little cyan bug's coincidental metamorphosis that got rid of those Second and Third Stage Middle Class Warrior Rank Ice Falcons, Chu Mu would have never been able to contract this Ice Air Fairy.

Capturing soul pets was a study full of depth. Capturing soul pets wasn't based simply on species rank. For example, the Ice Falcons. There were dozens of them who lived in this area, and they were all of theMiddle Class Warrior Rank, but no one would go out of their way to capture all these Ice Falcons.

That is because, on the market, not every Ice Falcon could sell for thousands of gold. Only those with higher talent than most soul pets of the same rank were worthy of cultivation. The rest become a type of overflowed commodity.

Even within the category of Ice Falcons, some may sell for less than ten gold while some could sell for over ten thousand as well.

With the same idea, the price of a normal Nine Tailed Demon Foxes could definitely not compare with the price of a Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox. The Nine Tailed Demon Fox was a pretty rare soul pet, so even normal ones could sell for over hundreds of gold.

As for demon foxes of the royal family like Mo Xie, whose talent matched Commander Rank soul pets, they were the wet dreams of all Spirit Soldiers, so their price was impossible to calculate!

Other than medicine, Chu Mu also found a Soul Technique from

Yang Zhide that he intended to learn - Wind Dragon Bind.

Before, Yang Zhide casted a spell that tossed the approaching Mo Xie away - Wind Bind. It was a very practical defense ability, and this Wind Dragon Bind on Chu Mu's hands was the advanced form of Wind Bind, with defense capabilities that surpassed the normal Wind Bind.

However, Chu Mu must reach Sixth Remembrance Spirit Soldier before he had enough Soul Remembrance to completely cast the incantation of the Wind Dragon Bind.

Though he couldn't learn it now, such a high level ability's price was still no less than 500 gold, and he could learn it soon. Once Chu Mu learned it, Chu Mu would receive a very good safeguard for his own safety. Wind Dragon Bind could also be cast on soul pets, which may make crucial impacts in some situations.

"Wuwuwu!"

Mo Xie climbed onto the treetops and released her demonic aura. Proudly raising her head up high, she cast her Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox ability - Demonic Scare.

Sounds of the Demonic Scare echoed throughout the forest. After a while, the forest within a few hundred meter radius became clamorous as many soul pets who lived there fled with terror!

Mo Xie gazed down upon that area of the forest. After she

converted the nearby area into her territory, she jumped down from the treetops.

Her body lightly fell along with the falling leaves. Mo Xie's body slowly shrunk and she became a tiny and exquisite little Six Tailed Demon Fox as she adorably fell into Chu Mu's embrace, letting out a string of endearing calls……

"Inheriting Pitiful Appearance from the Moonlight Fox, it seems that even when you become the powerful Six Tailed Demon Fox, you still aren't willing to get rid of your habit of disguise……" Seeing Mo Xie with such a petite body, Chu Mu only laughed and started rubbing her cute and fluffy tail.

Chapter 88: Stage Advance - Fifth Remembrance Spirit Soldier

At night, when the onslaught of cold island air had arrived, Chu Mu was resting under a tree and felt rather cold.

Chu Mu didn't sleep, but instead entered a silent cultivation state. Just as Chu Mu was about to feed his soul power to the White Nightmare, Chu Mu surprisingly discovered that his own soul power wasn't completely used up and he still had a bit remaining.

"I've become a fifth remembrance Spirit Soldier!" a rapt feeling of ecstasy surfaced in Chu Mu's heart!

Soul pet trainers and soul pets were connected through the soul, and if a soul pet became stronger, then the soul pet trainer would also receive a large benefit. Mo Xie's species metamorphosis this time caused her strength to fly up. This also made Chu Mu increase by one remembrance. Once his soul power was enough, his soul remembrance would become even stronger!

"Not only have I reached the fifth remembrance, I am at the peak of the fifth remembrance. If the Ice Air Fairy enters the third phase, I can reach the sixth remembrance!" Chu Mu quickly inspected his own soul remembrance state, and a feeling of pleasant surprise filled his whole body.

As long as he pulled apart the gap between his strength and the White Nightmare's, Chu Mu would have enough soul power to use

techniques. He would also have greater control over each technique's power.

Moreover, once he reached seven remembrances, Chu Mu could obtain another new soul pet. Even though he could only summon one soul pet to fight, the number of soul pets was a critical point of strength. After all, as long as there was enough soul power, one could substitute the soul pets as he or she fought!

The rain had stopped the previous day and when the sun rose, the smell of the clean soil in the forest pervaded the air. A few pleasant sounding chirps of the birds in the jungle interweaved between the treetops. An excited and cheery atmosphere faced the blazing sun overlooking the island amidst the mist...

"How are you so stupid? A brat with a second phase sixth stage Ice Air Fairy scared you to such an extent that you lost the scroll?!"

Zhang Kuochong and Xiang Liang were half brothers. They were working together for Nightmare Palace when they attempted to steal from the Nightmare Palace's treasury and were caught. Ultimately, they were thrown onto Prison Island.

"How would I know that the Frozen Ice Blade technique at that time would be so strong. It had both light and dark rays so I thought it was a fourth phase Ice Air Fairy..." Xiang Liang argued.

"Hmmm"

“What?”

“Can’t you see, footprints!”

Zhang Kuochong immediately made a face at Xiang Laing and pointed at the dried rows of footprints on the ground.

“It should be him. We should be careful as we approach him.” Zhang Kuochong said.

The two people quietly summoned their soul pets and slowly walked towards the footprints.

“Go see if he’s in the vicinity. Don’t disturb him!” Zhao Kuochong summoned his third phase second stage Red Bird and made it look for Chu Mu’s traces from a hidden location up in the treetops.

Red Birds and Cyan Birds had many similarities. However, Red Birds were of the Low Class General Rank, and while Cyan Birds controlled the power of wind, Red Birds could start waves of fire.

Zhang Kuochong’s first soul had suffered from an injury, and he could currently only summon one soul pet to fight as well.

The soul pets that Xiang Liang summoned were still the Rhinoceros and the Black Wood Demon. These two soul pets were

slow and could only slowly follow the Red Bird.

“Yiyi~~”

Soon, the Red Bird transmitted a mental message back to Zhang Kuochong, informing him of what it had discovered.

“Good, he’s definitely dead this time. Xiang Liang, make your Black Wood Demon control the surrounding earth. Don’t give him another chance to run away!” said Zhang Kuochong.

Xiang Liang immediately made his Black Wood Demon hide in the jungle, where its roots slowly extended into the ground. Afterwards, the Rhinoceros locked onto Chu Mu’s location, planning on attacking him directly.

“Haha, this brat is still sleeping. Quieter...”

Zhang Kuochong quickly discovered Chu Mu, who was half-lying down under a tree. In Chu Mu’s bosom, he was carrying the crafty small fox from before.

“Let my Black Wood Demon tie him up first.” said Xiang Liang. He silently commanded his Black Wood Demon to extend its roots.

The roots slowly entered beneath the ground and gradually extended to Chu Mu’s location. Like silent pythons, they began twisting around Chu Mu’s thighs little by little .

Seeing that Chu Mu and the fox didn't have any reactions, a smile instantly appeared on the two prisoners' faces.

However, before they could be happy, Mo Xie and Chu Mu simultaneously opened their eyes!

"Huhu"

Mo Xie freed herself from Chu Mu's hug. The fur on her body began fluttering in the windless air and suddenly an imposing demonic aura was discharged!!

Demonic Fire Evil Flame immediately ignited on Mo Xie's four paws. Opposing the surreptitiously twisting roots, Mo Xie haughtily and indifferently used her flaming paws to stamp on the roots. Abruptly, the Demonic Fire Evil Flame began to spread on the roots and instantly burned them to ashes.

After the Black Wood Demon's roots were burned by Mo Xie's Demon Fire Evil Flame, it immediately let out a wailing shout. It didn't dare to launch another attack towards Chu Mu and Mo Xie.

"What a perfect opportunity to get rid of these two fellows." Chu Mu slowly opened his eyes. His two black pupils stared at the two flabbergasted prisoners, and a demonic smile appeared on his face.

Chu Mu maintained a consistent habit. During the night he would silently cultivate until the daytime, when he would enter a

short sleep.

When Chu Mu was asleep, Mo Xie would be on alert. She had already released Demonic Scare in the surrounding couple hundred meters. A majority of soul pets had already been expelled from this area of forest, so once any movement occurred, it meant that something living had invaded this area.

Mo Xie's perception abilities were not weak, and once the Red Bird began investigating from above, Mo Xie half-closed her eyes and pretended to be asleep. Secretly, she was giving Chu Mu a mental message and woke him up.

Mo Xie's metamorphosis caused Chu Mu's strength to greatly increase. Currently he didn't have to fear these two prisoners.

"Kill him!!" Zhang Kuochong merely regarded the Demonic Fire Evil Flame as an illusion. He proceeded to use his mental connection to command his Red Bird to swoop down from above!

"Yi!!" The Red Bird emitted a sharp cry as the feathers on its body astonishingly ignited with groups of flames. It abruptly swooped down from the air above and, like a burning meteor, it descended!

Facing the Red Bird's Flaming Meteor, Mo Xie slowly stepped forth. The silver radiance in her eyes twinkled for a second, and then the evil aura on her body was violently released.

Six pillars of silent flames suddenly began floating around Mo

Xie, forming a maelstrom of demonic fire that spiralled upwards from her fur and surrounded her body.

Pitiful Appearance's effect had been removed-An Evil Flame Six Tail Demon Fox!!

The maelstrom of Demonic Fire on Mo Xie's body quickly expanded, and the six originally fluffy tails rapidly lengthened, transforming into six eminently gorgeous and colorful whip-like tails. They incomparably, oppressively, and willfully danced in amidst the Demon Fire Evil Flame!

Mo Xie's expression was indifferent, and she stood in place. The six tails had astonishingly transformed into tenacious bloody whips which smashed towards the Flaming Meteor Red Bird!

"Pai!!"

The Red Bird's flames didn't deal any damage to Mo Xie. Instead, its body was struck by the glorious six tails and flew straight back, heavily knocking into a large stree.

"Hong" When the Red Bird struck the tree, it rolled onto the ground next to Mo Xie.

Throughout this entire course of events, the demonic Mo Xie didn't even look once at the Red Bird. She smacked the Red Bird like she was swatting a weak fly. Arrogant, powerful, indifferent.

Chapter 89: Following Yang Clan's Footsteps

The Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox's intimidating and demonic aura buffeted the two prisoners. The two prisoners' eyeballs were on the verge of falling out. How did a small, pet-like fox just transform into such an incomparably strong Demon Fox!

They were both at the Third Phase, and the Red Bird was even a stage higher than Mo Xie, but the difference in power was already very evident. After hitting the Red Bird away, Mo Xie's eyes immediately fell upon the Red Bird. Those silver eyes shockingly ignited with an enchanting flame!

Ignite!

A beam of fire instantaneously lit up the area where the Red Bird had knocked into a tree. The Red Bird had fire resistant feathers, so normal flames naturally wouldn't do much harm to it, but under the instantaneous burn of the demon fire and evil flames, this Red Bird's body still burned up. Its fire red feathers disintegrated into dust. Following suit was its body, which didn't completely burn up, but already become blackened.

Zhang Kuochong's face quickly blanched. Not too long ago his Hunting Wolf had already been killed by Chu Mu, so his first soul was already damaged. He was just shocked by the imposing manner of the Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox and forgot to retract his soul pet. He couldn't have imagined that a single Ignite from this Six tailed Demon Fox was enough to kill his Red Bird, which was also a Fire Type!

With both souls damaged, Zhang Kuochong could no longer summon any more soul pets. Like this, Zhang Kuochong couldn't possibly survive in this "survival of the fittest" type Prison Island.

"Kill them." Chu Mu gazed at the two prisoners and said apathetically to Mo Xie.

Mo Xie's gaze quickly locked onto Zhang Kuochong, who had no soul pet to protect him!

Death Assault!

Shadow Assault allowed Mo Xie's speed to instantly increase, and Death Assault was an even more advanced form, causing a terrifying boost to Mo Xie's speed.

A dark flash flitted across the bushes as if the shadow of a ghost. Zhang Kuochong and Xiang Liang didn't even have time to react!

Zhang Kuochong stood in place dumbly. It wasn't until he felt his neck being slit did terror appear on his face. But right after terror, the artery on Zhang Kuochong's neck spewed out blood. Zhang Kuochong didn't even have time to cast a single soul technique!

Blood splattered onto Xiang Liang's face as the metallic scent of blood assaulted his nose. Yet, what frightened him wasn't the pervading bloody scent. It was the imposing demonic aura that

made him feel as if he fell into a cave of ice!

“Protect me! Protect me!!” Xiang Liang frantically called telepathically towards his Du Jue and Black Wood Demon!

The Du Jue’s speed couldn’t even begin to compare with Mo Xie’s. In such circumstances, it could only cast meaningless attacks like Horn Awn.

As for the Black Wood Demon, its Wood Type soul pets naturally had a fear towards Fire Types, let alone Mo Xie’s even higher temperature Demonic Fire Evil Flame. Even though the Black Wood Demon already stood right in front of Xiang Liang and adopted a defensive position, it still couldn’t stop Mo Xie’s Evil Flame Claws!

The Black Wood Demon’s Third Rank Intermediate Stage bark defenses were very fragile under Mo Xie’s evil flames, and were ripped apart very easily. Violently surging evil flames quickly spread and managed to cleanly burn away more than half of the Black Wood Demon’s body, leaving only the arm-like branches.

There wasn’t a single ounce of resistance in Xiang Liang’s mind now. Not caring about his soul pets’ deaths, he hastily casted Wind Ride on himself and ran haphazardly towards the forest!

But no matter what speed soul technique Xiang Liang used, it couldn’t even begin to compete with Mo Xie’s speed. Mo Xie completely ignored the clumsy Du Jue and, after running a distance, extended her claws when she was still 10 meters away!

Her claws swiped past. There were no enchanting flames and no sharp glint, but a shadow flashed past!!

“Ahh!!”

The escaping Xiang Liang didn’t even understand what happened before feeling a tearing pain in his legs. Right after, he lost his balance and fell into the bushes, rolling around in pain.

“Let....let me live, I.....I can tell you who still has scrolls.....” Feeling the dreadful Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox nearing, Xiang Liang started shaking all over and abruptly started yelling.

“Who still has some?” Chu Mu walked up to Xiang Liang and asked.

“Just.....just yesterday I saw two people that didn’t look like prisoners.....They walked towards the north end of the lake. They have scrolls, at least two of them!” Xiang Liang said with slurred enunciation.

Chu Mu lifted a brow and glanced towards the lake not far away.

“Don’t! I also know, I also know the approximate location of the magical treasure! Let me go.....I’ll..... I’ll write the answer on a tree bark and let my soul pet send it to you. If it is fake, you can straight up kill my soul pet. Without it, I wouldn’t have a way to survive anyways.” Xiang Liang said.

“How would you know the location of the treasure?” Chu Mu asked.

“The reason I was thrown onto Prison Island was to steal the entire map under the directions of someone. I only glanced very briefly at it before being discovered……If you let me go, as long as we gather half of all the scrolls, you will get the treasure.” Xiang Liang saw Chu Mu slightly hesitate and immediately smiled obsequiously.

But, Xiang Liang’s obsequious smile stiffened the next moment!

The artery on his neck was just sliced open again. Xiang Liang’s face went stiff. His eyes were full of disbelief and confusion. He didn't understand why under such beneficial circumstances would the teen still kill him!

Chu Mu mercilessly looked at Xiang Liang’s body and simply lifted a corner of his mouth.

Chu Mu was probably the only prisoner on the island that went willingly. Making such a decision, Chu Mu’s only goal was to become the last man standing. From his perspective, everyone on this island would sooner or later be killed, and the treasure was inevitably his, so he had no reason to play mind games with someone trivial like Xiang Liang, and waste energy determining whether his words were true or false.

In addition, Chu Mu had a new target, which was to kill all the

people from the Yang Clan who entered the island. As long as he had the scrolls, the Yang Family would definitely find him. Chu Mu couldn't let people like Xiang Liang, who knew these shortcuts, live.

"Went north of the lake, I wonder which two Yang Clan rubbish they were."

Chu Mu eyes swept across the prisoners and after finding nothing of value, he started walking towards the lake to catch up to the two people of the Yang Clan. If he could get rid of them, he would do it secretly. If those two people were strong, Chu Mu would naturally give up immediately. Once he got stronger, he would then give them a lethal blow!

Chapter 90: Trapped Savage Beast (1)

As he continued to walk directly towards the north, Chu Mu noticed that the map in his hands only approximately mapped out the boundary of this jungle basin.

Further north from the jungle basin was a towering mountain peak. This mountain was abnormally tall. Chu Mu spent the night at the foot of the mountain, when he heard an extremely palpitating shout.

The mountain peak was over a thousand meters high. Being able to hear such a hair-raising, terrifying scream from over a thousand meters high, one could see that the mountain peak clearly harbored the habitats of a few exceptionally strong soul pets.

Chu Mu was also self-aware. Since the mountain peak was abnormally dangerous and a number of powerful creatures lived there, Chu Mu had no choice but to go around the mountain, entering into a long and narrow valley.

……

“Huhuhu~”

The valley wind was very cold, as if sharp blades were cutting at one’s skin. Occasionally, there would be a few dead branches and leaves mixed in the wind.

In total, it had already taken one month for Chu Mu to walk out of the rather complicated jungle basin, walk around the mountain, and walk on the only valley path that could go north.

In this one month, Chu Mu didn't manage to chase those two Yang Family members. Throughout his journey, though, he had encountered many prisoners and constantly fought battles. This made his Ice Air Fairy reach the second phase eighth stage. Mo Xie's strength had also increased by one stage. As for Chu Mu himself, he had finally become a sixth remembrance Soul Soldier.

"Ling"

Although the Ice Air Fairy's intelligence wasn't high, it seemed to be able to discover a few easily neglected places.

After Chu Mu heard the Ice Air Fairy's voice, his gaze moved to where the Ice Air Fairy was pointing to. He discovered the thick layer of a moss-like plant covering the ground in the valley.

"What's wrong with this?" Chu Mu didn't quite understand.

"Ling~"

The Ice Air Fairy pointed at these plants again and spoke to Chu Mu in a strange language.

Chu Mu had only learned the Beast Language and had a certain amount of comprehension towards Beast Kingdom Soul Pet

languages. However, he was completely at a loss when it came to the Elemental Kingdom language. Chu Mu could only use the mental connection between him and the Ice Air Fairy to approximately guess what the Ice Air Fairy was referring to.

“Are these plants special? You’ve seen them before right?” asked Chu Mu.

“Ling” the Ice Air Fairy shook its head and sent a mental message to Chu Mu’s mind.

Chu Mu seemed to understand something and retrieved the <<Plant Kingdom>> book from his pack. He began to look for plant soul pets of this type.

As expected, when Chu Mu found what soul pets lived in valleys, information regarding the plant beneath Chu Mu’s feet appeared.

“Valley Moss. There will often be a type of third grade medicinal ingredient, Cold Grain Ginseng, that will grow in areas with valley moss. Cold Grain Ginseng is the most immediate medicinal ingredient and is of great help towards the growth of an ice type soul pet.”

After reading the introduction, Chu Mu looked at the Ice Air Fairy and said: “It turns out this place has a fine delicacy of yours. No wonder your sense of smell was so perceptible.”

“Lin~~” The Ice Air Fairy shook its head.

“This place is the only path from the jungle basin to the north. There should be many prisoners that use it. If this place has a third grade medicinal ingredient, I’m not sure if it would have already been taken.” said Chu Mu.

“Ling”

The Ice Air Fairy seemed to sense the location of the special plant that grew in this sort of cold zone. It walked in front and lead the way.

Chu Mu followed behind the Ice Air Fairy as they walked further into the complicated valley.

When the Ice Air Fairy brought him into a very narrow path, Chu Mu couldn’t help but stare blankly at the dead end ahead of them.

The small valley path was a side trail that led to a dead end. Not only was it enveloped by shadows, it was also covered in Valley Moss. Most people would easily miss this path when they swept their eyes past it.

What made Chu Mu surprised was that the Ice Air Fairy was able to find a frosted plant that ran across the wall of the dead end-like crevice. Covered by this plant was another path.

The Ice Air Fairy was in front and led Chu Mu into this rather particular looking valley path.

The further they walked in, the colder Chu Mu felt. When Chu Mu walked out of the crevice, something appeared in front of him that made him feel shocked!

What emerged in front of Chu Mu was a towering mountain wall on all four sides. Aside from the narrow crevice path they had taken in, there wasn't any other path.

The mountain wall was extremely tall, rising steeply from the ground. After walking around in a circle, even after he lifted his head up, all he could see was a foggy sky. Being stuck inside, Chu Mu felt as if he had fallen into an enormous well!

The bottom of this precipice was about 50 centimeters squared. Perhaps because it was a unique environment, the plants here were all shorter than normal plants, whether they were trees or shrubs . Nonetheless, this place was abnormally lush.

The majority of the plants that grew here were of the Yin type. Even though this place wasn't moist, Chu Mu was feeling rather cold.

"Chichi"

Suddenly, a slight sound of movement came from within the short plants. Instantly, Chu Mu made the Ice Air Fairy put Ice Armor on him and increased his vigilance.

“Hou hou!!”

Seemingly at the same moment that the Ice Armor was added to Chu Mu’s body, suddenly, a terrifying roar erupted, violently smashing into Chu Mu’s face. This imposing cold intent seeped through Chu Mu’s entire body stunning him!!

“Beng!!”

Chu Mu was unable to clearly see the movements of this soul pet that had suddenly appeared. Instead, he abruptly discovered that this soul pet had savagely thrown itself onto the Ice Air Fairy, and its claws suddenly stabbed into the Ice Air Fairy’s body!

“Ping!!” The Ice Air Fairy’s body was like a mirror that shattered. A large empty hole was immediately cut out in the thick Ice Armor that covered its body.

In shock, Chu Mu instantly began reciting an incantation. Promptly, the Ice Air Fairy that had been heavily wounded was recalled back to the soul pet space.

Feeling a terrifying gaze fixate onto himself, Chu Mu immediately retreated a few steps before rolling back into the narrow crevice!

“Hou hou!!”

A claw suddenly extended into the crevice, and despite it not

actually reaching Chu Mu's body, the blade's edge managed to shatter Chu Mu's Ice Armor making his stomach feel a wave of sharp pain!

"Hou!! Hou!!"

Chu Mu's face paled as he retreated. His gaze was fixated on the savage beast over three meters long that was in the mountain wall crevice!

A shiver went down the back of his neck. Chu Mu hadn't actually walked too far into this sealed off mountain abyss. He was scared of something like this occurring, but didn't expect that this completely sealed off area harbored such a terrifying soul pet!

Moreover, Chu Mu currently wasn't more than five meters apart from this soul pet. He could see this soul pet's eyes, and if it wasn't because this creature's enormous body made it incapable of entering the crevice, Chu Mu would have been instantly killed just now!

Chapter 91: Trapped Savage Beast (2)

“Ning, are you okay?” Chu Mu immediately opened his healing medicine and used Soul Remembrance to lead the healing medicine into the soul pet space and heal the Ice Air Fairy’s wound.

“Ling”

The Ice Air Fairy produced a weak noise. It seemed that the attack just now had caused a deep wound.

After Chu Mu rubbed the healing medicine on the Ice Air Fairy, he carefully examined the Ice Air Fairy’s body. Upon making sure there was no danger to its life, he finally let out a sigh of relief.

“Thankfully it’s an Elemental Kingdom soul pet. It has no blood, arteries or internal organs. Otherwise, that one claw strike would have probably taken its life.” Chu Mu’s heart still had a bit of lingering fear as he spoke.

This time really was due to a bit of carelessness. Thankfully, the crevice was narrow, and the soul pet couldn’t reach Chu Mu.

“Hou hou!!”

The exposed malevolent face of the savage soul pet seemed to indicate it didn’t plan on giving up. It continued to use its claws to scratch at the rocky wall. The strength of this savage soul pet was considerably terrifying, and the thick rocks were cut through. If it

wasn't for the sturdiness of this crevice, perhaps it may have already been disintegrated!

"At least a fifth phased Multi Colored Devil Tiger."

Chu Mu retreated while staring at the savage and imposing soul pet.

Multi Colored Devil Tiger: Beast Kingdom - Beast type - Devil Tiger Species - Multi Colored Devil Tiger Subspecies - High Class Commander Rank

Its sharp teeth were like swords, and could tear apart higher ranking defenses. It had a sturdy tiger body and was the most pure form of beast type soul pets. Its shocking and terrifying explosive strength gave it pseudo invincibility in close combat.

A High Class Commander Rank that had further reached the fifth stage. This was enough to contend against Xia Guanghan's Ice Winged Tiger. The current stage and phase of this soul pet was something that Chu Mu could not handle.

Chu Mu knew that his own strength was insufficient and decisively turned around to leave, forsaking the medicine in the area.

"Hou hou!!"

The Multi Colored Devil Tiger's angry roars continued to

resonate from behind him. Just as Chu Mu walked out of the crevice, he suddenly thought of a problem.

“The Multi Colored Devil Tiger cannot fly. At the fifth stage, its jumping capabilities should allow it to only reach ten or so meters. However, the mountain pit just now was at least twenty meters deep and the crevice was so narrow. Could it be that...”

Chu Mu immediately turned around and looked at the Multi Colored Devil Tiger that was continually using its claws to scratch at the mountain crevice. At this moment, Chu Mu discovered that even though the Multi Colored Devil Tiger’s appearance was savage, its eyes revealed a rather strange countenance.

Chu Mu stopped in his tracks before slowly going back. He began to chant an incantation.

Chu Mu had already learned the beast language and could roughly communicate with beast kingdom soul pets through soul techniques .

“Have you been trapped in here?” Using beast language, Chu Mu transformed what he wanted to say into a mental wave that transmitted into the Multi Colored Devil Tiger’s mind.

“Hou Hou!!”

The Multi Colored Devil Tiger’s temper wasn’t very good. Having received Chu Mu’s question, it denied it and continued to roar.

Clearly, it was upholding its dignity.

“Inside there are a few plants that you cannot eat. I believe you were definitely lured here by a few prey that accidently entered this place, right?” Chu Mu maintained his distance with the Multi Colored Devil Tiger as he asked his question.

“Hou!!” The Multi Colored Devil Tiger still refused to admit it.

“Unless you reach a higher stage and phase, you will not be able to jump out of this mountain pit or break apart this crevice. However, in this place, there is a lack of fighting, soul cores and food. Your strength increases extremely slowly and it’s unknown how many years it will take before you can free yourself.” Chu Mu continued to talk.

As if Chu Mu words hit a sore spot, the Multi Colored Devil Tiger instantly turned indignant and spat out a bitingly cold breath towards the mountain wall crevice!!!

“Hou Hou Hou!!” The roars were equivalent to the attack of a magical wind. Chu Mu instantly chanted an incantation and used Wind Dragon Bind to defend himself from the span of the Multi Colored Tiger’s breath.

“Don’t be nervous. I’m not your enemy. Only, you’ve been trapped here and your situation isn’t optimistic. I only want to help free you.” said Chu Mu.

Seeing that the Multi Colored Devil Tiger had begun to calm down, Chu Mu continued to say: “I can actually help you leave this place. I’m sure that you’ve been trapped here for a long time.”

“Hou Hou” The Multi Colored Devil Tiger was rather doubtful towards these words.

A fifth phase soul pet possessed intelligence that had reached a very high level. This kind of soul pet had the ability to independently think and make a few logical thoughts. Thus, the Multi Colored Devil Tiger naturally found it very hard to believe Chu Mu’s words.

“I am a soul pet trainer and on my hand is a special ring. This ring can bring a soul pet into a special space. When I leave this place, I will open up the ring and release you, thereby freeing you…” said Chu Mu.

“Hou Hou!!”

The Multi Colored Devil Tiger’s anger flared up once more. Its intelligence was very high and it could understand what this so-called soul pet ring was it was exactly like a dark prison. If it were to enter, escaping was impossible!

A soul pet ring was used by soul pet trainers when they captured soul pets but didn’t form a soul pact. A few soul pet hunters would often bring a soul pet ring that could hold a large volume when they went into the wild to capture soul pets. Afterwards, they would sell them at the Soul Pet Palace or at an exchange.

The soul pet ring on Chu Mu's hand was bought while he was in Heng City for five gold coins. It could hold one soul pet, and was a rather shoddy quality soul pet ring.

"Truthfully, you don't have any other options. Just now, when you were attacking me, I saw multiple corpses besides you. I believe that you've already discovered that there are many people on this island. I'm sure they will find this area sooner or later. If they bring a large group of people to fight you, you will still be killed by them if you are trapped here. My soul pet ring cannot hold such a powerful soul pet like you. With just one technique you will be able to destroy it..." said Chu Mu.

"Hou Hou!!" The Multi Colored Devil Tiger didn't quite believe Chu Mu and produced a few roars, indicating that Chu Mu should leave.

"Since you don't believe me, I will just leave." Chu Mu helplessly shook his head.

In truth, Chu Mu really did plan on helping the Multi Colored Devil Tiger free itself. As long as he could get the Multi Colored Devil Tiger out, the plants in the mountain pit would belong to him. Chu Mu also had to use the valley cold to heal the Ice Air Fairy's wounds and increase its strength.

As for what Chu Mu had just said now, it was really the truth. The ring on Chu Mu's hand could not trap a fifth phase Multi Colored Devil Tiger.

Inside the mountain pit, the light rays gradually dimmed. As the Multi Colored Devil Tiger watched the human who talked with him leave, the expression in its eyes underwent a change. However, its haughty self refused to compromise. It let out a downcast roar, turned around and returned to the eminently narrow mountain pit.

The Multi Colored Devil Tiger was clearly rather depressed as it lay on the cold grass. It closed its eyes and planned on sleeping.

However, after some time, the Multi Colored Devil tiger heard the sound of light footsteps. Its ears instantly stuck up, and it quickly ran to the side to hide.

“Pa” Suddenly a bloody corpse was thrown inside…

The Multi Colored Devil Tiger suspiciously looked at the Iron Toothed Porcupine Body.

“This is food I’m giving you. There are also soul cores inside. It should be enough to feed you for a few days… Hopefully one day your companions will find you and help you escape.”

The Multi Colored Devil Tiger’s gaze changed once more. Just previously, that human’s voice had come from the crevice. Nevertheless, not much later, the voice gradually grew further away. Clearly, he had thrown the corpse inside before leaving.

Chapter 92: Stalk And Assassinate

Chu Mu just happened to coincidentally encounter a porcupine as he walked out of the mountain pit. After getting Mo Xie to kill it, Chu Mu then gave the corpse to the Multi Colored Devil Tiger.

The Multi Colored Devil Tiger was a High Class Commander Rank soul pet. Moreover, it had already evolved to the fifth stage. On this island, it could be considered the hegemon of a region. If it were to starve to death while trapped here, then it would be too tragic.

Fortunately, there were a few non-valuable soul cores on Chu Mu. After getting Mo Xie to kill the porcupine, Chu Mu put the soul cores into the porcupine's body. This could be regarded as an expression of respect towards the powerful Multi Colored Devil Tiger.

The Multi Colored Devil Tiger maintained its vigilance and, after the corpse was thrown at it, Chu Mu didn't stay any longer and directly exited the valley.

After leaving the valley, he continued to walk forward. An eminently dense and dark forest appeared in front of him.

On top of the forest were low hanging dark clouds, which made the entire forest seem like it was enveloped by a shadow. However, in Chu Mu's opinion, even if there was sunshine dispersing from above, it would be very hard for this forest to any sense of liveliness. This was because the wind that blew from within was

ice cold.

The Ice Air Fairy was in a heavily wounded condition and, even with the healing medicine, it would most likely need 10 days before it could fully recover. Chu Mu didn't recklessly enter the strange forest and instead brought Mo Xie with him as he wandered between the valley and the forest. He was looking for a few ice type soul pets to use as the Ice Air Fairy's food.

For ten days, Chu Mu continued to stay within the vicinity and earned approximately 10 third stage soul cores.

During these ten days, the Ice Air Fairy had finally fully recovered.

"Since your wounds are better, come out and take a breath of fresh air."

Chu Mu recalled Mo Xie into the soul pet space before summoning the Ice Air Fairy.

Chu Mu was rather surprised when he summoned the Ice Air Fairy because a glossy lustre had surfaced on its body. Currently it was enveloped by a white radiance.

"You can even advance a stage after recuperating from injuries?" Chu Mu looked at the Ice Air Fairy whose body had changed, and a look of surprise appeared on his face.

“Ling” The Ice Air Fairy seemed very happy, and it produced series of crisp noises that sounded like ice crystals rubbing against one another.

“Second phase ninth stage, defensive ice skin has reached the early third stage, under the Ice Armor’s effects, its defensive strength is comparably to a final third stage defensive skin…”

The Ice Air Fairy’s defensive abilities were truly unreasonably strong. It was merely at the second phase ninth stage, and yet its defensive strength had already reached the condition of the final third stage. Perhaps even many third phase Warrior Rank soul pets would find it hard to break apart its defense.

“Ling” the Ice Air Fairy moved next to Chu Mu and pointed towards an item in Chu Mu’s bag before making a noise.

Chu Mu suspiciously glanced at his pack and found that inside there seemed to be an item that was emitting a magical lustre.

“It’s shining. Could it be that a prisoner with a scroll is nearby?”

After Chu Mu opened his bag, he discovered that the scroll was circulating with a particular magical lustre.

This magic scroll had been imprinted with a special reactionary incantation. Once another scroll of the same sort was nearby, it would release a magical lustre. This was also a method for Nightmare Palace to force the prisoners to fight with each other.

Chu Mu attempted to walk forward, and he found that the radiance had dimmed a bit. Thus, he began to walk in the opposite direction.

Once he chose this direction, Chu Mu began to unceasingly walk in that opposite direction. Before long, he noticed that the other scroll seemed to be near the valley that he had walked through already.

Chu Mu was halfway up the mountain, so he intentionally crawled down to an elevated perch a distance away from the valley exit. Looking down from above, he noticed a few people trying to enter the valley.

“The scroll has lit up. There is a prisoner nearby holding a scroll.”

“Ignore it for now. Let’s deal with this matter first.”

“Yes, if we are able to capture this Multi Colored Devil Tiger, then third uncle will definitely reward us.” Yang Jinglian said.

“That’s only natural, the signal has already been set off, right?” Yang Jingli asked.

“Don’t worry, they’ll arrive here very soon.” said Yang Jinglian.

After speaking this, Yang Jinglian intentionally looked in the surroundings, trying to see if that prisoner was nearby. If he or she was, then he would immediately kill him. Otherwise, it would be hard to find this fellow in the future.

Chu Mu was hiding high up in a tree. Currently he had already released his Soul Remembrance, so he could hear the conversation occurring far away.

“Yang Jingli, hmph, it really is you. You surprisingly brought your trash of a younger brother with you. A perfect opportunity to get rid of both of you together!” A demonic smile surfaced on Chu Mu’s face.

Yang Jingli was a fourth remembrance Spirit Disciple. Chu Mu was higher than him by two remembrances. Yang Jingli was naturally unable to detect Chu Mu’s soul remembrance, which had already overheard their conversation.

Yang Jinglian was Yang Jingli’s younger brother. According to Chu Mu’s estimate, he should be about a second remembrance Spirit Disciple.

The Yang Family seemed to not have sent any internal clan members this time after their treasure was stolen. They sent many young people, and these sorts of people without the protection of their elders would become something for Chu Mu to hone his skills with!

Chu Mu buried the scroll under the tree and after putting a seal

on top, he slid down the mountain. He maintained a certain distance as he followed the two people as they entered the valley.

The opposing party was composed of only Spirit Disciples and they could each summon two soul pets. It was very likely that Chu Mu would have to face four soul pets. Even with Mo Xie, Chu Mu still couldn't be over zealous.

"That prisoner seems to have walked farther away." said Yang Jinglian, after he grabbed his scroll and discovered that the radiance was gradually dimming.

"Don't be anxious. We can look for the scroll again. The trapped Multi Colored Devil Tiger is an extremely rare but good opportunity for us." said Yang Jingli.

The Multi Colored Devil Tiger was High Class Warrior Rank which could be considered the region's hegemon.

As a cub, it would often accompany its parents, so obtaining the High Class Warrior Rank soul pet, the Multi Colored Devil Tiger, was extremely difficult. Especially one that had evolved to the fifth phase!

Above Spirit Disciples were Spirit Masters. A Spirit Master's soul remembrance was enough to control a Commander Rank soul pet. However, in reality, many people who had reached the Spirit Master level would find it hard to actually have a Commander Rank soul pet.

The higher species rank a soul pet was, the more rare it was. The Multi Colored Devil Tiger was such an example.

Generally speaking, Multi Colored Devil Tigers would only appear in a deep in the mountains in a few old forests. In order to find a Multi Colored Devil Tiger, one would often have to enter an extremely dangerous region.

Furthermore, soul pets with a high species ranks, like the Multi Colored Tiger, would develop extreme intelligence after reaching the third phase. Often, even when they were facing death, they wouldn't sign a soul pact with a human.

However, Multi Colored Devil Tigers still in infancy had low intelligence and were dependent on others. Nevertheless, infant Multi Colored Devil Tigers would normally always be protected by older fellow clansmen. Unless one could defeat a fifth or sixth phase Multi Colored Devil Tiger, he or she would not be able to obtain an infant Multi Colored Devil Tiger.

In an transaction that involved a second phase and under Commander Rank soul pet, even if its aptitude was average, 100,000 gold coins could be gained.

As for a fifth phase Multi Colored Devil Tiger, its price was hard to estimate. If someone was able to tame it, he or she would definitely become outstanding and famous in Wangluo City!

Chapter 93: Ice Wall, Separation Of Death

Yang Jingli and Yang Jinglian naturally couldn't be allowed to succeed in signing a soul contract with the Multi Colored Devil Tiger.

Chu Mu couldn't let them prevail. If the Multi Colored Devil Tiger were tamed, then it would be almost impossible for Chu Mu to get rid of them anymore.

Chu Mu still remembered the location of the special ravine, so following the valley upwards, he planned to get around above the ravine.

Above the ravine was a mountain slope. It was lush with vegetation, and the ravine was like a trap, hidden between the connected treetops. No wonder the Multi Colored Devil Tiger fell in. Without being cautious, it was indeed likely to fall down into this unfathomably deep ravine.

Chu Mu walked to a tree near the edge of the ravine where he could just see into the crevice on the mountain.

"This is about thirty meters deep I'm afraid." Chu Mu looked downwards to the upright precipice, and he felt cold air constantly blowing into his face.

Before, when he was below the ravine, his vision was obstructed and he had estimated it to be merely twenty meters high, but now he knew it was far more.

Looking down, Chu Mu started to search the plants for the Multi Colored Devil Tiger. The Tiger's body seemed to completely blend in with the nearby plants because his body was nowhere to be seen.

"Ning, go to the other end." Chu Mu said to his Ice Air Fairy.

The Ice Air Fairy very obediently went around the ravine and slowly walked closer to the crevice, using its round eyes to watch Chu Mu, who was hidden on another treetop.

Chu Mu's gaze was still fixed on the mountain crevice. At that moment, a silhouette had already appeared within the crevice.

"Enter and check to see if the Multi Colored Devil Tiger has died of hunger already." Yang Jingli said to Yang Jinglian.

"Probably not, beasts such as the Multi Colored Devil Tiger can sustain themselves over a month of starvation and still live. Which reminds me, this guy has been hungry for quite some time. Its fighting strength is definitely weaker now."

"Yes, but be careful and keep some distance between you and it." Yang Jingli said.

Yang Jinglian nodded. Not summoning his own soul pet, he simply walked straight into the mountain crevice.

“Wind Fairy!”

Yang Jinglian only summoned his soul pet when he neared the crevice, clearly having calculated the distance already.

Wind Assault!!

The Wind Fairy immediately started chanting a fairy charm, and it released Wind Magic. Instantaneously, a gust of turbulent wind flew into the crevice and rustled the shrubs nearby.

“Houhou!!”

The Multi Colored Devil Tiger felt the commotion and instantly leaped out, actually just using its body to block the incoming Wind Assault, coming out unscathed and not even mildly obstructed by the strong assault of the wind. It instantly appeared in front of the crevice!!

Shattering Claw!!!

The Tiger released its own ability. Its powerful claws ferociously slammed into the mountain walls, causing it to waver and explode, leaving a meter deep hole!

As rubble flew everywhere, Yang Jinglian and his Wind Fairy were both startled. They completely did not expect the hungry Multi Colored Devil Tiger to still have such terrifying power. If they were a few steps closer, that Shattering Claw would definitely

have shattered their bodies along with the wall!

Looking down from above and seeing this claw of the Multi Colored Devil Tiger, Chu Mu also had lingering trepidation. If the Tiger had used this technique to attack him, he would undoubtedly be dead.

The Tiger's frightening destructive capabilities caused Yang Jinglian to be drenched in cold sweat, and he quickly commanded his Wind Fairy to back off.

"What's going on?!" Yang Jingli stood near the entrance and shouted inwards to Yang Jinglian.

The crevice could only hold one person. Both people entering would be a very unwise idea, so Yang Jingli didn't walk in.

"Nothing, this Devil Tiger seems to have gotten food and recovered its strength." Yang Jinglian said.

"I told you to be careful and not walk in. We should just wait outside and wait until Shang Shi came. Let him slowly harass this Devil Tiger." Yang Jingli said.

After Yang Jinglian recovered from his shock, he simply shook his head and smiled, "I haven't fought a Fifth Phase soul pet before yet, let me first tease him a bit."

After saying that, Yang Jinglian immediately commanded his

Wind Fairy to cast Wind Type techniques towards the Devil Tiger within the crevice.

The Multi Colored Devil Tiger was a pure Beast Type creature, void of ranged techniques like Mo Xie's Shadow Claw. Under these circumstances he couldn't hit Yang Jinglian, and facing the Wind Fairy's attacks, he also had no alternative, and was only able to let out angry roars.

"Third Phase Seventh Stage Wind Fairy, doesn't seem to be particularly strong." Chu Mu observed the constantly attacking Wind Fairy and the corners of his mouth lifted.

Wind Fairy: Elemental Kingdom - Wind Type - Fairy Subspecies - Middle Class Servant Rank

Before, on the Cyan Nightmare Main Island, there was a Second Phase Wind Fairy. The abilities it could cast were only low ranking ones like Whirlwind or Wind Assault, and it lacked a strong offense.

Yet, the Third Phase Seventh Stage Wind Fairy in front of Chu Mu was definitely stronger than that Second Phase Wind Fairy, as it was already able to cast Hurricane and Dance of the Air Blades.

But, even though these abilities were stronger and more destructive, they still couldn't leave any mark on the Devil Tiger.

The Tiger's skin defense was probably level seven and above.

Though it didn’t have any resistance towards Wind Type, it still wasn’t a defense that the Wind Fairy could break through. Yang Jinglian’s commands for the Wind Fairy was purely a waste of time and a waste of the Wind Fairy’s magic.

“Haha, come kill me!! You dumb Devil Tiger!!” Yang Jinglian seemed to enjoy this teasing of the soul pet he normally didn’t dare approach, constantly laughing.

“Houhouhou!!” The Multi Colored Devil Tiger’s anger towards Yang Jinglian had also reached its peak.

The Wind Fairy’s attacks couldn’t harm the Tiger, but any strong soul pet wouldn’t enjoy a fly constantly buzzing nearby that couldn't be driven away.

Chu Mu watched Yang Jinglian and smiled, and started to talk telepathically with his Ice Air Fairy.

Receiving Chu Mu’s command, the Ice Air Fairy slowly put his hands on the ground. The frost on its body was like water, being slowly injected into the rocky wall below.

The icy air slowly crept downwards and started freezing near the middle of the crevice, creating an ice wall without anyone noticing.

“Jinglian! Be careful, look behind you!!!”

Yang Jingli suddenly discovered the ice wall, and immediately shouted a warning.

The thick ice wall completely blocked off the narrow crevice. Yang Jinglian still hadn't noticed that he had already been separated, as he continued to laugh as he teased the Devil Tiger. Little did he know, a deadly wall of ice had already locked him into the death gates of Chu Mu's revenge!

Chapter 94: Old Injury, Defecting Soul Pet

“Ning, Ice Sword!”

The Ice Air Fairy’s ability to control ice type abilities far surpassed that of other soul pets. Even if there was a thirty meter gap, the condensed Ice Sword still managed to strike at Yang Jinglian’s head!

Under the assault of such a ruthless attack, Yang Jinglian finally became aware of the danger. Some sort of natural instinct caused him to tumble to the side as he very frightenedly dodged the fatal Ice Sword attack.

“Ning, keep going!”

A frosty, cold Ice Sword appeared once more above Yang Jinglian’s head. This time, there were three consecutive Ice Swords that descended one after the other.

Yang Jinglian perspired cold sweat as he continued to roll forwards. Simultaneously, he ordered his Wind Fairy to use Wind Bind.

The three Ice Swords were immediately shattered under the effects of Wind Bind. However, the instant the Ice Swords were shattered, a new ice type technique appeared once more.

Ice Blade Roar!

Chaotic Ice Blades rapidly appeared in the crevice that Yang Jinglian was in. They wantonly revolved around and produced a terrifying roar like a wild beast!

In such a narrow space, Yang Jinglian couldn't dodge, and was even unable to summon his other soul pet. He could only frightenedly retreat!

Wind type techniques didn't have very strong defensive capabilities. Under Ice Blade Roar, wind type techniques could only change the direction of the attack. Unfortunately though, this was a narrow space, and not only was changing the direction hard, but completely evading the Ice Blade Roar was nearly impossible.

Yang Jinglian made the Wind Fairy stand in front of him to block. He quickly chanted an incantation and his skin was wrapped by a thick layer of stone!

Final stage Stone Skin. Its defensive capabilities could rival a soul pet's third stage skin.

When Chu Mu saw that Yang Jinglian had already completed his defense, a smile surprisingly appeared on his face and he began to quietly chant an incantation.

"Wind Dragon Bind!"

Chu Mu quickly finished the incantation, but the Wind Dragon

Bind wasn't used on him. Instead, he used it on Yang Jinglian's body.

A rotating stream of air appeared under Yang Jinglian's feet before rapidly ascending up. Immediately, Yang Jinglian's body was engulfed by it.

Wind Dragon Bind was much stronger than Wind Bind. This strong gust of Dragon Wind immediately affected the mountain walls when coiling up.

A strong wind whirled around in the narrow space, and the flow of air became eminently chaotic. Even though Yang Jinglian's body was covered by a thick layer of rock, his body was still swaying in the chaotic streams of air. Once again he retreated...

"Despicable, who is this trash?!!"

Yang Jinglian instantly located Chu Mu, who was producing the Wing Dragon Bind. His gaze was indignant as he stared at Chu Mu, who stood hidden above the mountain valley.

Their gazes met and a cold intent seeped into his body. Yang Jinglian was stunned and had a familiar feeling; however, this ice cold gaze was also extremely unfamiliar.

"Who are you!!" Yang Jinglian angrily said.

"You're already dead. There's no need to know." Chu Mu

indifferently replied.

Chu Mu's words seemed to immediately wake up Yang Jinglian and he abruptly looked down!

The instant he looked down, Yang Jinglian suddenly discovered that the Wind Dragon Bind had already moved him to a place the Multi Colored Devil Tiger could reach!!

Yang Jinglian's face instantly turned pale. A cold feeling engulfed his entire body, and he couldn't help but shiver from head to toe!!

Shattering Claw!!

Like a bolt of lightning, the Multi Colored Devil Tiger appeared, and its savage claws directly struck through the obstructing stone and also struck through the layer of stone covering Yang Jinglian's body-right through his heart!!

The third stage defensive skin was like tissue to the Multi Colored Devil Tiger. It couldn't even withstand one strike!

"Hou!!"

The Multi Colored Devil Tiger violently retracted its claws, and let out an angry roar towards Yang Jinglian. Lying underneath the roar, the hole at the bottom of Yang Jinglian's stomach suddenly expanded. Around his stomach, a plethora of cracks appeared before rapidly expanding!

“Beng!!!”

Fresh blood exploded forth, and flesh splattered everywhere. Yang Jinglian’s body had exploded under the angry roar. Immediately, a thick stench of blood pervaded the surrounding air!!

The Multi Colored Devil Tiger indifferently stepped on the blood spilling from just inside the crevice. It slowly turned around and turned its head so that it was facing Chu Mu who was hiding high above; it let out a roar!!

“I’ve already said that if you stay here, you will eventually be besieged by a group of humans.” Chu Mu said to the Multi Colored Devil Tiger.

Yang Jingli stood at the entrance of the mountain rampart crevice and through the Ice Wall, he could see his brother’s miserable dead body. His face had already warped to the extreme!

“Who is it? Get out here!!” Yang Jinglian was seething in anger, and had already summoned his two soul pets.

“A malicious ghost killed by your Yang Family.” Chu Mu’s voice eventually rang out from within the crevice and suddenly, the Ice Wall inside the crevice exploded.

Chu Mu slowly walked out from the crevice and stared at Yang

Jingli standing guard on the outside.

Yang Jingli also looked at Chu Mu. As Chu Mu was walking out, he had already planned on ordering his soul pets to attack, but when he clearly saw Chu Mu's face, his expression became completely dumbstruck!

The only reason why Chu Mu had such an impression towards this fellow was because of what happened between the two during the last festival.

However, Yang Jingli was different. He had already known Chu Mu for a while. Amongst Wangluo City's clans, they had always been competing with each other. The animosity between the clans had thus already risen to an extremely high level, and Chu Mu had the desire to kill him for a while.

"It's you! Aren't you already..." Yang Jingli stared at Chu Mu who was slowly growing closer. The terrified expression on his face grew even more extreme!

To Yang Jingli, Chu Mu was only a familiar figure. Perhaps it could be said that amongst the population of Wangluo City, everyone knew that the Chu Family had a bitter joke. The leading figure in this joke was Chu Mu!

"You didn't expect to meet me, this dead person, here did you? When Yang Zhide saw me, his expression was the same as yours." A cold smile appeared on Chu Mu's face.

“Yang Jingli’s face changed as he said: “You were the one who killed him!”

“Before long the other members of your Yang Family will encounter me. When I mention Yang Jingli, they will also have your surprise and anger and say “You were the one who killed him.” said Chu Mu.

“Ridiculous. You don’t have the basis! Someone who almost didn’t become a soul pet trainer. An idiot who rekt two of his remembrances and one of his souls. Such a trash dares to speak of killing me?” said Yang Jingli.

In the entire Wangluo city, everyone knew that when the eldest son’s eldest son Chu Mu became a fourth remembrance Soul Disciple, he had made a soul pact with a high species rank soul pet. Not only did he destroy the first and second soul pacts that he made at the Soul Disciple Level, but the last soul pet also defected!

(TL: Eldest son’s eldest son may be a bit confusing, but in China it has ridiculous significance, so calling him something like the eldest grandson serves the phrase no justice. Essentially, the eldest son’s eldest son is the “golden boy” and is the favorite grandson)

When a soul pet defected, this soul pet would always stay in a summoned state. This meant that one of the soul pet trainer’s souls would always be occupied by this soul pet.

Thus, Chu Mu’s first soul was continuously occupied by this maverick soul pet. This was also the reason why he could only summon one soul pet at the Soul Soldier level.

Anyone with common sense would know that, at the early levels, he or she should absolutely not sign a soul pact with an overly strong soul pet. This applied even more to a large clan, whereby they should have been even more cautious towards this affair. However, this event still ended up happening in the Chu Family of the Four Great Families.

Therefore, Chu Mu's affair became an unexpected mishap in Wangluo City. It also became an absurd joke.

Chapter 95: The Escaped Multi Colored Devil Tiger

“Isn’t that the Chu Clan kid? How did he appear here?” above the valley, a middle aged man’s voice suddenly sounded out.

Chu Mu raised his head and saw a middle aged man higher up, who was riding a Rare Blood Beast.

The Rare Blood Beast was nearly four meters tall. It was covered in a hide of crimson hair that looked as if it were drenched in blood, and when it released its aura, a pungent, coppery scent pervaded the area.

“Hou!!”

The Rare Blood Beast let out a furious roar, and actually jumped down from ten meters above. Its four hooves firmly planted into the valley below, instantly causing a wave of chaotic turbulence to whirl forward recklessly, hitting Chu Mu.

Seeing Shang Shi appear, Yang Jingli immediately sneered. Shang Shi was a soul pet trainer, and he had a Fifth Phase Seventh Stage Rare Blood Beast. With his help, even if Chu Mu was even better than they expected, he was dead for sure.

“Where’s your little brother?” Shang Shi glanced at Yang Jingli and asked.

“He caused my brother to die!” Yang Jingli pointed at Chu Mu and said.

Shang Shi quickly furrowed his brow and looked at Chu Mu, but said very coldly, “Heh, if youd hid like a coward, maybe we would’ve actually thought you were dead already!”

Chu Mu recognized Shang Shi. Although Shang Shi didn’t have the surname of Yang, he was the loyal and zealous dog of the Yang Clan. Relying on his Spirit Teacher power, he was a hateable person in Gang Luo city, yet he couldn’t easily be punished for it.

“Since that person didn’t help us get rid of you, let me personally end your lowly life!” Shang Shi’s glare became frigid as he jumped off the massive Rare Blood Beast.

The Rare Blood Beast’s gaze quickly fell on Chu Mu. Bellowing angrily towards Chu Mu, it abruptly stretched out its sturdy frame and lept straight towards Chu Mu!

The bellowing of a Fifth Phase Seventh Stage Rare Blood Beast was terrifying. Facing such a fearful beast, any normal person would have frozen from fear, unable to even chant an incantation.

But Chu Mu didn’t back off. Under the assault of such a strong soul pet, he could still unbelievably remain calm. This calm attitude may have come from the experience of facing death in the past.

Watching the Rare Blood Beast pounce, Chu Mu still stood motionless. Just as it was about to eat Chu Mu whole, a bizarre and ominous glint suddenly bursted out from Chu Mu's body!

"Hou!!"

The fabric of space in front of Chu Mu was suddenly torn apart, as a roar even more intimidating than the Rare Blood Beast tore through the air. Following it was an even scarier smell of blood that spread throughout the entire valley!!!

"Houhou!!!"

Sounds of roaring kept on echoing throughout the valley, causing even some rocks to loosen and fall!

The running of the Rare Blood Beast stopped abruptly. This intimidating angry roar made it feel as if its heart stopped and caused it to stand stock still, afraid to move even a little bit.

As the space in front of Chu Mu was torn open, the bizarre and ominous glint connected with his ring. As the light faded from the ring, a formidable and imposing beast appeared suddenly in front of Chu Mu!

Multi Colored Devil Tiger!!!

The appearance of the Fifth Phase Fourth Stage Devil Tiger instantly subdued Yang Jingli and Shang Shi, as well as the Fifth

Phase Seventh Stage Rare Blood Beast.

High Class Commander Rank and Middle Class Warrior Rank. There was both a rank and class difference between the two. Even a Fourth Phase Multi Colored Devil Tiger could easily kill a Fifth Phase Seventh Stage Rare Blood Beast, let alone the fact that the Devil Tiger at hand was already Fifth Phase Fourth Stage!!

Seeing the Multi Colored Devil Tiger appear, Shang Shi and Yang Jing's expressions immediately changed!

Normally, High Class Commander Rank soul pets like this Multi Colored Devil Tiger wasn't something they could anger once it passed the Fifth Phase. If not for finding it coincidentally stuck in a cave, they would never dare to brashly act against the Tiger.

Yet, now the tiger had escaped. With its scary aura sweeping through the entire valley, how could they still keep their calm?!

"Hou!!"

The Multi Colored Devil Tiger's front paws lifted high into the air and came crashing down at the ground. Instantly a large wave of energy exploded. The Rare Blood Beast that was completely shocked by the Tiger didn't have time to react at all before it was sent flying by the power of this stomp.

The nearly four meter long Rare Blood Beast flew away in a single hit, causing Shang Shi's expression to become even worse. He

immediately started to cast an incantation to summon other soul pets.

Shang Shi's summoning speed was very quick. As the Fifth Phase Seventh Stage Rare Blood Beast flew outwards, two soul pets had already appeared.

Fifth Phase Seventh Stage - Bloodthirsty Beast!! Nearly five meters long, it was covered in blood colored fur and had an aura comparable to the Fifth Phase Seventh Stage Rare Blood Beast!

Fourth Phase Third Stage - Dire Wolf!! Three feet long and covered in blue fur, its mouth full of fangs were totally exposed!

The Dire Wolf was more than double the strength of the Dire Wolf that Cao Yi summoned in the past, but even such a soul pet showed signs of fear when facing the Multi Colored Devil Tiger!

The Tiger stood in front of Chu Mu, arrogantly facing Shang Shi's three soul pets, showing no signs of fear. In fact, it was showing disdain and recklessness, constantly roaring angrily and causing the entire valley to shake!

When Yang Jingli saw the Tiger appear, he had already been scared to the point of retreating hastily. He knew Shang Shi's power well. The three soul pets he had summoned were already his strongest, yet those three were still no match for the Multi Colored Devil Tiger!

Taking advantage of the Multi Colored Devil Tiger's face off with Shang Shi's soul pets, Yang Jingli very decisively backed off and decided to run away.

Chu Mu's gaze stayed on Yang Jingli. Seeing him trying to run away, he immediately went to chase him.

Shang Shi only had three soul pets that were passable, yet they weren't an issue to the Multi Colored Devil Tiger. Chu Mu, who was cooperating with the Tiger, believed that it could get rid of Shang Shi, so Chu Mu had to get rid of Yang Jingli himself!

"Ning, Ice Wall!"

Chu Mu quickly commanded his Ice Air Fairy!

"Ling!"

The Ice Air Fairy half floated in the air. Around its body, a layer of frost quickly formed. With a point of its icy fingers, two ice walls grew from the ground and appeared in front of Yang Jingli.

Yang Jingli's motions stopped abruptly. He turned around angrily to look at Chu Mu, and directly ordered his Rare Blood Beast, "Kill him!"

Yang Jingli's Rare Blood Beast was already at the Third Phase Fourth Phase, and though its body size was far from Shang Shi's Rare Blood Beast, it still had a terrifying blood and killing scent.

When it pounced towards Chu Mu, its putrid blood stench overwhelmed Chu Mu, making him feel dizziness.

Chapter 96: Swallowing Star Wolf

Chu Mu immediately retreated a bit, chanted the incantation for Wind Ride, and used it on himself.

The Ice Air Fairy quickly appeared in front of Chu Mu. The claws of Yang Jingli's Rare Blood Beast heavily smashed into the Ice Air Fairy's body.

The Ice Air Fairy was forced back a few steps by the force of impact, but only a very shallow bruise was left on its body. It wasn't able to deal any actual wounds to the Ice Air Fairy.

Seeing that the Ice Air Fairy didn't suffer any damage, Yang Jingli's expression became rather strange.

Yang Jingli felt very surprised that Chu Mu had a High Class Warrior Rank Ice Air Fairy. However, it was even stranger that the second phase ninth phase Ice Air Fairy could resist the attack of his third phase fourth stage Rare Blood Beast.

"Full third stage defensive skin!" Yang Jingli's vision wasn't bad and he instantly determined the defensive degree of the Ice Air Fairy's Ice Armor and Ice Skin. The expression on his face turned even more strange.

As a High Class Warrior Rank soul pet, the Ice Air Fairy at the second phase ninth stage had a full third stage defense. That could only signify that the Ice Air Fairy's ability to control ice was much better than that of normal Ice Air Fairies'.

Yang Jingli remembered that when Chu Mu was supposedly “killed”, he didn’t have any soul pets. Now, he appeared on Prison Island with an Ice Air Fairy that had an outstanding ice type talent. In his heart, there was an ineffable feeling of jealousy, as he felt that, Chu Mu, such a horrible soul pet trainer, wasn’t suitable for this sort of soul pet.

“Even if your Ice Air Fairy’s defensive strength is strong, you can only summon one soul pet. How can you fight me?!” Yang Jingli inherently held animosity towards Chu Mu. He intentionally scanned his gaze over to Shang Shi and, after seeing that Shang Shi could still persevere, he decided to use this opportunity to kill Chu Mu. This would thus prevent future misfortunes!

“Si!!”

Suddenly, from high above, an extremely sharp shout rang out!

In the next instant, a soul pet with knife blade wings suddenly swooped down. It performed a terrifying Wind Slash directly targeted towards Chu Mu’s head!!

Yet, how could Chu Mu neglect this soul pet of Yang Jingli. He instantly started an incantation.

Wind Dragon Bind!

A rotating stream of air promptly appeared under Chu Mu’s feet

before quickly ascending into the air and expanding. It formed a beautiful dragon wind that protected Chu Mu inside!

The Wind Slash descended and when the descending soul pet approached Chu Mu, it felt the power of his Wind Dragon Bind and was tossed away.

“Blade Wing Demon, fourth phase third stage…”

Chu Mu stared at the soul pet that had been tossed away and immediately identified it.

Blade Wing Demon: Beast Kingdom - Wing Type (Bug Type) - Wing Blade Demon Species - High Class Servant Rank

The Blade Wind Demon had two wings like knife blades. Its body was similar to that of a malevolent scorpion; moreover, it had a chain-like scorpion tail!

A fourth phase third stage High Class Servant Rank soul pet was not weak. Even after it had been flung aside by Chu Mu’s Wind Dragon Bind, it quickly stabilized itself in the air. After adjusting its stance, it instantly flew at Chu Mu.

At the same time, the rare blood beast on the ground launched an attack towards the Ice Air Fairy. This time, the Rare Blood Beast’s claws directly flew at the Ice Air Fairy.

“Ling”

The Ice Air Fairy began chanting in fairy language. Suddenly, an incorporeal cold stream of air revolved around its body as it chanted. It quickly formed multiple blades of Ice Blade Roar.

The Ice Air Fairy attacked the Blade Wing Demon and when the Ice Blade Roar shot into the air, the Blade Wing Demon instantly produced a flustered sharp shout. It then changed its direction of flight.

“Shua!!”

The Blood Rending Claws shockingly streaked across the Ice Air Fairy’s body, causing it to retreat. On its body a relatively evident wound immediately surfaced.

“Ling!!!”

The wounded Ice Air Fairy seemed to be angry. It kneaded its two hands and suddenly two Ice Swords appeared. Instantly it rushed toward the Rare Blood Beast!

The Rare Blood Beast’s speed wasn’t slow and it promptly jumped to the side, dodging. Simultaneously, it unleashed Blood Devour towards the Ice Air Fairy’s back!

Blood Devour spurted onto the Ice Fairy’s body and a blood colored corrosion wound instantly appeared on the Ice Armor on its body. A painful cry immediately rang forth from the Ice Air

Fairy.

"Rapid Freeze!"

Chu Mu knew that the Ice Air Fairy's battle experience was insufficient, and thereupon used a soul technique to support the Ice Air Fairy.

The streams of ice quickly extended and rapidly condensed around the Rare Blood Beast's two legs, freezing its forelegs. Suffering from Rapid Freeze's effect, the Rare Blood Beast's speed instantly slowed!

However, the moment Chu Mu performed Rapid Freeze, Yang Jingli's soul technique - Blood Poison abruptly appeared in front of Chu Mu and splattered over his arm.

The Blood Poison's effect quickly spread across Chu Mu's skin and completely corroded it before slowing down its dispersion.

Faced with the corrosion from the soul technique Blood Poison, Chu Mu was indifferent. He proceeded to instruct the Ice Air Fairy to take advantage of the Rare Blood Beast's frozen forelegs to use a high rank technique!

Frozen Rain!

The Ice Air Fairy didn't disappoint Chu Mu, and in a short period of time, finished the incantation for the high rank technique

Frozen Rain!

Just as the Wind Blade Demon in the air broke free from Ice Blade Roar and had flown to the top of Chu Mu's head, a gust of cold air quickly condensed. An intangible, frosty aura pervaded the air and condensed into piece after piece of sharp ice shards!

"Ling!!"

The Ice Air Fairy let out a sharp shout, and the ice shards within the frosty aura that had pervaded the air descended in an extremely concentrated area!

Although it was only an early stage Frozen Rain, it was able to already hit 20 meters of area (a 20 meter hitbox). The Blade Wing Demon's intention to attack disappeared once more, and it had no choice but to flap its wings and flee to a safer area.

As for the Rare Blood Beast on the ground, with its frozen forelegs, it was incapable of dodging. The Frozen Rain violently smashed downwards and continuously struck the Rare Blood Beast's body.

The flesh on the Rare Blood Beast's body instantly began to lacerate and its body was covered by ice fragments. It continued to let out incessantly painful howls.

Yang Jingli grew aware that his Rare Blood Beast was incapable of resisting the onslaught of Frozen Rain. Immediately, he chanted

an incantation to recall it back into his soul pet space.

After Yang Jingli recalled his Rare Blood Beast, he instantly summoned his other soul pet.

“Do you really believe that an Ice Air Fairy is enough to contend against me?! Even if you were able to summon another soul pet, in my eyes, you are still a deficient piece of trash!” Yang Jingli sneered as his incantation finished!

A dark blue halo quickly appeared in front of Yang Jingli. As the lustre gradually dispersed, a wolf creature with fur completely spotted by stars astonishingly appeared!

Yang Jingli looked at his third phase third stage Swallowing Star Wolf and a satisfactory smile rose on his face: “Hmph, in front of my Swallowing Star Wolf, an Ice Air Fairy is nothing but a piece of garbage!”

Chapter 97: Wide Disparity

“Blade Wing Demon, Blade Wave!

Yang Jingli loudly shouted and directly ordered his Blade Wing Demon to attack the Ice Air Fairy.

High above, the Blade Wing Demon sharply cried and a few rays of cold light instantly began twinkling in the sky. The eminently sharp wing blades descended from the sky, ruthlessly targeting the Ice Air Fairy’s location. Immediately, several cavities on the ground were created by the penetration.

“Ding ding ding”

The Blade Wave struck the Ice Air Fairy’s body, causing a channeling sound. A plethora of wounds instantly appeared on its body.

Still, the Wind Blade Demon’s attack was unable to break apart the Ice Air Fairy’s defense. However, Yang Jingli very clearly didn’t make the Wind Blade Demon actually attack; instead, it was to render the Ice Air Fairy, under the barrage of Blade Wave, unable to move or dodge.

“Hmph, Chu Mu, look on hopelessly at the death of you soul pet!” A cold glint flashed through Yang Jingli’s eyes.

Soul Remembrance was released, and the Swallowing Star Wolf,

which was full of malevolent aura, rose steeply from the ground. It abruptly pounced forth and a strange twinkling appeared on the star-like dark blue spots on its body!!

Swallowing Star!!

The ferocious mouth of the Swallowing Star Wolf suddenly opened. A demonic air was stunningly released and like the purgation of howling wind and torrential rain, it caused people to tremble with fear.

Its large mouth was filled with fierce teeth that seemed to instantly swallow everything. Everything visible was transformed into an abyss of darkness as if everything had been submerged into a creature's massive throat!

Chu Mu had never seen this technique before. He could only make the Ice Air Fairy adopt a defensive stance while he began to chant an incantation, putting Ice Armor onto his body!

"Ao Wu!!"

The sound of a wolf's howl masked the Ice Air Fairy's painful groan. Like a swallowing star, the Swallowing Star Wolf had already flashed past the Ice Air Fairy when a demonic afterimage suddenly disappeared. However, in the Swallowing Star Wolf's mouth was astonishingly an icy snow arm!

"Ling"

The Ice Air Fairy immediately let out a painful sound, and had already curled up on the ground. It incessantly rolled about. Clearly, losing its arm was a pain that the Ice Air Fairy found hard to deal with.

“Haha, what a surprise, it’s acting like a spoiled child throwing a fit. Chu Mu, Chu Mu, your soul pets are all truly of the highest quality. Haha, what a joke!” Yang Jingli instantly began to heartily laugh.

Elemental Kingdom soul pets didn’t have blood or meridians. Normally when they were wounded, the pain that they endured was much less than that of normal soul pets. Seeing that Chu Mu’s Ice Air Fairy was rolling about on the ground after receiving an injury, Yang JIngli naturally felt that it was preposterously funny.

Chu Mu’s expression didn’t change as he already had chanted the recall incantation. The Ice Air Fairy was used to being pampered and spoiled. Although its innate talent was exceptional, it rarely ever battled. Chu Mu didn’t find it strange that such a scenario occurred. In the future when it fought, it wouldn’t be so squeamish.

“Let me see what other trash soul pets you have.” Yang Jingli’s entire face was riddled with mockery. However, he didn’t directly order his Blade Wing Demon to attack Chu Mu.

In reality, Chu Mu had already used Chong Mei to use Ice Armor, so even if the Blade Wing Demon attacked, it wouldn’t be able to

stop Chu Mu's summon.

"Wu!!!"

The cry of a fox rang out the moment Chu Mu finished his incantation. This shout, however, was Mo Xie consoling the injured Ice Air Fairy.

"Ling" The Ice Air Fairy let out a bitter sound.

"Don't worry Ning, he and his soul pets will all die!" said Chu Mu.

From within the blue radiance appeared a sliver of silver coloring. The soul pact halo between Chu Mu and Mo Xie had undergone a transformation ever since Mo Xie's species evolution. This caused the time that Chu Mu needed to summon Mo Xie to be reduced; a unique and tacit understanding had been established between the two of them.

"A Fox.... Moon... Moonlight Fox.... Hahahaha, hahaha, Chu Mu, Chu Mu, you truly are worthy of being the number one joke of our Wangluo City. In this world, there probably isn't anybody with a more incurable stupidity than you." Yang Jingli abruptly erupted into big laughter.

Any soul pet trainer with a third phase Swallowing Star Wolf would find it hard not to look with contempt if they were facing even a sixth phase Moonlight Fox.

Negligence was often the most important cause of death for a soul pet trainer when fighting in the wild. The number of soul pets in this world were innumerable. They were fantastic oddities of every description, and there were many soul pets with the most docile and cute appearance, but once approached, would become the nightmare of countless powerful soul pets.

It was clear that Yang Jingli's experience was insufficient, and he was deceived by Mo Xie's appearance!

"Eat that small thing in one bite." Facing such an opponent, Yang Jingli didn't feel like ordering his Swallowing Star Wolf to use a powerful technique.

Seeing Yang Jingli's contempt, a cold smile appeared on Chu Mu's face: "I'll show you whose soul pet is trash!!"

"Mo Xie, Demonic Flame Claw!"

"Wu!!!"

The unmoving and silent Mo Xie lifted her head and let out a howl.

Just as the Swallowing Star Wolf came within five meters, the silver fur on Mo Xie's body automatically began to fly in the windless air. Instantly, an enormous demonic aura was released!!

Her fluffy tail quickly split apart, and six steel, chain-like glorified wolf tails insolently flew about!!

Six balls of Demon Fire Devil Flame floated towards Mo Xie's four limbs, turning them into mighty flaming paws!!

Yang Jingli was overwhelmed by this scene. He stared on in eminent shock at the Six Tailed Demon Fox that had suddenly appeared. He wanted to stop his Swallowing Star Wolf's attack, but found that the Six Tail Demonic Fox with an imposing demonic aura had already launched itself at the Swallowing Star Wolf!

"Adhering Flame!"

When Yang Jingli was still laughing in contempt, Chu Mu had already finished mouthing the incantation. Just as Mo Xie pounced, the flame ability quickly adhered to Mo Xie's body!

Mo Xie's Evil Flame Claws were able to break apart any defense under the fourth stage. The use of Adhering Flame allowed the attack to exhibit its pinnacle power!

"Shua!!!"

For a moment he was stunned beyond belief. A gorgeous Demon Fire Evil Flamed sharp blade swept across the Swallowing Star Wolf's head. The equivalently careless Swallowing Star Wolf wasn't able to mount any reaction, and a scarlet bloody line instantly appeared on its forehead!

“Hu!!!”

The Demon Fire Evil Flame rapidly proliferated when the Evil Flame abruptly spilled into the bloody line. The Evil Flame directly entered the Swallowing Star Wolf’s brain and quickly burned everything in its brain to ashes!

There wasn’t even enough time to let out a miserable scream. The third phase Swallowing Star Wolf’s head combusted and, a moment later, the headless corpse fell at Mo Xie’s feet!

“How… How is this possible?!!!” Yang Jingli’s two eyes instantly went completely bloodshot. The family clan had spent 30,000 gold coins to buy him a Swallowing Star Wolf, which had been killed in one strike by a Six Tailed Demon Fox!

They were both of the third phase and High Class Warrior Rank. Despite underestimating the enemy, the disparity in their strengths was still so much!!

Chapter 98: Illusion, Fatal Attack

“Mo Xie, be careful of the Wind Blade Demon!” Chu Mu immediately warned Mo Xie.

Mo Xie’s gaze promptly shifted to the Wind Blade Demon in the air. A Demon Fire Evil Flame radiance instantly flickered in her eyes!!!

Flame Awn!!!

Two pillars of fire rapidly interweaved and burned together to create a large fire. The flame was like a lotus flower, and exploded where the Blade Wing Demon’s wings were!

The Blade Wing Demon’s reaction speed wasn’t slow either. It immediately dodged to one side, and avoided the Flame Awn attack. Its sharp beak let out an indignant screech, and it abruptly flapped its wings!

The Blade Wing Demon’s wings had already reached the third stage. The feathers on them were comparable to that of the sharp feathers of beast type soul pets. Following the movement of the Blade Wing Demon’s wing, the blade-like feathers rolled together amidst a chaotic flow of air and speedily launched towards Mo Xie!

Mo Xie stood in her original position and didn’t move. Yet, her eyes continued to stare at the Blade Wing Demon, maintaining a twenty meter altitude above.

Facing the Blade Wing Demon's Revolving Blades, Mo Xie's six tails suddenly unfolded and formed a fan that abruptly swept forth!

"Pai!!"

The feather blades could not break past Mo Xie's Six Tail Lock defense. All the feather blades were knocked to the ground.

"Ignore the Blade Wing Demon and directly attack the master." Mo Xie swept his gaze over the Blade Wing Demon hiding in the air. Nevertheless, he immediately gave Mo Xie an order.

Although Yang Jingli was stunned, he wasn't stupid. Seeing that the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox was charging towards him, he instantly ordered his Blade Wing Demon to attack Chu Mu.

After transmitting the order, Yang Jingli promptly chanted an incantation to equip Stone Skin to his body.

Chu Mu seemed to have already predicted that Yang Jingli would use this method to force him to bring Mo Xie back. A smile emerged on his face and he silently chanted an incantation.

As he chanted the incantation, a change occurred in Chu Mu's pupils. A smear of hazy silver light appeared in his two eyes!!

Chong Mei-Evil Stare!

Chu Mu lifted his head and his two evil eyes locked onto the Blade Wing Demon!

The Blade Wing Demon was a High Class Servant Rank creature. On the other hand, Evil Stare was a High Class Warrior Rank, Mo Xie's, technique. Moreover, it was used by a six remembrance Spirit Soldier!

After suffering from Chu Mu's Evil Stare, the Blade Wing Demon instantly let out an extremely terrified shout. It aimlessly flapped its wings, almost like it had seen some kind of exceptionally terrifying creature. Unexpectedly, it planned on fleeing.

On the other side, Mo Xie used Evil Stare seemingly at the same time Chu Mu did. The demonic silver lights penetrated into Yang Jingli's eyes. Stunned, Yang Jingli felt that the Six Tailed Demon Fox in front of him had suddenly turned incomparably violent, and it seemed like she could tear him into pieces at any time.

Evil Stare was a fundamental technique of Six Tailed Demon Foxes. This sort of technique could cause the opponent's fear to continuously enlarge!

Yang Jingli was also a Spirit Soldier. This sort of mental technique wouldn't affect him for too long. However, in this kind of moment, slightly losing your mind for even a second was fatal!

Seeing that the Evil Flame Six Tailed demon Fox had already appeared in front of him, Yang Jingli's fear had become a reality!

"Whose soul pet is really trash?" sneered Chu Mu as he stared at Yang Jingli.

Yang Jingli was fixated on the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox's eyes, yet he almost felt as if he was facing Chu Mu, whose killing intent was covering his eyes.

The imminence of death caused Yang Jingli to forcefully chant an incantation. He had no choice but to recall his Blade Wing Demon and summon his fourth stage Rare Blood Beast!

"Changing soul pets is of no avail!"

"Mo Xie, Illusion!"

A ruthless desire had already surfaced on Chu Mu's face. It was a vengeful, euphoric feeling mixed in with a bit of cruelty.

A peculiar Demon Fire Evil Flame instantly appeared on the charging mo Xie. When the Demon Fire Evil Flame ascended into the air, Mo Xie suddenly split into two!!

Two Six Tailed Demon Foxes. The four paws of both images were treading on fire. Twelve eminently ostentatious and wild tails!!

The Rare Blood Beast's eye expression was vacant as it faced Mo Xie's technique. It simply had no idea which one was the real Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox!

"Idiot, it's the one on the left!" Yang Jingli flusteredly retreated and angrily shouted at his fourth phase Rare Blood Beast!

The Rare Blood Beast had already reached the fourth phase second stage. However, the Rare Blood Beast was a High Class Servant Rank creature and unless it reached the fifth phase, it could not contend with a Six Tailed Demon Fox, which could rival a Commander Rank soul pet.

Evil Flame Claw!!!

Two Six Tailed Demon Foxes extended their claws at the same time. An ardent Demon Fire Evil Fire burned on their claws while Chu Mu used Adhering Flame's effects on Mo Xie's body, causing her fire damage to reach an even higher level!

"Shua!!!"

Both Mo Xie's illusory and main body swept past the Rare Blood Beast at the same time. Their long claws not only split open the Rare Blood Beast's body, but also spread the flames right in front of Yang Jingli!!

"Hu!!!"

The Demon Fire Evil Flame quickly combusted in the Rare Blood Beast's body. The tips of the Evil Flame splashed onto Yang Jingli's face, where there was no Stone Skin. Instantly, he was burned by the high temperature flame. Suddenly, an extremely miserable shriek reverberated throughout the valley!!

"Ah!!"

The nearby scream caused Shang Shi's hairs to stand on end. Shang Shi's heart palpitated as he glanced at Yang Jingli, and his face instantly turned even more pale.

"Hou!!"

Shang Shi only made a hasty glance and didn't dare to divert too much attention. The Multi Colored Devil Tiger's strength had far surpassed his imagination. Its pure beast type strength had reached a kind of pinnacle. Of his soul pets, not one dared to directly contend against it. In a short period of time, the three main soul pets of Shang Shi had all been defeated by the Multi Colored Devil Tiger. The remaining soul pets could not even withstand a single blow!

Shang Shi naturally knew that he was not the fifth phase Multi Colored Devil Tiger's opponent. He had already attempted to flee from this place, but within the valley, the Multi Colored Devil Tiger could completely take advantage of the rugged mountain terrain to freely leap about. Thus, it exhibited both an absolute speed and strength advantage. Among Shang Shi's soul pets, even if there was a flying soul pet, it would probably only manage to fly 30 meters up before being dragged down by the Multi Colored

Devil Tiger. Then, it would be ripped to pieces!!

“Hou Hou!!”

The Multi Colored Devil Tiger’s jumping ability was exceptionally terrifying. With one leap, it could reach thirty meters high. If its four Herculean limbs were to stamp down, it could create a wave of airflow that could rival a final stage Tornado!!

Shang Shi’s face grew more and more unsightly. He saw that his own soul pets were wounded one after the other, and he couldn’t help but grind his teeth. He raised his head and used Riding Wind technique on himself. He had to betray his soul pets and use their lives to attract the Multi Colored Devil Tiger’s attention!

The Multi Colored Devil Tiger naturally understood that all these soul pets were receiving Shang Shi’s orders. The moment Shang Shi moved in one direction, the Multi Colored Devil Tiger used a ferocious attack and pounced towards him; Shang Shi’s attempt to flee had failed again!

Shang Shi’s complexion grew more and more pale. He gritted his teeth and chanted an incantation, using Hurricane to forcefully suppress the Multi Colored Devil Tiger’s offensive. However, the Multi Colored Devil Tiger’s body strength was considerably terrifying, and it managed to break apart the eminently strong Hurricane. It then pounced towards him!!!

Chapter 99: Soul Armor

“Ah!!”

A wretched scream reverberated throughout the valley once more. The conspicuous fresh blood spilled onto the valley’s green moss, making it particularly striking.

The Multi Colored Devil Tiger seemed to have not recklessly killed like this in a long time. After biting off Shang Shi’s neck, it instantly pounced towards Shang Shi’s other two soul pets-who now had severed soul pacts.

Immediately, fresh blood splattered everywhere, and the howls of beasts incessantly rang out. Without Shang Shi’s instructions, the other two soul pets could not withstand even one strike. They were torn to shreds by the Multi Colored Devil Tiger. The blood stained soul cores were directly swallowed into the Multi Colored Devil Tiger’s throat.

Nearby, Chu Mu looked at the injury riddled Yang Jingli. Looking at his dying gasps, a savage and cruel smile surfaced onto Chu Mu’s face. He then used one foot to ruthlessly step on his cheek.

"You’ll be stepped under my foot for life, I think that's what you said. Now, you've been stepped under my foot. How does it feel?"

“If you have the ability... then.. then kill me. On... on this Prison Island... don’t even think about... don’t even think about

surviving!” There was blood in Yang Jingli’s mouth as he spoke.

“Do you know why I would appear on Prison Island?” Chu Mu stared at Yang Jingli and indifferently spoke.

Indignance riddled in Yang Jingli’s eyes. Anything further would be a disgrace because even he didn’t think he would be defeated by Wangluo City’s biggest joke!

“I came to this island to slaughter everyone. Don’t worry, it’s futile for a single person from your Yang Family to escape!!” Chu Mu’s expression instantly turned cold.

Hearing Chu Mu’s unceasingly cold words, Yang Jingli finally felt Chu Mu’s difference from the past-his mercilessness and desire to kill!!

Mo Xie didn’t need Chu Mu’s explicit order to understand her master’s thoughts.

“Shua!!”

The eminently sharp claws quickly slashed apart Yang Jingli’s neck. Instantly, blood poured out, and the humiliation and anger filling Yang Jingli’s eyes died with him!

Chu Mu had never forsaken the value of a corpse. He swiftly searched through Yang Jingli’s bag. However, there weren’t any valuable items on Yang Jingli. Clearly, because of this fellows

young age, the Yang Family didn't give him any good items.

"Hou"

Some unknown time ago, the Multi Colored Devil Tiger stained with blood had walked over in front of Chu Mu. Its two, dark colored eyes gazed at Chu Mu, making his heart palpitate.

The Multi Colored Devil Tiger swung its head and spat out a finger.

The finger the Multi Colored Devil Tiger spat out was naturally Shang Shi's. What made Chu Mu surprised was that there was a spatial ring on the finger.

"His items all belong to me?" Chu Mu looked at the Multi Colored Devil Tiger and asked.

"Hou~" The Multi Colored Devil Tiger nodded its head; nevertheless, it arrogantly turned its head and jumped into the precipitous valley. Its figure quickly disappeared from Chu Mu's field of view.

Seeing the mighty and aloof Multi Colored Devil Tiger leave, Chu Mu felt a twang of regret. In his heart, he thought: If I had a soul pet like the Multi Colored Devil Tiger, becoming that sole survivor shouldn't be too much of a problem.

Shaking his head, Chu Mu also knew that this wasn't very

practical. In reality, as long as Mo Xie had another species mutation, her strength probably wouldn't be much less that the Multi Colored Devil Tiger. However, it was unknown when Mo Xie's next species mutation would occur.

There were differences between spatial rings and soul pet rings. Soul pet rings were spaces that weren't too stable. They could hold soul pets, but if the soul pet's strength was too much, the soul pet could use its strength to shatter the soul pet space.

Equivalently, the soul pet space of soul pet trainers weren't too stable either. If a soul pet's strength far surpassed a soul pet trainer, even with a soul pact, trying to chant the recall incantation to lock the soul pet into the soul pet space was of no avail. They could still use their strength to break the restrictions of the soul pet space.

Soul pet spaces were not actual spaces. They didn't exactly have a set dimension, and they instead were created according to a soul pet's build and soul power.

However, the spaces inside spatial rings were actual spaces. They could be used to store goods. If a spatial ring was large enough, it wouldn't be an issue to store soul pets.

Shang Shi's spatial ring wasn't that large; it could hold approximately one cubic meter. In reality, one cubic meter could hold many items. Moreover, its market price was one thousand gold coins.

“Soul armor! This fellow had such a treasure on him!”

When Chu Mu took out the first item from the spatial ring, he immediately revealed a rapt expression.

Soul armor was equipment for soul pet trainers and soul pets. Using the soul pet trainer’s Soul Remembrance, a special defensive armor could be created. When attacked, just by using a mental transmission, the soul armor would instantly appear on the body and would be used only for defense.

Chu Mu had come from a large family, and he naturally knew a lot. From Shang Shi’s spatial ring, the soul armor he found was a fourth level soul armor. Its defensive capabilities were equivalent to a soul pet’s fourth stage defensive skin.

The shape of a soul armor could be changed using soul remembrance. It didn’t have any weight, and didn’t have any physiological restrictions. Thus, it could be considered a luxury good amongst soul pet trainers. Chu Mu never expected that Shang Shi’s spatial ring would contain such a treasure!

“This item is worth at least a hundred thousand gold coins. Shang Shi himself wasn’t wearing it, so this item’s origins are slightly sketchy.”

It was very easy to use a soul armor. One only had to pour his or her soul remembrance into it, and the energy crystals within the soul armor would establish a mental connection. The soul armor would then automatically integrate into one’s soul. Once danger

arrived, with a single mental transmission, the soul armor would instantly appear. Equipped with this soul armor, Chu Mu now had even better life insurance!

It seemed like these items that the Yang Family had this time when they came to Prison Island ended up increasing Chu Mu's chance at surviving.

Chu Mu didn't hesitate to pour his soul remembrance into the soul armor. Quickly, he fused the soul armor with his soul remembrance.

Summoning the soul armor only required an extremely small amount of soul power. Chu Mu impatiently called out his new battle armor!

A deep, starlike shimmering patterned item revolved around Chu Mu's body. After Chu Mu used his soul remembrance to control it, the specks condensed together. It hadn't even reached a second before an azure translucent light armor covered Chu Mu's body, making him exude a much more imposing aura!

"Wuwuwu" Mo Xie squinted her beautiful eyes and somewhat excitedly howled at the newly equipped Chu Mu.

Chu Mu pinched Mo Xie's fluffy ears and said: "Soul pets also have soul armor. Perhaps other Yang Family people will happen to have beast type soul armor."

Chapter 100: Metamorphosis Of The Ice Air Fairy

Chu Mu looked again into Shang Shi's Spatial Ring for treasure, and what made him elated was that there just happened to be an Ice Type Healing Medicine.

The squeamish Ice Air Fairy was still constantly moaning with pain in Chu Mu's soul pet space, so this Ice Type medicine was found just in time. Chu Mu immediately put the Healing Medicine into his soul pet space and allowed his Ice Air Fairy to take it.

Normally, no matter how deeply wounded the soul pets of the Elemental Kingdom were, as long as they weren't dead, they could definitely recover within a month. The main reason why many soul pet trainers were in love with Elemental Kingdom soul pets was their recovery ability.

The Ice Air Fairy's arm could probably regrow within about ten days. Taking Shang Shi's Ice Type Healing Medicine into account, it would probably only take four days.

Shang Shi's Spatial Ring held a very complete set of Recovery and Healing Medicine, all of them at the fourth level, and ten per type.

This practice of Shang Shi's should be similar to many other experienced soul pet trainers. When they go out, they would prepare all types of Healing and Recovery Medicines to their very best. Though under normal circumstances they wouldn't use it, under crucial circumstances they would need it.

“Third Level Wood Type Soul Crystal?” Chu Mu very quickly discovered another pretty good item.

Chu Mu had a Second Level Beast Type Soul Crystal before, and now he had received a Wood Type Soul Crystal as well. Soul Crystals were always valuable on the market. In the future when Chu Mu got more soul pets, he would definitely spend a sizeable amount of money on soul cores and soul crystals, so Chu Mu had to maintain some wealth at all times.

First Level single type soul crystals were around one hundred gold each. Second level would be one thousand gold, and Third Level would be around five thousand gold.

Shang Shi’s Spatial Ring only had these things. To a Soul Pet Trainer this was slightly too little, so he presumably stored most of his belongings somewhere before he came to Prison Island.

Chu Mu put most of his original things back into his soul pet space. Just as he was about to leave, his Ice Air Fairy immediately reminded him.

“Almost forgot, there’s still a delicacy for you in the abyss.” Chu Mu laughed and said.

Mo Xie’s body started shrinking, her six tails morphing together as she became a cute little fox and lept onto Chu Mu’s shoulder.

When not fighting, Mo Xie liked to maintain her Pitiful Appearance and let Chu Mu carry her around while this sly creature dozed off lazily on Chu Mu's shoulder.

After walking into the abyss again, a gust of frozen air once again assaulted Chu Mu, causing him to feel cold all over his body.

Chu Mu walked into the shrubs and started using his soul remembrance to search for the source of the cold. Very soon, Chu Mu found, in the center of a brush, the roots of the Cold Abyssal Ginseng.

The Cold Abyssal Ginseng was very fragile. Unwilling to damage it even in the slightest, Chu Mu was very careful with the extraction process.

Cold Abyssal Ginseng was a very cold plant. If a normal person were to touch it by hand, they could be injected with cold poison. Those with weak resistances may even instantly die from the cold poison.

Chu Mu and the Ice Air Fairy had signed a soul pact, so his soul gained some resistance to coldness. This Third Level Cold Abyssal Ginseng's coldness was something Chu Mu could still resist.

One hour later, Chu Mu finally dug the Ice Air Fairy's delicacy out. Holding the snow white Cold Abyssal Ginseng, Chu Mu smiled, "Should be enough to let Ning enter Third Phase."

“Ling~Ling” Once Chu Mu got the Ginseng, the Ice Air Fairy immediately let out an excited cry, urging Chu Mu to feed it the Ginseng.

The Cold Abyssal Ginseng could be directly eaten. Chu Mu used his soul remembrance to guide the Ginseng into his soul pet space and let the Ice Air Fairy eat it.

The Ice Air Fairy had long awaited this delicacy, and almost devoured it in a single bite before lying down comfortably in the soul pet space.

“Rest well……”

Chu Mu was just about to let the Ice Air Fairy rest and heal its wounds, but halfway through he stopped, as he noticed that the arm that should’ve taken three or four days to heal was regenerating at a noticeable speed!

“Ling”

Ning let out an excited cry as its body underwent another change. Its snowy and icy skin became even more transparent, containing no impurity!

“It metamorphosed that quickly?!” Chu Mu stared. He didn’t imagine the effects of the Cold Abyssal Ginseng to be this direct!

Though the body shape of the Fairy didn’t change, its skin was

completely altered. Before, its skin was only Third level initial stage, yet after become Third Phase, its Ice Type skin unbelievably leapt straight to Third Level late stage!

A normally talented Ice Air Fairy would only have the Third level initial stage skin when reaching the Third Phase. Ning's exceptional talent allowed it to be two levels ahead of others in his species!

Third Level late stage defense, plus the effects of Ice Armor, its defense was comparable to that of the Fourth Level intermediate stage. Having a Fourth Level defense when it was only at the Third Phase, Ning's defense was a lot more than just a bit abnormal!!!

Chu Mu remembered that Cao Yi had a Dire Wolf. That wolf was probably around Third Phase Fifth Stage. Its attacks could probably break open any defense under the Fourth Level, but it couldn't possibly damage any defense above the Fourth Level. This meant that the Third Phase Ning, even if it were to fight with Cao Yi's Dire Wolf, had a high chance of winning!

With both soul pets already at Third Phase and both High Class Warrior Rank soul pets with amazing talent, the power Chu Mu had was getting closer and closer to that of the tyrannical Cao Yi. It was believable that, with a little more time, Chu Mu could surpass Cao Yi. If he met Cao Yi on the island, Chu Mu would definitely personally defeat Cao Yi.

Walking back to the place where he hid all his scrolls, Chu Mu opened it up and saw that within the past ten days, the prisoner deaths on the island grew again, with over five hundred prisoners'

names going dark.

The prisoners' strengths weren't uniform. Many of them probably couldn't survive on this dangerous island and were directly eliminated.

But, as the amount of deaths increases, the remaining prisoners would get stronger. Chu Mu's enemies would become stronger, so Chu Mu had to constantly increase his strength, to be able to become the one person left alive on the island, to be able to return to Gangluo City, and to use his strength to redeem his disgraces!!

Standing at a high place, Chu Mu looked into the distant unknown area covered by a misty layer of fog.

On this island, there were many strong members and countless strong soul pets. But, in Chu Mu's eyes, they were all simply steps on a staircase for him to become stronger, and they would allow him to walk into a higher and more powerful realm!

Chapter 101: New Soul Pet, Devil Tree Battle Soldier

Wangluo City

Chu Family's courtyard.

A gracefully beautiful and curvy woman stood on the cobblestone bypath. Her gaze was fixated on the blooming flowerbeds in the courtyard. However, she wasn't paying attention to the flowers; rather, her gaze was fixated on a certain spot as she was lost in thought...

"You've returned..." The slightly deep voice of a man came from the courtyard door to the side. The man was tall and rugged but slightly skinny. He wore a long robe as he slowly walked to the front of the woman.

"Mhm." The woman nodded her head. Her beautiful eyes stared at the male, and her expression faintly changed. However, the change was only for an instant, and quickly her eyes returned to their original disposition.

"Where do you plan on going next time?" asked the man.

"I don't have any plans; nevertheless, I won't stay here." said the woman.

The man's gaze never left the woman. His expression was extremely complicated. Within the gentle look there was a mixed bit of helplessness and bitterness, "If there's a day you ever feel tired, then come back."

The woman didn't say anything. After being silent for awhile, it seemed as if she was hesitating, as the emotion in her eyes seemed to wander a bit.

"Say what you want to say." The male seemed to understand everything about the woman.

The woman looked at the man once more before finally speaking: "Tiancheng, I want to bring Mu Er with me." (TL: Er in this case is used to describe Chu Mu, taking his first name (Mu, yes that's how it works in Chinese) and putting an Er at the end to indicate that he's someone close to her)

Chu Tiancheng's expression instantly changed. Even though he tried his hardest to mask it, his expression was still revealed.

"Mu Er is already..." The words nearly came out of Chu Tiancheng's mouth, but he didn't dare to speak anymore.

"What happened? What happened to him?" The mood of the woman had previously been rather aloof and arrogant. Only when discussing this matter would there be a tinge of emotion.

Chu Tiancheng was slightly bitter as he swallowed back his

words and said: “Nothing, I let him go away to learn. He will return in a year.”

“Who's with him? Can his safety be guaranteed?” The woman subsequently asked.

“It’s only in a relatively safe area. Nothing bad should occur.” said Chu Tiangcheng.

“How about this. When he turns 18, I will bring him to my place and give him a grand adulthood ceremony. Then I’ll let him officially enter Soul Palace. Afterwards, I’ll help him become an official soul pet trainer.” Said the woman.

If it was before, when Chu Tiancheng heard these words, perhaps he would instantly crease his eyebrows and silently think for a while. However, currently, he was full of pain and a changed man; he numbly nodded his head.

The woman seemed to think that Chu Tiancheng’s answer was a bit overly straightforward. A faint trace of suspicion appeared in her eyes.

However, the woman didn’t ponder over this any longer. She noticed Chu Tiancheng’s slightly decrepit manner and, although she was a bit unreconciled, she didn’t know what to say. After a while, she opened her mouth and said:

“I can make the Soul Alliance remove the ban on you. Come to

Soul Palace. If you stay here…”

“Removing or not removing it has no significance to me. Leave.” Chu Tiancheng interrupted her, turned around and left.

“In two years I will bring Mu Er away from here…”

“I don’t have any objections. Right now I cannot even protect him.”

As she watched the back of Chu Tiancheng gradually grow farther away, a slight ripple manifested in her heart. In the past, Chu Tiancheng would never use this tone of voice when talking with her. He would also never interrupt her and then leave.

She had noticed Chu Tiancheng’s abnormality today, and it seemed like he was hiding something.

The woman didn’t mull over it any longer. She stayed in the courtyard for a short while before summoning her soul pet. Ascending to the blue skies, she disappeared amidst the white clouds.

Next to the courtyard, Chu Tiancheng stood in the midair in a corridor. His head was tilted upwards as he watched the woman nimbly fly away. His expression became gloomy again, and in the darkness of the eave, it caused this somewhat desolate man to seem even more lonely and sentimental.

“Everyone in Wangluo City knows that Mu Er is no longer here. Aside from Mu Er, who can occupy your heart, in this enormous city with over a million people, you don’t pay attention to a single person…”

…..

The fog on Prison Island lingered the entire year. Here, there were no seasons or any torrential rainfall. Instead, it was always small drizzles of rain. During this time, the entire island became extremely muddy.

In the grey sky above Prison Island, one could always see a few soul pets soaring in the air. In the boundless mountain range, there were the songs of birds and the roars of beasts. There were even a few plants that would suddenly stand up and move their limbs, removing the accumulated water on their bodies.

Rain unceasingly fell, washing away the puddle of blood under the plants…

“That’s the fourth piece.” Chu Mu stood in the curtain of rain, and he slowly found the blood soaked map.

Although Chu Mu was standing in the rain, there weren’t any indication that he was wet at all. This was because above his head was an odd branch and leaf that absorbed all the rain that fell.

The plant standing next to Chu Mu was an extremely bizarre

plant. If it wasn't for that branch and leaf, it would look like the top of a tree. From far away, it looked like a ferocious man covered in muscle.

"Devil Tree Battle Soldier, you must be tired. Go back and rest." Chu Mu chanted an incantation and recalled the Devil Tree Battle Soldier into the soul pet space.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier was the soul pet that Chu Mu subdued when he became a seventh remembrance Spirit Soldier. At that time, Chu Mu, Mo Xie, and the Ice Air Fairy almost paid their lives for it.

When Chu Mu obtained the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, it was but a mere walnut sized seed. The reason why they had to expend such painful efforts was because the Devil Tree Battle Soldier seed was being guarded by a fourth phase Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

Devil Tree Battle Soldier: Plant Kingdom - Wood Type - Devil Tree Species - Devil Tree Battle Soldier Subspecies - High Class Warrior Rank

Devil Tree Battle Soldiers were definitely an unusual breed among the Plant Kingdom. Their fighting strength was extremely terrifying, and they could rival many pure beast type soul pets.

Devil Tree Battle Soldiers could be regarded as having both types (Plant and Beast) traits. They possessed strength, defensive strength, speed and could also use nature's power. If a Devil Tree

Battle Soldier didn't encounter any soul pet that countered its attribute, it was rare to find adversaries amongst the Warrior Rank realm. Chu Mu was able to beat the fourth phase Devil Tree Battle Soldier because Mo Xie's Demon Fire Devil Flame happened to suppress the wood type. Otherwise, Chu Mu's soul pets would not have been able to break open the fourth phase Devil Tree Battle Soldier's defense.

After obtaining the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, Chu Mu put the seed in his spatial ring. Using wood type soul cores, he began raising it. Once it matured, he signed a soul pact with it.

Currently, the Devil Tree seed had reached Chu Mu's height, and was at the third phase second stage. Of course, Chu Mu also gave the wood type soul crystals in Shang Shi's spatial purse to the Devil Tree seed; otherwise, the Devil Tree seed would still be at about the second phase eighth stage.

Chu Mu had already stayed on Prison island for a year. In this year, the number of soul pets and prisoners that Chu Mu had killed were innumerable. His only goal right now was to make all the names on the scroll except his dark...

Chapter 102: Elegant Figure In The Rain

In one year, the three thousand prisoners had become eight hundred. In these past few months, it seemed that a few prisoners' names would turn dark everyday. Those that were able to survive the year were definitely not normal people.

There were a total of 20 pieces of the scroll. Chu Mu had just obtained one from that prisoner. Last month, Chu Mu killed two more Yang Family people and obtained two pieces of the scroll.

Chu Mu, by himself, had four pieces of the scroll. With respect to the other prisoners, he probably had just as many scrolls.

Facing the rain, Chu Mu continued to walk by himself within the boundless mountain range. He was currently walking towards a beach located on the map. Before this prisoner had died, he had disclosed a very important piece of information to Chu Mu. It was that Cao Yi was currently attempting to capture a water creature in a hidden reef at that beach.

The island was rather large, so trying to encounter Cao Yi another time was very improbable. Therefore, Chu Mu didn't want to forsake the opportunity to kill this fellow.

The humiliation on Cyan Nightmare Island and the schemes that Cao Yi used against him during the competition were things that Chu Mu couldn't forget.

Chu Mu knew that Cao Yi had four soul pets. Cao Yi definitely

had a Cyan Nightmare which strength was not weak; moreover, he could summon it to fight.

On Prison Island, Chu Mu encountered myriad of prisoners who could summon Cyan Nightmares to fight, so he was rather familiar with them.

Chu Mu had never seen Cao Yi summon his Cyan Nightmare. Moreover, a year had passed, so his Cyan Nightmare's strength should have increased by quite a bit.

Cao Yi's Spirit Soldier level main soul pet should be the Fear Wolf he had summoned back then on Cyan Nightmare Island. Chu Mu remembered that the Fear Wolf was at the third phase at that time. However, in the time of one year, if Cao Yi's Fear Wolf hadn't died, its strength would have also increased by a lot.

Chu Mu also remembered that as they headed to the main Cyan Nightmare Island, Cao Yi had further summoned a Water Elemental. A Water Elemental was a Middle Class Servant Rank soul pet. It should be the soul pet Cao Yi obtained while at the Spirit Disciple stage. Chu Mu wasn't clear of it strength at the moment, but had heard that its innate talent wasn't bad.

There was also the Cyan Bird Cao Yi had summoned before. The Cyan Bird was High Class Servant Rank and should have been the main soul pet of Cao Yi when he was at the Spirit Disciple stage. However, it had been killed by Xia Guanghan.

Quickly Chu Mu reached the beach's location. Prison Island's

beach wasn't solely composed of overhanging cliff. Nonetheless, it was covered in reefs and strange whirlpools. Even if it was a water type soul pet, it would be very hard to pass through this particularly dangerous sea area.

"The radiance has lit up, it seems that Cao Yi also has a scroll." A smile appeared on Chu Mu's face. He began to use the intensity of the scroll's radiance to locate Cao Yi's location.

"The scroll has lit up again." Cao Yi quickly discovered that the scroll was emitting a radiance and a sinister smile instantly appeared on his face. His gaze coldly swept over the young woman with shabby clothing next to him.

Standing beside Cao Yi was Xin Xue who had also become a peon with Chu Mu.

In reality, while on Cyan Nightmare Island, Xin Xue had frequently entered Cao Yi's wooden hut during the night.

Xin Xue's abilities were not very strong. The reason she was able to survive was because she offered her body and obtained a fairly good soul pet from Cao Yi.

Cao Yi had offended Xia Guanghan and was forcibly thrown onto Prison Island. Cao Yi knew that it would be hard for himself to escape. Thus, using his own connection, he shamelessly dragged Xin Xue onto the list of names. After bribing the foreman escorting them, he made Xin Xue become his slave and thrown onto the island as well.

Cao Yi knew of Prison Island's vile conditions. His purpose for bringing Xin Xue could be regarded as a method to beg for mercy.

"You should know what to do now?" Cao Yi swept his gaze of Xin Xue and used a commanding tone as he spoke.

The look in Xin Xue's eyes was remote. Clearly, she had suffered abuse from Cao Yi hear and was fearful of him.

She carefully took the radiating scroll from Cao Yi's hands and under his watch, walked in the direction where the light would intensify.

Xin Xue's expression was gloomy. Each time she was ordered to do this, Xin Xue felt fear and humiliation...

Xin Xue continued to walk forward until she reached the jungle. She felt the light gradually grow closer, but stood in her original location. She put the scroll on the ground and in a somewhat frozen manner began to undo her shabby clothing.

This wasn't the first time she had done this. Xin Xue's entire body seemed very numb, but in order to survive she could only sacrifice her dignity and body.

As for Cao Yi, he was using her. He had killed many prisoners on the island, obtained a plethora of benefits and his strength had greatly increased...

Half undoing her robe, Xin Xue really understood how to entice a man's lust. Especially on such a secure barren island. In each prisoner's mind, aside from the struggle amidst the slaughter, there was an extremely intense lust. Therefore, in the past, there was practically no one who could resist Xin Xue's attraction.

Although Xin Xue's skin was covered by a bit of stain, it still wasn't able to conceal her attractive fair skin. An exceptional development caused her seventeen year old age to be able to boil the beast blood in many males.

After undoing her clothing, the upper half of her body was completely naked. A fine drizzle washed down falling on her body. Her damp hair stuck to her naked body. The rain water rolled down the shaking curves of her breast, giving one a visual stimulation...

(It could be so much more poetic, but I don't enjoy writing erotica)

Drop after drop the rain water permeated her thin clothing and even though the shabby pants on the lower half of her body had not been undone, because of the wetness, they were tightly pressed to her body. This caused the curviness of her small butt to be highlighted, making it more rather ample and round.

Standing in the rain, with such an alluring scene in front of his eyes, even Chu Mu was astonished. He felt a certain kind of thirst in the depths of his heart that told him to walk in front of his woman and then taste the goods at his will...

Chu Mu was already 16. Seeing such a scene would naturally cause a male reaction. Especially after such a longer period of slaughter, it made him like that majority of the prisoners. In the depths of his heart was an extremely intense lust. Normally he was on the brink of life and death and his psychological state was pressed. It wouldn't have mattered if he had never seen a woman, but once he saw it this lust would spiral out of control.

Chu Mu was currently in a state where his lust was ignited. However, he wasn't like those other prisoners who without rational immediately charged forwards and recklessly ravaged this young woman in front of them radiating with attraction. Moreover, Chu Mu had already recognized Xin Xue from her appearance.

Xin Xue was able to sense the ignition of lust from the nearby prisoner. She was already used to these prisoners' exceptionally lustful gazes. She was even used to the wanton desecration that was about to come. Her gaze numbly looked at the prisoner walking over and she was about to feign an expression that revealed a desire for pleasure.

However, when Xin Xue saw the man walking over in the rain, the numbness on her face was gradually replaced by shock!

Chapter 103: Killing Cao Yi (1)

“Chu Mu!!”

Xin Xue stared at Chu Mu in the rain with an extremely stunned expression. Back then, on the main Cyan Nightmare Island, Chu Mu had given her an eminently profound impression. After all, he had used his own strength of one man to defeat the entire opposing team!

Chu Mu looked at the young woman in front of him and slowly opened his mouth saying: “You use this method to attract the enemy and use their unpreparedness…”

“I… in truth I…” Xin Xue wanted to explain, but found that she was incapable of doing so. Instead, she could only lower her head.

“Cao Yi is in the vicinity, right?” said Chu Mu.

“Mhm, you… you should leave quickly. He will come here soon.” Xin Xue looked at Chu Mu and spoke.

“I’ve come here to kill him.” Chu Mu indifferently said.

“Kill him? You want to kill him?” Xin Xue once again revealed a shocked expression.

Chu Mu was also a peon like her. Xin Xue felt that peons had no

way of resisting Cao Yi, a Cyan Nightmare auxiliary island master.

“His strength is stronger than before. I implore you to stay far away from him.” Xin Xue naturally knew of Cao Yi’s strength.

Xin Xue didn’t expect Chu Mu to be on Prison Island, let alone to have already survived a year. However, even with this, it was to no avail. Cao Yi’s strength was truly too strong and was something that could not be defeated.

However, Chu Mu shook his head. He didn’t plan on leaving. No matter what Cao Yi’s strength was like, he had to kill him this time!

“His Fear Wolf has already reached the fourth phase second stage. It’s extremely savage. Amongst the Warrior Rank, there are very few soul pets that are its match. His Water Elemental has also reached the fifth phase second stage. Although it is only a Servant rank soul pet, soul crystals and medicinal drugs have been used to strengthen it. Its fighting strength is only second to the Fear Wolf. On the island, he has also obtained a fourth phase Storm Fairy…” In Xin Xue’s opinion, any one of Cao Yi’s soul pets could not be defeated by Chu Mu. Chu Mu being here was practically suicide.

“What stage has his Cyan Nightmare reached?” asked Chu Mu.

“Fourth phase third stage; it’s his strongest soul pet.” said Xin Xue.

Chu mu nodded his head and no longer paid any heed to Xin Xue. He continued to walk towards the beach.

“Don’t go, Cao Yi is there. Walk the other way.” Xin Xue instantly warned. However, Chu Mu continued to walk forward, heading directly towards Cao Yi.

Cao Yi was standing on a reef, and his gaze was fixated on the jungle that was being bathed in rain. A smile had been evoked on his face.

Bringing Xin Xue was extremely smart. This woman had saved him a lot of trouble, and she had even brought him many benefits.

“I’ve obtained another scroll. Perhaps the final items will all belong to me.” Cao Yi muttered.

As he said this, Cao Yi discovered a black figure slowly walking out from the jungle. This person didn’t seem to be using any object to cover the rain. Indifferently walking in the rain, he seemed to be harmonizing with the pitter patter of the falling rain…

Cao Yi instantly creased his eyebrows. Clearly, this time, Xin Xue was unable to lure this prisoner.

Cao Yi knew that a battle was imminent, and he had already chanted an incantation, summoning his Fear Wolf in front of him.

The approaching person didn’t summon a soul pet. He walked

head on towards Cao Yi, and gradually amidst the screen of rain, his facial features clearly revealed.

“Chu Mu!!!”

Cao Yi was about to use his Fear Wolf to attack this fellow who didn’t understand how to summon soul pets. However, when he clearly saw this person’s appearance, he was full of shock.

Chu Mu raised the corner of his mouth and revealed a demonic smile. Everytime he encountered his enemies, Chu Mu was like a devil putting on a merciless smile.

“It’s been awhile Senior Cao.” Chu Mu slowly spoke.

“How is it you?!” Cao Yi’s face had both shock and anger written on his. Cao Yi was angry because it was due to Chu Mu that he had been thrown onto Prison Island.

“I am also a prisoner here.” Chu Mu indifferently said.

Cao Yi sucked in a deep breath of air. He seemed to understand something and the emotions on his face were instantly wiped off. He turned rather cold and sneered: “You’ve come here to throw away your life?”

“Precisely the opposite. I’ve come here to kill you. The matter from a year ago is not something I would so magnanimously forget.” said Chu Mu.

“Kill me? Hahaha, you want to kill me? Chu Mu, have you already become crazy from eating raw meat on this island?” Cao Yi guffawed.

“Whether I’ve become crazy is something you’ll know very soon.” Chu Mu ignored Cao Yi’s contempt. Slowly, he moved his lips and chanted a soul pact incantation.

A deep blue moon symbol gradually appeared in the rain. Slowly, it was imprinted under Chu Mu’s feet and created a dazzlingly beautiful moon shaped soul pact summoning pattern. Inside the pattern, a particular Demon Fire Devil Flame was ignited...

Cao YI stared at Chu MU’s summoning pattern and the contempt and scorn on his face slowly disappeared. What replaced it was an extreme shock!

“Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox!!”

Cao Yi was stunned. His gaze motionlessly stared at the powerful soul pet that Chu Mu had summoned. Although they were ten meters apart, he was still able to feel the enormous demonic aura of Chu Mu’s Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox!!

A Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox was practically unrivalled amongst the Warrior Rank. It was the most perfect soul pet desperately sought by all Spirit Soldiers!

“Aowu Aowu”

Facing this imposing, nefarious, and demonic creature, even the eminently savage Fear Wolf revealed a slightly fearful expression.

Both were at the High Class Warrior Rank and, although the Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox’s body wasn’t as formidable as the Fear Wolf, its excessively wild six tails were full of unruliness that other soul pets were fearful of!!

A normal Six Tailed Demon Fox with equivalent physical circumstances was something a Fear Wolf was still not a match to. An Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox, a creature that could rival Commander Rank soul pets, had even more terrifying fighting strength. Unless the Fear Wolf was a phase higher, they were simply not on the same level!

Cao Yi’s Fear Wolf had already reached the fourth phase second stage, but after a year of battle, Mo Xie had already reached the fourth phase first stage!!

“How is this possible?! How could you possess such a soul pet?!!” Cao Yi’s face had an extremely strange expression. He wished for nothing more than to leap at Chu Mu and kill him, and then steal his soul pet!

A Six Tailed Demon Fox was considered a relatively rare soul pet. It only resided and roamed about in a few special places. It was considered very fortunate to encounter one in the wild.

As for Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Foxes, the probability of meeting one was next to nothing. This kind of perfect Warrior Rank soul pet was often more valuable than a few superior Commander Rank soul pets!

Spirit Soldiers were the most common at Soul Pet Trainer level. Many people stayed at this level. But even those like Spirit Masters and Spirit Lords, though now at a higher rank, were once themselves Spirit Soldiers, so a perfect Warrior Rank Soul Pet was crucial to any soul pet trainer!

Chapter 104: Killing Cao Yi (2)

In the jungle, Xin Xue stood in the rain and numbly put her clothes back on. She was currently hesitating on whether or not to use this opportunity to escape.

“He will not be able to stall Cao Yi for too long. Cao Yi also has a Feather Beast. Its flying speed is very quick. Trying to escape from his grasps is very hard.” Xin Xue thought in this way, and she had no choice but to remove any idea of escaping.

Xin Xue covered her body and felt that it was a bit cold. Ultimately, she couldn’t help but walk back towards the beach. Chu Mu’s appearance wasn’t of too much meaning to her. Only, she didn’t think he would also be on Prison Island.

The jungle wasn’t far away from the beach. From the jungle, one could hear the sound of soul pets fighting on the beach.

When Xin Xue approached the edge of the jungle, she intentionally stayed there for a while to avoid seeing Chu Mu’s miserable death.

The fight seemed to be extremely intense. Amidst the wind and rain, she could feel the clash of various abilities. It caused multiple chaotic streams of air to appear in this area of the forest.

She continued to walk forwards. Xin Xue was already able to see the beach; however, just as her field of view cleared up, she suddenly discovered an eminently wild soul pet standing not too

far away from her on the rainy beach!

"Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox!!"

Xin Xue was instantly stunned by the demonically charming soul pet. To her, a Spirit Disciple, Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Foxes were unimaginable!!

Its glorified six silver tails abruptly spread apart. Around the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox's body revolved six balls of silent flame. Under the four paws, there were four equivalently burned identical flames. Even in the rain, there didn't seem to be affected in any way!

"Is this... could this be Chu Mu's?!" Xin Xue's gaze searched around before finally discovering Chu Mu's figure at another location standing silently in the rain.

In the rain, Chu Mu was in the midst of chanting an incantation. A white frosty air was seeping forth from his body. The rain drops dripping onto his body would quickly turn into ice crystals as they rolled down his body. The ice crystals would suspend themselves around his body and wouldn't fall!

"Ice Arrow!"

Completing the incantation, Chu Mu's black pupils immediately locked onto Cao Yi's Cyan Nightmare. Immediately, ten ice crystals that had condensed into ice arrows suddenly shot forth,

violently piercing Cao Yi's Cyan Nightmare.

The body of Cao Yi's Cyan Nightmare abruptly ignited a cyan flame, completely burning Chu Mu's ice magic into ashes.

When Chu Mu used the ice type soul technique, Cao Yi had chanted an incantation at the same time. His incantation was nature's power, which could control the extensive tree vines; he attempted to quickly bind Mo Xie up.

Mo Xie rapidly sped up and easily dodged Cao Yi's soul technique. Mo Xie's target was the Cyan Nightmare, and the unusual speed rendered the Cyan Nightmare unable to lock onto Mo Xie's presence.

A gorgeous Demonic Flame Claw suddenly swept across the Cyan Nightmare's body. The Cyan Nightmare was unable to dodge, and a gash was instantly ripped open on its body. The Evil Flame and Devil Fire resisted each other, creating an even more exotic flame.

"Burn him to death!" His face covered in rain drops, Cao Yi was exceptionally terrifying. His entire being seemed like a wounded beast.

The Cyan Nightmare's devilish claws immediately created two balls of cyan colored fire. The fire blusteringly burned in the rain. Following its sharp cry, the Cyan Nightmare promptly threw the fire in its hands towards Mo Xie.

Chu Mu had already readied an incantation, and enveloped Mo Xie with the soul pact recall incantation.

The Cyan Nightmare's two balls of flame instantly flew past Mo Xie's location. Chu Mu had already recalled Mo Xie and quickly summoned the Ice Air Fairy.

"Ning, finish it. Ice Air Dance!"

Long, snowy white hair had appeared on the Ice Air Fairy when it had reached the fourth phase. As it chanted an incantation, its snowy white hair danced about in the rain; every raindrop within a10 meter area instantly froze into an ice crystal.

"Ling!!"

Ice Air Dance!!!

The frosty ice condensed in the sky, morphing into countless extremely sharp snow flowers. As the Ice Air Fairy's hands danced, the numerous snow flowers wantonly drifted about, creating layers of beautiful, snowy white that rapidly covered the Cyan Nightmare's body!

The icy white snow flowers danced in the breeze, violently spinning around the Cyan Nightmare's body. On the beach and in the rain, it was like the dancing body of an icy snow devil. Slowly, it froze the Cyan Nightmare's body.

Xin Xue was standing far away. The shock on her face was currently inconceivable because under the drizzle of rain on the beach's reef, the Storm Fairy's carcass was motionlessly lying there.

Xin Xue understood Cao Yi. Everytime he fought, he would use the Fear Wolf as the battle's vanguard until its fighting strength had been exhausted. Then, he would recall it. Since the Storm Fairy's corpse was there, it indicated that the Fear Wolf had already been defeated!

The glorious Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox, and the powerful Ice Air Fairy. Xin Xue thought that by the time she walked to the beach, Chu Mu's head would already have been severed. Yet, she didn't expect Cao Yi's Fear Wolf to be defeated, and the Storm Spirit to be killed. Even the formidable Cyan Nightmare was already riddled with injuries. Under the eminently strong Ice Air Dance, it had also thoroughly lost the ability to fight.

Cao Yi's face was pale. He had already summoned his soul pets three times, but the three soul pets in front of him, even in a 2 versus 1 situation, had been defeated by an exceptionally powerful Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox. Right now, Chu Mu had summoned an Ice Air Fairy whose stage wasn't inferior to the Cyan Nightmare!

The icy type soul techniques were an absolute counter to the fire type. Despite the Cyan Nightmare's composite strength being slightly stronger than the Ice Air Fairy's, it was impossible to defeat the ice type Ice Air Fairy.

“Your time of death has arrived.” Chu Mu swept his eyes over the trembling Cao Yi. After completely freezing the Cyan Nightmare, he immediately ordered the Ice Air Fairy to use a technique on Cao Yi.

Cao Yi barely managed to chant an incantation, wanting to resist the Ice Air Fairy’s ice power. However, his soul power had been depleted by continuously summoning soul pets ,so it was exceptionally hard for him to take any defensive measures. The bone-chilling ice permeated his body…

The frost quickly covered Cao Yi’s incomparably terrified face. At the end, it froze his face at that moment, turning him into a silent ice man standing in the rain. He could not move at all.

“Ning, retrieve their soul cores.” Chu Mu said to the Ice Air Fairy.

Chu Mu slowly walked in front of Cao Yi. His gaze was fixated on Cao Yi’s frozen face. His fist was already tightly clenched.

“Beng!!” Chu Mu used his fist to beat Cao Yi’s arm. Suddenly, Cao Yi’s frozen arm transformed into countless pieces of ice shards that sprinkled onto the ground.

“Beng!!” Another punch. Chu Mu smashed Cao Yi’s other arm to pieces. Cao Yi’s completely frozen face revealed an incomparably contorted expression. One could see how much pain he was currently experiencing.

“Those who anger me all have to pay the most painful price!” To Chu Mu, killing people no longer evoked any emotions in him. Chu Mu brandished his fist and indifferently smashed it into Cao Yi’s face.

Cao Yi’s head was instantly transformed into numerous fragments of ice under his single punch. Frozen flesh, frozen blood, and frozen bones suddenly spilled onto the ground. It looked absolutely disgusting.

Chapter 105: The Most Beautiful Thing In The Heart

Xin Xue blankly stood there. With her very own eyes, she had witnessed Chu Mu mercilessly kill Cao Yi. In her heart, she was absolutely stunned.

Xin Xue herself was still a Spirit Disciple. The soul pets that she controlled were only a third phase Cyan Eyed Monster, a second phase Cyan Nightmare, and a third phase Fire Fairy.

In the span of a year, Chu Mu, who had also left Cyan Nightmare Island, was already the trainer of two first-rate Warrior Rank soul pets. Moreover, he had defeated an enemy who Xin Xue believed was difficult to prevail over, Cao Yi!

“Cao Yi is dead, he’s truly dead...” To Xin Xue, Cao Yi was her most terrifying nightmare. Seeing now that this devil had been killed, by Chu Mu no less, she felt that this was impossible...

Chu Mu glanced at Xin Xue, but didn’t pay any heed to this woman whose body and spirit had been completely desecrated. Instead, he indifferently collected the Storm Fairy and Cyan Nightmares’ soul crystals and put them into his spatial ring.

Chu Mu wouldn’t leave without Cao Yi’s remaining valuables and he efficiently searched through Cao Yi’s items.

Chu Mu was rather surprised, because, surprisingly, Cao Yi had

two scrolls on him. Adding the scroll that he just took from Xin Xue, Chu Mu currently had 7 scrolls in total.

Aside from the scrolls, Chu Mu fround a fire and lightning dual attributed third level soul crystal on Cao Yi. The price of a single attribute third level soul crystal was already five thousand gold coins. A dual attributed soul crystal's price was about seven thousand gold coins. Thus it could be considered a fairly good harvest.

In this year, Chu Mu had already obtained numerous soul crystals from a few prisoners. If Chu Mu were to quote a price for his soul crystals, he would have 100,000 gold coins worth of belongings.

100,000 gold coins should be enough to purchase a fire and beast dual attribute fifth level soul crystal. Once he left Prison Island, Chu Mu would naturally spend all this money on his soul pets in order to increase their strength by a level.

Aside from the third level soul crystal, he didn't find any other relatively valuable objects on Cao Yi.

Opening his scroll, Cao Yi's name had already darkened. Chu Mu looked at the map and began walking towards a targeted location deep within the island.

"Wait... wait..." Xin Xue immediately followed Chu Mu.

“What?” Chu Mu turned around and looked back at the remarkably alluring young lady in the rain.

In truth, Chu Mu did harbor a desire towards Xin Xue’s body. However, for some unknown reason, each time he attempted to enter the fanciful daydream, another young lady’s appearance would suddenly appear. She stood on the deck, facing the wind, melancholily staring at the ocean’s surface…

“Bring… Bring me with you… I only want to survive. I’ll do whatever you want me to… Please…” Xin Xue tugged on Chu Mu’s arm, and she intentionally wrapped her body around it in hopes of piquing Chu Mu’s interest towards her.

Xin Xue knew that if she wanted to survive, she had to rely on him. The transformation from Chu Mu’s original strength to what it was now had been completely witnessed by her. Such a man definitely had a very good chance of becoming the sole survivor. If she was willing to become this boy’s slave, she could also survive!

As long as she passed this challenge and managed to follow this man, then her life in the future would definitely change completely. Xin Xue felt that Chu Mu was her only chance at surviving. Not only was he a hope for survival, he was also a hope for changing her life.

In the face of this hope, this woman would sacrifice anything. Furthermore, Xin Xue didn’t dislike Chu Mu. She even had a favorable impression of the powerful Chu Mu. Even if Chu Mu was more cruel than Cao Yi, she wouldn’t have any complaints.

“Please, no matter what I have to do, I am willing.” Xin Xue tightly held onto Chu Mu’s arm.

Chu Mu was born into a noble family. The young maids who had served him were all young, beautiful woman. None of them were inferior to Xin Xue. Even though his desire was crazily burning from living in the wild, he wasn’t so thirsty.

“Your life and death are of no concern to me. I also don’t need such a burden. You should be lucky I haven’t killed you already.” Chu Mu pushed away Xin Xue, who was wrapped around his body. He coldly turned around and continued walking towards the depths of the misty island with the Ice Air Fairy, which turned the rain into frozen ice.

Xin Xue didn’t give up. Desecrating her dignity was no longer important to her.

Chu Mu was never someone who habitually had protective feelings for the opposite sex. Especially because of the heavy scars in his heart, he absolutely despised women who were pretty on the outside but ugly on the inside.

“If you keep following me, my Ice Air Fairy will turn you into an ice sculpture.” Chu Mu continued to walk forwards and no longer looked at Xin Xue.

“Ling”

The Ice Air Fairy had no understanding of what a female was. Since Chu Mu rejected her in his heart, it also rejected her. Seeing that Xin Xue was about to follow, it immediately stood in front of her and released a frosty air from its body, not letting Xin Xue take another step closer.

The nearing of the frosty air made Xin Xue have no choice but to stop in her tracks. She looked onwards at the back of Chu Mu's proud and aloof figure. Now Xin Xue finally understood why Ting Yu had said something like that to her back then. She could only regret not having seen Chu Mu's potential while on Cyan Nightmare Island. On the other hand, Ting Yu's discernment was much better than her's...

Seeing Xin Xue, Chu Mu naturally thought of Ting Yu, who had originally shared a room with him. Compared to Xin Xue, Ting Yu was not only smarter but also knew to avoid immorality.

Peons were equivalent to slaves. Many young women had been desecrated by foremen. Ting Yu was smart because she had never sold herself. Moreover, she had always concealed herself, whenever it came to her body figure or appearance.

Chu Mu had shared a roof with Ting Yu, and only he knew that Ting Yu was actually an extremely beautiful girl. She was much better looking than Xin Xue, but knew that she had to conceal it and remain introverted. It was because she was smart like this that she was able to avoid the foremen's lust.

As he walked along the shoreline and looked at the fine drizzle of rain covering the ocean, Chu Mu unconsciously thought of the veiled young woman-mysterious, noble, and elegant. She gave Chu Mu a completely different feeling; There was a difference of heaven and earth when compared to Xin Xue...

“After leaving Prison Island and enter Nightmare Palace’s higher domain, I should be able to see her. What kind of person is she...” Chu Mu muttered to himself.

Chu Mu had no choice but to admit that he had a bit of a favorable impression and curiosity towards this mysterious young woman whom he had only spoken a few words to. Nevertheless, Chu Mu knew that as long as he still needed others to pity him in order to survive, he would never be able to genuinely speak to her.

Chapter 106: Three Years

Seasons never rotated on Prison Island, but on the distant Nightmare City, a large snowfall was swirling in the air. Icy flakes drifted about and, as far as one could see, the world was covered in pure white.

Pure white snow silently fell onto the corner of the palace's eave. After a short while, it would slowly roll off...

In the snowy white courtyard, a slightly thin man was standing there, allowing the snow to fall onto his shoulders. His expression was exceptionally indifferent and his entire being was like a frozen sculpture.

"It's already been three years. I feel like I've forgotten something..." a while later, the ice sculpture-like Xia Guanghan slowly opened his mouth and spoke. He seemed to remember something.

As Xia Guanghan pondered, his body was like a statue. He opened his eyes again before finally thinking of something. It seemed that three years ago he gave an abnormally talented White Nightmare to a peon that had the potential to become a formidable figure.

"Out of three thousand people only one survives. I hope that you didn't waste my White Nightmare." Xia Guanghan slowly spoke.

After speaking, Xia Guanghan chanted an incantation and summoned his Ice Winged Tiger.

“Go to Heng Ocean’s Prison Island and pick up the person from three years ago. If he’s dead, then briefly search the nearby island for a young soul pet that has lost its soul pact. In three years, it has probably undergone the second phase evolution, and barely taken on a form.” Xia Guanghan spoke to his Ice Winged Tiger.

The Ice Winged Tiger breathed out a breath of white air. After nodding its head, it spread open its wings, creating a chaotic wave of snowy wind as it shot into the air and gradually disappeared into the white sky.

“Senior Xia…” The moment the Ice Winged Tiger flew away, a young person walked to Xia Guanghan and made a simple bow.

“What happened, Su Yu?” Xia Guanghan didn’t turn around and merely used the voice to distinguish the person who came.

“The matter of the young princess’ squire is overseen by Senior Xia…” the man called Su Yu quietly said.

“You must rely on yourself to obtain it.” said Xia Guanghan.

“I know that. However, I want to find out about matters after becoming the young princess’ squire from Senior Xia. I believe this role isn’t as simple as being a squire, right?” asked Su Yu,

“You seen very self-confident… wait until you defeat all the competitors before you speak of this again. This position is coveted

by many, especially people like you who have other schemes." A smile appeared on Xia Guanghan's face.

"Senior Xia sent his Ice Winged Tiger to..." after speaking Su Yu turned around and left.

"To fetch someone. If he's still alive, you will have another powerful competitor." Xia Guanghan indifferently said.

A smile emerged on Su Yu's face. His expression didn't seem to object.

The remote Nightmare City was covered in white snow. In the middle of Heng Ocean was a mysterious Prison Island that was still stuck in the middle of sizzling hot weather.

What was different from before was that the vast body of water surrounding the island was no longer as turbulent, and the number of whirlpools had clearly decreased.

The ocean surrounding Prisoner Island had this special cycle which caused the creation of the three year death game...

The mountain range in the middle of Prisoner Island was covered by extremely dense plants. The tops of the trees and the leaves of the trees were stuck together and when looking down from high above, it was like looking on an undulating green billow.

"Yi!! Yi!! Yi!!"

“Zhizhizhizi!!!”

Suddenly, a bird creature flew out from the green jungle and unceasingly shouted.

This scene continued to occur in a straight line, continually expanding in a certain direction. Clearly, there was a powerful creature indiscreetly charging around in the jungle.

Amidst the tall trees in the jungle, six gorgeous, silver, ribbon-like objects fluttered about. They were fluffy. Amongst the green colored plants, they freely moved about, giving off an exotic feeling.

The six furry objects weren’t ribbons, but the tails of a vigorous and elegant Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox.

The Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox running amok in the forest was already longer than two meters. With the addition of its exceptionally glorious tails, it exerted an even more evil and wild aura. Any creature that saw it would give way in fear.

Riding on this gracefully noble soul pet was a black pupiled youth with disheveled hair.

The young person had an imposing spirit, and his figure was tall and sturdy. He possessed the same demonic and wild aura as the Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox.

This human and fox were naturally Chu Mu and Mo Xie, who had survived on Prison Island for almost three years.

Over these three years, Chu Mu had changed from a reserved fifteen year old child to a cold and unruly young man.

As for Mo Xie, she had transformed from a lovely small Moonlight Fox into a fifth phase Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox. From coquettishly bundling up in her master's embrace, she could now carry her master on her back as she ran through the entire jungle.

Of course, Mo Xe's habits still hadn't changed. When she wasn't fighting, she still maintained her Pitiful Appearance and transformed into a delicate and exquisitely beautiful Six Tailed Fox. She would lie on her trainer's shoulder, or she would recline in his embrace.

"We've walked so far, I'm not sure how the little fellow is doing. We should go back and take a look." said Chu Mu.

"Wuwuwu~~"

"When we last saw it, it was still in the chrysalis state. I have no idea what kind of soul pet that little fellow is; its pupation stage is unexpectedly taking so long."

"Wuwuwu!!"

“Haha, if it’s emerged from the pupa, I’ll let you two fight a round.”

In order to prevent some soul pets from obstructing her as she ran, Mo Xie’s aura was not restrained in the slightest. Having already reached the fifth phase seventh stage, Mo Xie didn’t need to be cautious like before. In this area where there weren’t any powerful soul pets, there were no soul pets that dared to directly oppose her.

Running the whole way, after leaving the the mountain range and passing through the large mountain, they arrived at the forest in the basin where they began everything. Chu Mu remembered passing through the forest in the basin’s cave, where he obtained the Ice Air Fairy to reach the small fellow’s chrysalis area.

A year ago, when Chu Mu had returned here, this Ice Falcon forest had been completely “contaminated” by the small fellow’s chrysalis. The entire jungle was full of white threads and all the plants had been wrapped by the bug’s white thread. It seemed like a snowy jungle.

“Okay, stop here.” Chu Mu made Mo Xie stop after a while. He jumped off of Mo Xie’s back and picked out a scroll from his spatial ring before burying it in the ground.

After burying the scroll, Chu Mu hopped back onto Mo Xie’s back. Mo Xie continued to advance towards the small fellow’s chrysalis’ area.

By the end of the second year, the majority of the prisoners on Prison Island had been killed. In the following year, Chu Mu entered further into the depths of Prison Island to fight with the wild soul pets, unceasingly improving himself and his soul pets.

Chu Mu had a total of twelve scrolls in his hand. As for the other 8 pieces, Chu Mu was sure that they were in the hands of the two other Yang Family members.

There were still two people remaining from the Yang Family. Among them was the strongest one, Yang Zheng. A year ago Chu Mu had encountered Yang Zheng and both his Devil Tree Battle Soldier and Ice Air Fairy were nearly killed. Knowing that his strength was not enough to contend against Yang Zheng, Chu Mu decisively fled towards the inner depths of the island, completely throwing off Yang Zheng.

Three years was about to arrive, and Chu Mu knew that it was time to dispose of those two. Therefore, when he returned from the depths of the island, he intentionally left a trail of scrolls so that they could follow his steps. Finally, he would settle his feud with them!!

Chapter 107: Monarch Rank, White Nightmare

Deep inside the jungle.

“Senior Yang Zheng, there’s another magic radiance on the scroll. That brat has buried the scrolls in the ground with the intention of drawing us here. Is this some trap?” Besides Yang Zheng, Yang He asked a question.

Yang Zheng harrumphed and said: “Hmph, what kind of tricks can he play. This brat made us stay on this rotten island for three years. Even if he purposefully lead us here, what does it matter? Perhaps you still want to stay in this terrible place?!”

Yang He nodded his head. Before his Yang Family had come here, they had planned to get rid of all the prisoners in one year. After taking back their family treasures, they would immediately go back and receive both praises and rewards. Yet, they didn’t expect this matter to go completely out of their expectations. After delaying to the second year, due to Chu Mu’s disruption, they had to waste another year.

“This time I will definitely kill him!” Yang Zhen clenched his fists and promptly summoned his wing type soul pet, Blood Winged Trioptic Beast!

In three years, Yang Zheng’s Blood Winged Trioptic Beast had already reached the fifth phase ninth stage. Its strength was definitely enough to sweep through the Prison Island’s maps and

its known areas.

Yang He nodded his head and also summoned his soul pet, a Blood Winged Duoptic Beast.

The Blood Winged Trioptic Beast was a Middle Class Commander Rank soul pet while the Blood Winged Duoptic Beast was a rank lower, only Middle Class Warrior Rank. Regardless of physique or grandeur, the Blood Winged Duoptic Beast was clearly inferior to the higher ranked Blood Winged Trioptic Beast.

“Senior Yang Zheng, if we are able to steal back the treasures, once we return home, your position will definitely rise. Your Blood Winged Trioptic Beast has already reached the fifth phase ninth stage. The other two main soul pets, Thunder Fairy and Hairy Umbra Monster had already reached the fifth phase sixth stage. There’s also the Commander Ranked soul pet you captured here, the Thousand Legged Poisonous Centipede. Although it is only at the fourth phase first stage, once its stage increases, its battle prowess will definitely be extremely valiant!” Yang He was rather flattering as he spoke.

“Haha, that’s only natural!” Yang Zheng immediately began laughing.

It was rather hard to sign a soul pact with a Commander Rank soul pet. Thus, there were many cases when a infant Commander Ranked Soul Pet, even if its aptitude was average, would be valued as extremely expensive.

Yang Zheng's Thousand Legged Poisonous Centipede was captured at the second phase. The largest harvest from the trip to Prisoner island was this Commander Rank soul pet. Even though its aptitude wasn't outstanding, the rate at which it increased its strength was much faster than Warrior Rank soul pets!

A Commander Rank's fourth phase was completely different concept than a Servant Rank or Warrior Rank's fourth phase. It was due to this Blood Winged Trioptic Beast that Yang Zheng was able to barely become a entry member in the family. If he were to nurture the Thousand Legged Poisonous Centipede, he would definitely be valued by the yang Family.

Although Yang Zheng was the family's third son, he was the one with the least potential. He was often looked down upon by others. Now, with the Thousand Legged Poisonous Centipede, he felt that he could be elated!

"That's right, Senior Xia, that brat's Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox is of outstanding quality. If we were to subdue him, we must capture it..."

"You don't need to say that. The soul pets he has are all of incredible value. I truly don't know why that brat has such good luck?!" Yang Zheng indignantly said.

As night descended, Chu Mu spent the night in the mountain cave from back then. He planned to enter the unrecognizable Ice Falcon's forest that had been tainted by the small cyan bug's "contamination" on the second day.

As per his habit, Chu Mu wouldn't immediately sleep when night fell. Instead, he would first use his soul power to feed the White Nightmare. Afterwards, he would silently cultivate for a while to quickly recover his soul power. Only when dawn arrived would he sleep a little while.

Chu Mu was currently a sixth remembrance Spirit Master. Spirit Masters could simultaneously summon three soul pets; moreover, their soul power was exceptionally plentiful.

Nonetheless, Chu Mu still had to constantly feed the White Nightmare and, with the addition of the occupation of his first soul by the defector soul pet, Chu Mu was about the same as a sixth remembrance Spirit Soldier. The only difference was that his soul remembrance was comparatively stronger.

The growth of the White Nightmare's strength couldn't be considered too fast or slow. Currently it was already at the fourth phase seventh stage.

When a White Nightmare reached the fourth phase, it could be summoned to participate in a fight. Only, Chu Mu had underestimated his White Nightmare's rank. If it wasn't because the White Nightmare had grown to become dependent on his soul power, Chu Mu's attempt to summon it had nearly ended in a repeat tragedy.

While on Cyan Nightmare Island, the Cyan Nightmare was High Class Warrior Rank. Back then, the peons at the Spirit Disciple

level weren't able to use the Cyan Nightmare to fight. Zhao Feng had been forced by Liu Zhen to summon it back then, but in reality, the Cyan Nightmare simply didn't listen to Wang Keluo's orders as it fought Mo Xie. It was solely due to its Blood Yearning instinct that it was able to lock onto Mo Xie.

Moreover, since Wang Keluo was at the Spirit Disciple stage when he summoned the Cyan Nightmare to fight, its betrayal was definite. Furthermore, there was a chance that it could have immediately killed its host and swallowed his soul.

Humans could make a soul pact with any soul pet, but controlling one was a different issue.

Normally, Spirit Disciples could only control Servant Rank soul pets, Spirit Soldiers could control Warrior Rank soul pets and Spirit Masters could control Commander Rank soul pets.

Bypassing ranks and summoning, regardless of what stage the soul pet was at, the most probable possibility was an inability to control it, and further the soul pet's defection.

Originally, Chu Mu believed that the White Nightmare was a High Class Commander Rank soul pet. Once he reached the Spirit Master level, he could control a High Class Commander Rank soul pet.

However, Chu Mu was wrong. The White Nightmare was not simply a Commander Rank soul pet. Rather, it had surpassed the Commander Rank and had reached the astonishing Monarch

Rank!!

Chu Mu attempting to summon it that time had nearly led to a tragic occurrence where the eminently powerful White Nightmare would betray him. Fortunately, Chu Mu had taken “utmost care” of the White Nightmare, causing it to be definitively reliant on his soul power. Chu Mu also managed to recall it in time to prevent this tragic accident.

After the event, Chu Mu still had lingering fears in his heart and continued to let out a cold sweat. He silently cursed the scoundrel Xia Guanghan for not telling him that the White Nightmare was such a terrifying Soul Pet.

Monarch Rank! In the entire Wangluo city, there were only ten of these existences. Xia Guanghan, this ruthless man, made Chu Mu, when he was small and weak, sign a soul pact with a Monarch Rank. This was simply equivalent to directly killing Chu Mu!

It was also no surprise that the growth of the White Nightmare was built on top of the countless human corpses. If it wasn’t for Chu Mu’s extremely quick increase in strength and this death competition, perhaps he would have already become one of the numerous corpses on the White Nightmare’s path to growth.

Chapter 108: Night Thunder Dream Beast

When daylight broke through, Chu Mu was facing the trace of white in the horizon as he opened his eyes.

Little Mo Xie's thoughts were connected to Chu Mu and when Chu Mu awoke, the adorable little fox also opened its drowsy sleeping eyes. She extended her small tongue and licked Chu Mu's cheek, letting out a delicate purr. She seemed to want to sleep a little longer...

"Keep sleeping then. I'll make Little Night bring us." Chu Mu stroked the adorable small fellow as he spoke.

Mo Xie had already ran continuously for one day, and her physical strength was slightly depleted. She ought to have a good sleep to replenish her energy. After all, in the not too far future, there would be a great battle.

Chu Mu slowly chanted an incantation, and a faintly discernable purple halo gradually rose up from Chu Mu's body before slowly falling to Chu Mu's feet. It created a purple colored summoning pattern.

The borders of the symbol burst with a radiant purple. It was dazzling and beautiful, adorning the handsome soul pet that gradually appeared.

“Zizi”

Purple lightning ceaselessly moved about on its black body, decorating its tall and powerful metallic body. A supple and flamboyant mane fluttered in the surrounding chaotic air streams, making this soul pet look even more arrogant and noble.

“Hui Hui!!”

The soul pet with a plethora of lightning moving about on its body lifted its foreleg, and it let out a long high and distant hiss. Suddenly, the lightning was like a flying snake flickering, and it disintegrated the surrounding pieces of rock.

Seeing his soul pet, Ye Meng, so excited, Chu Mu helplessly shook his head and soothed Mo Xie who had been woken up by this fellow.

“Little Ye, don’t yell. Continue on our route.” Chu Mu nimbly jumped onto the back of the lightning soul pet. The ceaselessly moving lightning didn’t have any effect on Chu Mu or Mo Xie.

Little Ye was the nickname Chu Mu gave to his Spirit Master soul pet. This was the new soul pet that he obtained when he was chased into the depths of Prisoner Island by Yang Zheng.

Little Ye was a Night Thunder Dream Beast.

Night Thunder Dream Beast: Beast Kingdom - Demon Type -

Dream Beast Species - Night Thunder Dream Beast Subspecies - Commander Rank

The Night Thunder Dream Beast was a Dream Beast covered in purple electric arcs. It possessed a vigorous and slender black body akin to that of a buck. On the place of its ears were two imposing, backward protruding antlers which looked like two long and ingrained ears.

From its back to its rear, the Night Thunder Dream Beast was covered in smooth, curved white feathers. They extended to its long whip-like tail. Its tail length and body length were approximately the same, and the very tip of the tail was like a half feather. All together, the Night Thunder Dream Beast looked mysterious and elegant. It was full of intelligence, while the interweaving of black and white on its body gave it a dark night temperament and a demonic instinct!

The Night Thunder Dream Beast's techniques were:

Species Technique: Evading Thunder, Shattering Dream

Basic Technique: Thunder Step, Shadow Dash, Thunderbolt, Chasing Wind Clutching Shadows

Main Techniques: Dark Lightning, Death Ray, Violent Lightning Tail Cleave

High Ranking Techniques: Dream, Underworld, Demolition Wave

The <<Pet Encyclopedia>> Chu Mu had only included information regarding relatively common soul pets, and the majority of soul pets under the Commander Rank. Chu Mu could only find out a general idea about the Night Thunder Dream Beast from the Pet Encyclopedia. Indeed, he only knew that the Night Thunder Dream Beast was at the Commander Rank; he could not determine which class it was though. Its techniques were discovered through his battle with the Night Thunder Dream Beast.

When Chu Mu encountered the Night Thunder Dream Beast, it was already at the fourth phase sixth stage. At that time, Chu Mu didn't make both his soul pets simultaneously fight it. Instead, he only let Mo Xie fight it alone.

The intelligent Mo Xie used every means to provoke the Night Thunder Dream Beast, insulting the Night Thunder Dream Beast's honor and nobility. After the Night Thunder Dream Beast was defeated by Mo Xie, Chu Mu attempted to use a soul pact to capture it. It could be said that the Night Thunder Dream Beast signed the soul pact with Chu Mu because it lost the battle and the bet. Thus, it became Chu Mu's soul pet after the Devil Tree Battle Soldier, and it was his first Spirit Master realm soul pet.

Chu Mu currently was a sixth remembrance Spirit Master. His third soul could still hold one more soul pet. Nonetheless, Chu Mu was extremely prudent when he chose his soul pets. In these past two years, aside from signing a soul pact with the Night Thunder

Dream beast, he didn't sign another soul pact with a regular soul pet.

Soul Pet Trainers and soul pets could remove soul pacts between them. However, the soul pact removal incantation would severely damage the soul. Without specific medicine to treat it, at least a year of time was needed to fully recuperate. As for this special medicine, its price was exceptionally expensive. Moreover, it was rarely on the market. Therefore, one had to be very cautious when choosing soul pets and removing soul pacts. This was especially true while changing soul pets.

Soul pacts were established on the desire of both the human and soul pets, with humans having a somewhat compulsory nature. Removing soul pacts also required the agreement of both the human and soul pets with the human still having a bit more of command. If a soul pet was still unwilling to remove the soul pact, then it would remain...

If a soul pet defected and fled, the master wouldn't even have a target to use the removal incantation on. Thus, unless the soul pet died, or one found the defector soul pet and made it agree to remove the soul pact, removing the soul pact was impossible. Simultaneously, it would occupy one of the soul pet trainer's souls.

"Let's go and look at our new friend." Chu Mu patted Little Ye's head and had it rush headlong into the cave.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast let out a shout. It's four slender limbs agilely passed the stalactite in the cave and rushed towards the Ice Falcon Jungle.

“Wuwuwu~~”

Mo Xie seemed to have been woken up by the Night Thunder Dream Beast’s shout just now. No longer sleepy, she jumped down from Chu Mu’s shoulder. Her six gorgeous tails twisted about as she climbed onto the Night Thunder Dream Beast’s head…

The Night Thunder Dream Beast rocked its head as it didn’t enjoy having Mo Xie lie on its head.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast’s speed was much slower than Mo Xie. Moreover, its endurance was much stronger than Mo Xie’s; thus, it could carry Chu Mu and maintain a certain speed for three days and three nights. Mo Xie, on the other hand, could not do this. After running for one day, she had to stop and rest.

With the addition of the purple lightning arcs, an outstandingly smart black body, and long black white feathers that fluttered about, the Night Thunder Dream Beast’s grandeur was considerably formidable. The dark soul pets in the cave could only cower in a dark corner!

Quickly urging on the Night Thunder Dream Beast, Chu Mu reached the jungle covered in countless white natural silk.

The entire jungle was approximately four to five kilometers in perimeter. Chu Mu remembered that the last time he had arrived here, the five hundred meters area that the small fellow’s enormous cocoon lay in had already been transformed into a white

silk forest.

However, at this time, the moment Chu Mu entered the jungle, he shockingly discovered indicators of the white colored natural silk. The deeper he went into the forest, the more he felt that he was entering an enormous nest of a bug that could spit white silk!

“This small fellow is too terrifying. Could it be that the small fellow is an even more powerful existence than the Monarch Rank White Nightmare?”

Chu Mu looked at the jungle covered in white silk and couldn’t help but deeply inhale a breath of air.

Chapter 109: Bug Kingdom, The Innards Of A God

“Hui Hui”

The Night Thunder Dream Beast didn’t quite seem to enjoy the strange odor expunged by the white silk. It unceasingly snorted, expressing its dislike.

As Chu Mu and the Night Thunder Dream Beast went deeper, Chu Mu discovered that the white colored bug thread became more and more dense. At last, it even became a bit harder to walk.

“Mo Xie, dispose of the obstacles here.” Chu Mu said to Mo Xie, who was lying on the Night Thunder Dream Beast.

Mo Xie languidly yawned before slowly opening her mouth and spewing out a column of Demon Fire Devil Flame, which quickly set the incomparably concentrated natural silk aflame!

After the white natural silk was rapidly set aflame, a relatively large hole was quickly burned through. Chu Mu immediately urged the NIght Thunder Dream Beast to pass through this hole in the white natural silk forest.

“Too terrifying. I’m afraid that this has already surpassed the category of a normal soul pet!”

Standing in the veiled white silk kingdom, Chu Mu’s eyes glanced upwards while a large wave billowed in his heart!

Five hundred meters in front of Chu Mu, a relatively enormous white cocoon had appeared. From a distance, it looked like a scorching sun suspended in the air.

Surrounding this humongous cocoon was a natural silk that wantonly proliferated. It criss-crossed together to form a hovering white silk forest amidst this vast jungle.

Unprecedented shock!

He remembered that a year ago, the surrounding jungle had only been covered by the white silk, and it looked merely like a white insect’s home. However, in a year's time, the insect cocoon had become eminently large, and the vicinity was now occupied by this exceptionally hegemonic insect cocoon. Incomparably complicated strings of white chaotically interweaved, folded together, and linked together to form this grid of white that covered the heavens and the earth!!

Chu Mu had never seen such a shocking spectacle. Even in the books, he had never read about a soul pet with such a terrifying metamorphosis method.

The astonishment in his heart was hard to pacify. Back then, when he had inadvertently fed the small thing out of kindness, he had actually ended up encountering such an extraordinary soul pet.

Carrying this shock, Chu Mu continued to walk forwards. The Night Thunder Dream Beast had already jumped onto the enormous tree branch like silk threads and was agilely jumping about on these ostensibly sticky objects. Quickly, he approached the enormous insect cocoon's location.

Looking at it from a distance, the enormous insect cocoon was incomparably large. As he looked at it from below, Chu Mu felt as if he was being oppressed in the face of a humongous mountain; unexpectedly, he was feeling a bit stifled!!

As it continued to approach, the Night Thunder Dream Beast become cautious. After all, as a Commander Rank creature, it had never seen something like this before.

"It's been three years. You still haven't finished transforming?" Chu Mu looked at the enormous insect cocoon and muttered to himself.

Chu Mu jumped off the Night Thunder Dream Beast's body and used his hands to feel the sticky silk. He attempted to pour his soul remembrance into it, and he searched for the small cyan bug's aura.

"Shasha~shasha"

Suddenly, something from the enormous insect cocoon transmitted an extremely familiar sound to Chu Mu. It was the small cyan bug's voice. Even though it had become ostensibly

deeper, this feeling of familiarity was not wrong.

“Small fellow, have you finished your metamorphosis yet?” Chu Mu promptly used Beast Language and transmitted his voice into the insect cocoon.

“Shashashasha”

“……”

The small fellow responded with a series of mental messages. However, Chu Mu helplessly discovered that his middle stage Beast Language was ostensibly unable to completely communicate with the small fellow.

“I’m about to leave this island very soon. If you don’t finish your metamorphosis, I have no choice but to temporarily leave this place and wait for a while before coming back to bring you away.” said Chu Mu.

“Shashasha”

…

Outside Ice Falcon Jungle.

“Senior Yang Zheng, look, it’s a white jungle.” Yang He pointed towards the Ice Falcon Jungle as he spoke.

“The last scroll should be here. It’s strange how this jungle has become like this.” Yang Zhen creased his eyebrows as he watched this jungle.

“Fly down. This jungle is extremely strange.” said Yang He.

The two of them had a bit of experience, so when they normally entered dangerous places, the best option was for them not to fly. This was because while flying in the air, if they flitted through a strong soul pet’s territory, it would be easy to get mistaken by this soul pet as an intruder, and thus suffer from its wrath.

When Yang Zheng and Yang he descended onto the ground, they discovered the wildly proliferating white colored silk in the forest. Their faces turned very grave because they didn’t expect the island to have such a strange terrifying jungle.

“Senior Yang Zheng, look...” Yang Zheng timidly surveyed the surroundings. Strange settings like this normally were the habits of exceptionally strong soul pets. Thus Yang He was a bit more careful.

“I seem to remember hearing the family patriarch mention this before...” Yang Zheng slowly spoke.

“Could this truly be the territory of a powerful soul pet?” Yang He was rather apprehensive.

“Yang Zheng shook his head: “It should be the metamorphosis of some ancient insect type soul pet. I’ve heard people in the family call it “Innards of a God”.”

“Innards of a god?” Yang He clearly had never heard this phrase before.

“Innards of a God is an extremely ancient adjective. It was formerly used to express the chrysalis metamorphosis stage of an ancient insect type soul pet. The entire forest is turned into an ostensibly enormous world of flesh from a creature. The tangled and complicated threads are like the blood vessels of the body. The ubiquitous proliferation is similar to the heart of an enormous cocoon expanding.”

“Senior Yang Zheng... your meaning is that we are currently inside an “Innards of a God”?” The more Yang He heard, the more scared he was.

“I shouldn’t be wrong. The first people who saw an “Innards of a God” entered a blood red world. It looked like the innard blood and flesh of an enormous creature’s body. Therefore, it was coined as the “Innards of a God”. Since this place is white, it means that this ancient bug type creature spits white threads...” said Yang Zheng.

In truth, when he saw this spectacle, Yang Zheng’s face was equivalently full of shock. However, his shock turned into excitement because what he had heard in analogous legends was completely similar to this scene. Thus, it meant that there truly was an ancient soul pet undergoing chrysalis metamorphosis!!

It was extremely difficult to determine the species rank of ancient soul pets because the number of people in this world who possessed ancient soul pets were incredibly few. Moreover, who was actually able to accurately determine the rank of an ancient soul pet?

Nonetheless, one could be sure that practically all ancient soul pets were exceptionally strong. Merely by looking at this tyrannical metamorphosis scene one could see that this bug type soul pet seemed to possess terrifying ability!

Chapter 110: Battle Of The Silk Covered Skies

“Boss Yang Zheng, in my opinion, if there’s an Ancient soul pet, maybe we should tactically retreat, or else…… ” Yang He said.

“What are you afraid of? Know that even the Soul Palace and the Soul Alliance would fight to the death for Ancient soul pets. Our sighting of one must have been because of the blessing of three lifetimes. We probably won’t even stumble upon such chance in dozens of years, how could we just leave!” Yang Zheng

Ancient Bug Type soul pets were all very strong. Especially their scary recovery power, they were called the undead soul pets. On a battlefield, they were nigh invincible. If he could get one, becoming the hegemon of Luogang City would be no issue. Even in Tianxia City, he would still be outstanding!

Yang Zheng was only the third son of a big city clan, so his status wasn’t high at all. Though he may have some fame within Gangluo City, at the moment, he was nothing of value if evaluated among a broader region.

Yet, now a chance to become so much more was right in front of his eyes. Even if it were dangerous, Yang Zheng had to try!

Yang He saw that Yang Zheng was determined, so he could only fearfully follow along behind Yang Zheng, silently praying that the powerful Ancient Bug Type soul pet had already left its chrysalis and had left the island.

Yang Zheng held his scroll and, by following the intensity of its light, constantly drew closer to Chu Mu, which was also the central region of the Innards of a God.

“Heavens……what is that!!”

Yang He and Yang Zheng’s footsteps suddenly stopped as they stared aghast at the huge suspended chrysalis. Just as the predecessors had described, the entire scene looked like the innards of a gigantic organism, and that huge chrysalis was like a heart suspended by countless veins, arteries, and capillaries!!

This shocking sight rendered the two speechless for very long. Anyone who saw this scene would have a shiver that struck them straight to the soul!

“Yang Zheng……Boss Yang Zheng, lets……maybe we should leave here……” Yang He was already shivering with fear.

Living for over thirty years, Yang He had been to many places, but he had never seen such a scary scene!!

“Leaving?! Don’t you see that Bug Type Soul Pet’s still in its chrysalis?! Yang Zheng said angrily.

In reality Yang Zheng himself was also barely maintaining his composure. For some unknown reason, when he was in this world of white, he felt cold all over, as if he was already in the stomach of

some gargantuan organism!

“Boss……look over there…… it’s that kid!” Yang He pointed at the silhouette that had climbed up the chrysalis.

Yang Zheng immediately looked over and indeed discovered a black silhouette standing there, head against the chrysalis doing something unknown.

From far away, the chrysalis’s size wasn’t easily estimated, but through that silhouette they could create a striking contrast.

An adult standing against the chrysalis was like a full moon compared closely to the dimmest of stars!

“The Ancient Bug Type soul pet hadn’t broken out of its chrysalis yet, that kid must want him!” Yang Zheng said angrily!

How could Yang Zheng possibly surrender such a rare opportunity readily. Yang Zheng, without a moment of hesitation, rode his Blood Winged Trioptic Beast and charged towards Chu Mu.

Chu Mu was still communicating with the little guy within the chrysalis through Soul Remembrance.

“Little guy, are you almost coming out, or will it still take a long time?” Chu Mu communicated with the little guy for a long time, but still couldn’t understand what the mental signals sent by it

meant.

“Hui hui!!”

The Night Thunder Dream Beast smelled the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast’s thick bloody scent and quickly let out a call to warn Chu Mu of the incoming danger.

Chu Mu terminated the incongruous communication with the little guy and furrowed his brows. “Their speed sure was fast!”

“Mo Xie, you stall his Trioptic Beast!” Chu Mu glanced at the muscular beast with blood-colored flesh wings and immediately said to Mo Xie.

The Blood Winged Trioptic Beast was at the Middle Class Commander Rank and was already the Fifth Phase Ninth Stage, while Mo Xie was Fifth Phase Seventh Stage. Their stage difference wasn’t huge. Though Mo Xie was only a High Class Warrior Rank, with the advantage of Demon Fire and Evil Flames, her combat strength wouldn’t fall too behind when compared to the Trioptic Beast. Mo Xie definitely wouldn’t be defeated in a short time.

“Hong!!!”

Just as Chu Mu sent this command, a ray of purple lighting abruptly fell from the clear skies. Purple electrical arcs caused even the nearby air to tremble!!

This ray of thunder was shockingly aimed straight at where Chu Mu was!!

“Hui!!”

The Night Thunder Dream Beast immediately let out a call, and its horn also started sparking with purple electrical arcs. When the thunderbolt fell, the Night Thunder Dream Beast incredibly redirected the flamboyant lightning snake straight into its horn, completely absorbing the energy within the thunder!

“Well done! Fifth Phase Sixth Stage Thunder Fairy, heng heng.” Chu Mu patted his Night Thunder Dream Beast’s head and looked at the Thunder Fairy that Yang Zheng summoned.

The Thunder Fairy was at the Warrior Rank. The destructive capabilities of Thunder Types were incredible. Previously, it was this Thunder Fairy that had continuously attacked Chu Mu, almost bombarding his Ice Air Fairy and Devil Tree Battle Soldier to death.

But, when faced with this Fifth Phase Sixth Stage Thunder Fairy, Chu Mu no longer needed to be afraid, because the soul pet that Chu Mu was riding was a master at handling thunder. The Thunder Fairy’s potent Thunder Type attacks would be greatly weakened.

Night Thunder Dream Beast was already at the Fifth Phase First Stage. With the advantage of being Commander Rank, it wouldn’t have any issues fighting the Fifth Phase Sixth Stage Thunder Fairy,

let alone it even had the incomparably unpredictable Dark Type abilities!

“Little Night, Death Ray!”

Chu Mu knew that the Thunder Fairy had strong resistances against Thunder Type. His Night Thunder Dream Beast wasn’t just a pure Thunder Type organism, so using thunder to fight wouldn’t be wise!

The Dream Beast flew forward, carrying Chu Mu while nimbly dodging the frontal assault of Yang Zheng’s Hairy Umbra Monster. It suddenly opened its mouth wide!

A ray of dark light quickly blasted forward from the depths of the Dream Beast’s throat. It was as if the Dream Beast were holding a radiant black pearl in its mouth!!

“Hui!!”

Whipping its head forward, the Death Ray immediately spewed out like water or light. The weird Death Ray instantaneously penetrated a few white “veins”, accurately striking the Thunder Fairy!

Yang Zheng stared blankly, glanced at Chu Mu, who was riding the arrogant and handsome Night Thunder Dream Beast, and with a sour expression, he started casting an incantation.

“Radiant Shield!”

A golden radiance flickered in Yang Zheng’s hand that swiftly transformed into a Radiant Shield which floated in front of his Thunder Fairy!

Radiant Shield, Light Type Soul technique. It was very resistant to Dark Type techniques, so the Night Thunder Dream Beast’s Death Ray was immediately blocked without causing much harm to the Thunder Fairy.

Chu Mu swept a glance at Yang Zheng but simply smiled. Radiant Shield was a Spirit Teacher technique, so the amount of soul power it consumed was huge. Trading one Death Ray for this much of his opponent’s soul power was still very well worth it.

Chapter 111: Dream Shatter: Nightmare Descends

“What sort of luck does this kid have, actually meeting a rare Commander Rank like this Dream Beast, not to mention the fact that it’s the Dark and Lightning dual type!” Yang He, who had just sluggishly got there, said angrily.

The Dream Beast was a rather rare species of the Demon Type- mysterious, strong, and elegant. Dream Beasts with the Dark Type were even called “Elegant Midnight Phantoms”.

Commander Rank Dream Beasts with a single type had starting prices of around one hundred thousand gold. Dual type ones could definitely start at a price of at least three hundred thousand gold. Specifically, if there was the combination of dark and lightning, then it would increase the starting price even further. If put in an auction, the dual type would definitely sell for at least five hundred thousand gold. If its talents in Demon, Dark, and Lightning types were decent, its price would spike even further.

Yang Zheng’s Blood Winged Trioptic Beast only cost three hundred thousand gold. Even if Chu Mu’s Night Thunder Dream Beast had mediocre talent, it would cost the same!

To date, Yang He didn’t even have a single Commander Rank soul pet. The opposition was only an eighteen year old, but he already had terrifyingly strong soul pets like the Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox and the Night Thunder Dream Beast. How could Yang He, a thirty year old Spirit Teacher, endure this?

Chu Mu was very lucky indeed, but it wasn’t through pure luck that he obtained the Night Thunder Dream Beast. Chu Mu hadn’t signed a soul pact with a single soul pet for two years after he attained his Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

Over the past two years, Chu Mu had almost walked through the entire Prison Island, including the unknown areas, before finally capturing a Commander Rank soul pet that met his high standards.

Furthermore, starting from his meeting with the Night Thunder Dream Beast, to tracking its steps, and then to provoking its desire to win, before finally sending Mo Xie to duel it one on one, was a process that required a lot of time and effort. The danger and complications within it, only Chu Mu knew.

“What are you waiting for, why don’t you summon your soul pet? Let's finish this quickly!” Yang Zheng had long ago become flushed with anger. He thought that catching a Thousand Legged Poison Centipede was already a great fortune, but he didn’t anticipate that Chu Mu’s luck was even better!

After Yang He was angrily rebuked, he also quickly chanted his soul pact incantation, and he summoned his other two soul pets.

Seeing Yang He also enter the battle, Chu Mu decisively rode his Night Thunder Dream Beast into the criss-crossed silky forest, taking cover within the “veins” that seemed to stretch into the skies.

Mo Xie had been with Chu Mu for the longest time, so without needing for Chu Mu to give a command, she already knew what Chu Mu was thinking. Seeing Chu Mu distance himself from the battlefront while riding Little Night, Mo Xie very decisively gave up her fight with the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast. Waving her glamorous six tails, she quickly jumped, almost as if on air, between the huge branch-like silk threads and followed Chu Mu into hiding in the white, silk-filled world.

"Catch up!" Yang Zheng saw Chu Mu running away and immediately casted Wind Riding. He floated onto the body of the Trioptic Beast, and rode this Wing Typed Soul Pet to chase closely after Chu Mu.

Chu Mu turned around and glanced at both Yang Zheng and Yang He. He simply smiled while saying secretly, "You think you can win simply because you have more soul pets? I'll show you the Dream Beast's consummate skill!"

The Blood Winged Trioptic Beast and the Duoptic Beast both had the capability to fly, but in this space, where silk invaded every space of the area, these two Wing Type soul pets were clearly obstructed, becoming no match for the soul pets who were nimbly jumping between the silk mid-air.

"Boss Yang Zheng, why do I feel as if something nearby is moving?" Yang He said slightly cowardly.

"What can there be?!" Yang Zheng let out a cold humph, and he completely didn't pay attention to Yang He's paranoia, focusing on continuing his pursuit of Chu Mu.

Yang He still couldn't calm down. His eyes constantly swept the nearby area, and the strange atmosphere was causing him to grow less and less calm!!

"Ahh!! Boss Yang Zheng, bug, bug swarm!!"

Suddenly, Yang He started screaming weirdly, his pupils dilating with terror as he watched, shocked, at the huge white battle bugs wriggling into vision nearby!

The Silver Huge Battle Bug was a High Class Servant Rank, a level that couldn't meet the standards of a Spirit Teacher.

Yet, what Yang He saw was a huge swarm of such soul pets! They were densely packed, almost blotting out his entire vision!

With their white bug juice oozing out, their shiny silver exoskeletons, and their glinting razor pincers, the bugs looked so terrifying!

Yang He's greatest fear was that this Ancient Bug Type soul pet had a huge group of protector Bug Type soul pets, but he didn't think that such a scary thing would really happen. Instantly, he felt the terror of a nightmare that had suddenly become true!!

"Idiot, what bug swarm?!"

Yang Zheng glanced around but didn't see even half a Huge Battle Bug. Seeing Yang He scared shitless, he was even more angry.

"Groups upon groups, we're totally surrounded!!" Yang He's face was pale to the extreme, and he didn't dare to move an inch.

Affected by the emotions of their master, Yang He and his soul pets didn't dare to go forward either, cowering around Yang He's side.

"Damn it!" Seeing Yang He like this, the more experienced Yang Zheng suddenly realized that Yang He and his soul pets must have been struck by the Dream Beast's iconic technique - Dream Shatter: Nightmare Descends!

Special demons such as the Dream Beast had the special ability to create dreamlands that caused their opponents to enter hallucinations. With Dark Type Dream Beasts, they could even create more realistic and terrifying dreamlands. This was why dark type Dream Beasts were even more valuable.

Nightmare Descends was one of the species abilities within the Dream Shatter category. Chu Mu's Night Thunder Dream Beast could still create other hallucinations, but utilizing the landscape within the Innards of a God, the nightmare formed within Yang He's heart would become even more realistic!

Facing such a mental attack, unless their soul remembrance was strong or they had the ability to remove hallucinations, the hallucination would continue for a while!

Yang Zheng was already purple with anger. If Yang He wasn't as cowardly, with his remembrance, Dream Beast's technique would definitely not have succeeded. Even if it did succeed, it wouldn't have lasted long. But from the looks of it now, Yang He was completely under its influence. Even his soul pets were in a dream state, totally void of combatting strength.

Not far away, Chu Mu's pupils recovered its usual void-like black. Just now, he casted Chong Mei along with the Night Thunder Dream Beast to cast Nightmare Ascends in order to totally restrict Yang He and his soul pets.

Chu Mu glanced at the enraged Yang Zheng but simply raised his last scroll and laughed. "Anyways, I have time, I'll waste a couple more years with you."

After finishing speaking, Chu Mu didn't even turn around as he rode his Night Thunder Dream Beast to higher skies, slowly leaving Yang Zheng's field of vision.

Yang Zheng gnashed his teeth. No matter what, he couldn't let Chu Mu get away this time, or else once the people of Nightmare Palace came, he ,as an intruder, would undoubtedly be dead.

Glancing at Yang He, Yang Zheng screamed a curse at the disappointing man, and stopped paying attention to the guy who was being mentally traumatized. He immediately rode his Blood Winged Trioptic Beast, retracted his slow Shadow Umbra Monster and Thunder Fairy, and swore to take Chu Mu down.

Chapter 112: Molten Fury, Two Fires Merge

The Night Thunder Dream Beast continuously jumped around, and it quickly jumped onto the huge bug cocoon, gazing at the slow flying Blood Winged Trioptic Beast from above.

“Dark Lightning!”

The Night Thunder Dream Beast immediately locked onto the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast, and its two horns started to emit high frequencies of dark arc of lightning!

Black arcs flashed relentlessly. With a reverberating shout from the Night Thunder Dream Beast, a pitch black thunderbolt zigzagged down from above in an imposing and majestic manner!!

In the world of white, the black thunder was especially striking!!

The Blood Winged Trioptic Beast immediately banked to the side to avoid the upfront attack of the black lightning, yet the effects of the electrical arcs still stretched to the Blood Beast’s wings, causing its wings to be temporarily paralyzed.

“Mo Xie, Fire Rain!”

Chu Mu glanced at the Trioptic Beast and quickly commanded Mo Xie.

Mo Xie immediately lifted her head. As her silver eyes rapidly transitioned into a crimson shade, the fire on her body blazed up even further, causing the six demon flames to spiral upwards from her noble body. Mo Xie darted into higher skies and formed a fiery cloud of Demon Fire Evil Flames!

“Wu!!!”

With a call from Mo Xie, the cloud burst into flames, as balls of molten demon fire cascaded from above. It covered a massive area, lighting up the criss-crossing white silk and burning out a big clearing.

Yang Zheng and his Blood Winged Trioptic Beast were right in the middle of the Flame Rain. No matter which way they dodged, they would need to withstand the shower of blazing heat energy.

Mo Xie’s fire talents wasn’t comparable to the soul pets of the Elemental world, but the effects of the Demon Fire Evil Flames caused all fire type techniques to elevate to a new level. With demon fire falling so densely and frantically, even Fifth Phase Ninth Stage Commander Ranks would be severely damaged.

Yang Zheng angrily glared at Chu Mu, who was standing on the high ground, and quickly started chanting an incantation. He applied a layer of Ice Armor onto both himself and the Trioptic Beast. With this, the Trioptic Beast’s defense could just barely withstand the damage from the strong flames.

“Charge forward!!”

Yang Zheng lowered his head and rode his Blood Winged Trioptic Beast directly upwards through the frantically barraging Fire Rain!

The blood-colored blur dashed between the crimson balls of fire. Although it was sometimes struck down by the Fire Rain, it quickly flew back up with the power of its strong wings!!

Yang Zheng roared angrily as he started another incantation, summoning two more soul pets.

This time, Yang Zheng didn’t summon the Lightning Fairy, but instead summoned the Commander Rank Thousand Feet Poisonous Centipede which he had obtained not long ago!!

The Thousand Feet Poisonous Centipede, when extended, was already a frightening fifteen meters long. Its pairs of scythe-like legs made this malevolent and ghastly organism appear like a black saw!

Yang Zheng’s Hairy Umbra Monster was very speedy, being the first to lunge towards Chu Mu’s Night Thunder Dream Beast. The Commander Rank Thousand Feet Poisonous Centipede then spewed out a black, cloud-like gas which quickly covered the region and completely enveloped Chu Mu and his soul pets, acting as if not giving Chu Mu a chance to escape again.

“Hehe, so what if I do give you the chance to escape for a year,

with your soul pets' strengths, none of them will be able to really fight me!!" Yang Zheng, while riding his Blood Winged Trioptic Beast, revealed an icy smile!

"Don't tell me you thought I simply buried my scroll in the ground and baited you here to simply say hi and leave?" Chu Mu smirked and looked over at Mo Xie beside him.

Mo Xie quickly understood what Chu Mu meant, and the demon fire on her body started blazing even stronger.

"Adhering Flame!"

Chu Mu almost instantly finished the spell, casting the fire damage multiplier swiftly onto Mo Xie's body.

The demon fire on Mo Xie was burning very fiercely already. Once Chu Mu attached his Adhering Flame onto her, Mo Xie's flowing fur seemed to morph completely into flames. The only thing that could be seen were those eye-dazzling demon pupils!

"This imposing manner……"

Yang Zheng immediately felt that something wasn't right because the Fifth Phase Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox could not produce such a imposing and strong demon aura and Evil Flame!

"Molten Fury!!"

“Chong Mei - Molten Fury!!”

At almost the same moment that Mo Xie casted her strongest Demon Fire Evil Flame ability, Chu Mu’s pupils also showed an unusual gleam.

Similar to the flames on Mo Xie’s body, Chu Mu’s body also ignited with raging fire. What was different was that the flames on Chu Mu were white!

Chu Mu couldn’t harness the Demon Fire Evil Flames on Mo Xie, but he could harness the strong white Soul Devil Fire!!

The red Demon Fire Evil Flames and the white Soul Devil Fire lit up the entire region, spinning and intertwining, easily setting all of the white silk nearby aflame!!

The blazing and burning heat from the soul. Yang Zheng could still feel the terror of the two techniques combined even though the Molten Fury hadn’t washed over him yet!!

“Wuwu”

Mo Xie let out a resounding cry, and her frightening Molten Fury transformed into a blazing fire demon, crazily sweeping through the field towards the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast!!

It would be hard to really inflict serious damage to Yang Zheng and his Trioptic Beast with just Mo Xie's Molten Fury of Demon Fire Evil Flames. But when the White Nightmare's white Soul Devil Fire,combined with the Molten Fury, the power of the Molten Fury would quadruple!

Molten Fury itself was a powerful and high damaging fire ability. With the double effect of the Demon Fire Evil Flames, it could easily wound heavily defended Commander Rank soul pets like the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast.

Additionally, the White Nightmare's white Soul Devil Fire was even more powerful than the Demon Fire Evil Flames, and it burned straight to the soul. An ability that merged the two types of fire together perfectly could lethally wound even a level seven defensive skin!!

The combination of both Demon Fire Evil Flames and Soul Devil Fire was accidentally discovered when Chu Mu summoned the White Nightmare. The combination of the two could create a terrifying fire attack that was beyond their ranks! If not for this skill, Chu Mu wouldn't rashly fight against Yang Zheng, who could summon three soul pets!

The Blood Winged Trioptic Beast's defense was only level seven complete stage and had no resistance to fire. The layering of the two Molten Furies, and the interlacing of Demon Fire Evil Flames and Soul Devil Fire was something even a Fifth Phase Ninth Stage Commander Rank soul pet couldn't withstand!

The White Devil Fire and the crimson Demon Fire rapidly

crawled onto the Trioptic Beast. Both the beast and Yang Zheng let out a blood curdling screech of unbearable pain!!

Yang Zheng was wearing a level five soul armor. If not for the Crystal Armor, which he promptly casted, that had the effects of a level six defensive skin, he would have immediately disintegrated under the Molten Furies!

Yang Zheng withstood the entire Molten Fury with immense pain, but his Blood Winged Trioptic Beast, who was experiencing the burn of the flames in both body and soul, would probably be unable to fight, if it even survived at all.

Chapter 113: Yang Lengcang

“Little Ye, pin down that centipede and the Hairy Umbra Monster!” Chu Mu jumped off the Night Thunder Dream Beast’s body, letting it fight to its heart’s content.

The Night Thunder Dream Beast had already noticed the Thousand Legged Poisonous Centipede poisoning the atmosphere. Its black pupils closely stared at the squirming items on the white natural silk, and it let out a provocative yell!

Yang Zheng naturally wouldn’t let the Night Thunder Dream Beast launch an attack. He promptly had his two soul pets meet it head on!

The Night Thunder Dream Beast gracefully stepped onto the cloud threads, as its black and white feathered body quickly appeared in front of the Thousand Legged Poisonous Centipede.

The Thousand Legged Poisonous Centipede was only at the fourth phase first stage while the Night Thunder Dream Beast had already reached the fifth phase first stage-there was an entire phase discrepancy between their strengths. The Thousand Legged Poisonous Centipede’s poison attribute was not very effective towards the heavy dark type attribute Night Thunder Dream Beast. A single attack of the Night Thunder Dream Beast contained a tyrannical violent lightning, and it electrocuted the Thousand Legged Poisonous Centipede into a scorched black color. The Thousand Legged Poisonous Centipede had no choice but to flee behind the Hairy Umbra Monster.

Yang Zheng's most difficult soul pet to deal with was the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast. Currently, there was still fire burning its body and soul, so Yang Zheng didn't dare to recall it. Moreover, Chu Mu wouldn't give Yang Zheng a chance to do so!

"Mo Xie, Death Assault!"

Chu Mu decreed his order, and the fire covering Mo Xie's body rushed forth as her gorgeous six tails violently separated!

Mo Xie's speed was much faster than that of the sturdy Blood Winged Trioptic Beast. Death Assault's effect increased speed by one factor. It looked like a beautiful pillar of fire that swept through the air!

"Swift Lightning Ray!"

Yang Zheng strenuously chanted the lightning soul technique. A silver arc of lightning formed between his hands, and it proceeded to travel from his hands while splitting into two arcs in the air as it shot towards Mo Xie!

Mo Xie was in the midst of jumping when the quick and violent lightning bolt swept through the air. Suddenly, her four flaming paws sprang up!

Her graceful and strong body lightly sprang up into the air, like her flaming paws had just touched the ground. The jumping Mo Xie was able to slant her body and change her falling trajectory

into a fine arc. She nimbly dodged the two lightning rays!

Illusion Evil Flame Claw!!!

The moment she landed in front of the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast, Mo Xie's body abruptly split into two. Immediately, the two distinct sets of flaming six tailed demonic aura wantonly swept through the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast. The striking Evil Flame Claw tore through the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast's two blood colored wings!!

The final stage of Illusion no longer created a mere illusion. Rather, it could form an actual attack, causing two sources of damage!

The Illusion Evil Flame Claw and true Evil Flame Claw interweaved, and the burnt black Blood Winged Trioptic Beast's wings were instantly torn off. The terrifying Demon Fire Evil Flame rapidly entered its body through the flesh, instantly igniting the pieces of flesh inside the beast's body!

Yang Zheng had already jumped off the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast's body. As its body and soul burned to nothing, his face became extremely pale, and it was already beginning to contort together!

The Blood Winged Trioptic Beast was Yang Zheng's strongest soul pet. Without this Commander Rank soul pet, Yang Zheng wasn't very different from the majority of other soul pet trainers. As he watched his Blood Winged Trioptic Beast, which was more

valuable than his life, burn to death, he felt more suffering than if his own body was burning!

"I've already said that none of your Yang Family will leave this prison island alive!" An ostensibly demonic and merciless smile filled with elation appeared on Chu Mu's Face. Immediately, he ordered Mo Xie to attack Yang Zheng!

Having suffered a grievous wound on his third soul, Yang Zheng's anger had already spread to his throat. Yet, facing this fierce Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox, he had no choice but to forcibly recall the Thousand Legged Poisonous Centipede into his soul pet space. Immediately, he summoned his fifth phase sixth stage Rare Blood Beast!

The Rare Blood Beast was at the Warrior Rank, while the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox had strength that could rival a Commander Rank Soul Pet. Even when Mo Xie was still at the fourth phase seventh stage, it was enough to contend against the rare Blood Beast. Now, Mo Xie had already reached the fifth phase seventh stage!!

Blink!!

Almost as if she was teleporting, Mo Xie seemed to instantly appear in front of the Rare Blood Beast. Like an assassin who took pleasure in his art, her sharp claws didn't use any technique, as it easily sliced apart the Rare Blood Beast's fifth stage defensive skin!

A few consecutive blinks, and a plethora of wounds opened up on

the Rare Blood Beast's body as it wasn't even able to use any techniques!

Watching his own fifth phase Rare Blood Beast getting devastated, Yang Zheng was so angry he couldn't speak. He used a mental transmission to indignantly yell at the Rare Blood Beast.

"Wild Transformation!"

Using the stimulation of the blood and wounds, the Rare Blood Beast's eyes promptly turned red, and a bloody smell puffed out of its nose. Clearly it had entered a Wild Transformation state!

Wild Transformation could perhaps be described as a signatory technique of Rare Blood Beasts. It caused the soul pet's strength, speed, and savage instinct to substantially increase. It was an extremely tyrannical soul pet technique!

"Mo Xie, Evil Stare!"

Chu Mu saw the Rare Blood Beast's eyes turn red, and he immediately recognized that it was going to enter the Wild Transformation state. Immediately after, he ordered Mo Xie to use the demonic technique-Evil Stare!

If the Rare Blood Beast was to have already entered the Wild Transformation state, Evil Stare wouldn't have any effect. However, the Rare Blood Beast was not able to instantly enter Wild Transformation. At the moment, as long as one made it afraid, its

Wild Transformation would fail!

Regardless of stage or rank, Mo Xie was still higher than the Rare Blood Beast. Under the Evil Stare's effect, the Rare Blood Beast's originally bodacious eyes gradually became filled with an unsettling fear. Let alone attempting Wild Transformation, it most likely now found it extremely hard to even fight!

Once the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast perished, Yang Zheng didn't have any other soul pet that could resist the powerful Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox. The only thing summoning the rest of his soul pets would do was exhaust some of the Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox's physical strength. Once Yang Zheng's soul power ran out, he would not be able to summon any more soul pets, and he would be greeted by death!

In the white jungle, a blood colored figure appeared, waving its enormous wings as it flew over!

This was a Blood Winged Trioptic Beast. However, this Blood Winged Trioptic Beast's physical body was slightly larger than Yang Zheng's. A pair of fleshy wings spread opened to a wingspan of 5 meters. Like a pebbles on a rock, its muscles and flesh were completely revealed, displaying a completely terrifying feeling of strength!

Standing on top of this Blood Winged Trioptic Beast was a man wearing a blood colored robe. The man's eyes surveyed the shocking surroundings and an expression of shock also appeared on his face!

“Yang He?”

The blood color robed man flew to the enormous chrysalis location and immediately located the stupefied Yang He randomly yelling.

The man’s eyebrows creased and quickly discovered that Yang He had been affected by an illusion technique. Immediately, he chanted an incantation and used a powerful mental soul technique to pull Yang He back to reality!

“Senior Yang Lengcang, what are you doing here…” After he had fully awoken, the expression on Yang He’s face promptly shifted. It changed to an eminently subservient expression with a hint of fear. Even in front of Yang Zheng, Yang He had never exhibited such reverence and timidity. Clearly, this Yang Lengcang wasn’t a normal person!

Chapter 114: Emerging From The Pupa, Ancient Soul Pet

“What happened? Where’s Yang Zheng?” said the indifferent man called Yang Lengcang.

“We.. we encountered that Chu Family brat on this prisoner island. He repeatedly disrupted our work... Senior Yang Zheng is already chasing after him...” Yang He stuttered a bit as he talked.

In terms of the most terrifying person in the Yang Family, it wasn’t the Yang Family’s family master’s eldest son, Yang Mancan. It also wasn’t the second son of the family master, Yang Mantian. Instead, it was the second family master’s second son, Yang Lengcang. His strength was definitely within the top ten of the Yang Family. Moreover, his personality was solemn and gloomy; no one had ever seemed to have seen him laugh before.

Yang Lengcang’s coldness was known throughout the entire Wangluo City. This fellow would use any means necessary to accomplish a task, and he had a cold rock for a heart!

Of course, Yang Lengcang’s tyrannical strength was still what made the soul pet trainers of Wangluo City revere him. Yang Lengcang was a ninth remembrance Soul Master.

Different from the majority of Soul Masters though, Yang Lengcang’s three Soul Master Level soul pets were all of the Commander Rank. Furthermore, his Soul Soldier level soul pets had rather shocking fighting strengths. A few Commander Rank

soul pets of soul pet trainers were perhaps not even his Warrior Rank soul pets' opponents.

The Blood Winged Trioptic Beast that Yang Lengcang was currently controlling had already reached the sixth stage fourth phase. Its innate talent was slightly higher than Yang Zheng's Blood Winged Trioptic Beast.

A sixth phase fourth stage Commander Rank soul pet had terrifying strength. However, this wasn't even Yang Lengcang's strongest soul pet.

Yang Lengcang still had a sixth phase eighth stage Terror Wolf!

The Terror Wolf was a completely black-colored High Class Commander Rank soul pet. Like the Dire Wolf, it was also a wolf species. Nonetheless, its fighting power was much higher than a Dire Wolf's. Perhaps Yang Zheng's fifth phase ninth stage Blood Winged Trioptic Beast could not even resist for three minutes in front of Yang Lengcang's Terror Wolf, before being torn into pieces!

Aside from this, Yang Lengcan also had a seventh phase fourth stage Rare Blood Beast.

By raising a Warrior Rank soul pet to the seventh phase fourth stage, its fighting strength had to be as good as sixth phase Commander Rank's. Even though it was only a Warrior Rank, it could not be underestimated!

“You’re telling me that brat has an Evil Flamed Six Tailed Demon Fox? Further, it’s strength can rival a Commander Rank soul pet?” asked Yang Lengcang.

“Yes, Senior Yang Lengcang. Moreover, he also has a Night Thunder Dream Beast that is approximately at the fifth phase. Its fighting doesn’t seem to be weak.” Yang He hastily urged the Blood Winged Duoptic Beast carrying Yang Lengcang towards the enormous pupa.

“Truly a piece of trash. A brat struggling on death’s door is capable of forcing you two to such an extent!” said Yang Lengcang.

Yang He lowered his head and ostensibly held a smiling face as he said: “Senior Yang Zheng should be able to take care of it. However, since Senior Yang Lengcang has come, you probably don’t even have to summon your main soul pet to easily defeat that brat.”

The two people steered their blood beasts over to the enormous pupa. Quickly, they saw a large cloud of burning black smoke.

“Perhaps Senior Yang Zheng has already finished…” Yang He looked at the chaotic battlefield and was going redeem some of Yang Zheng’s face.

However, just this instant, from high above, rang out a trembling shout:

“Yang Lengcang, quickly save me!!!”

Yang He’s words immediately stopped. Yang Lengcang’s reaction was very quick and he promptly steered his sixth phase fourth stage Blood Winged Trioptic Beast upwards!!

“Blood Fiend Hurricane!”

Yang Lengcang instantly commanded his Blood Wing Trioptic Beast, and it abruptly waved its two powerful wings as the frequency grew extremely quick!

The blood colored hurricane began to wantonly fly upwards. Suddenly, an over twenty meter tall and powerful hurricane appeared and landed between Yang Zheng and Mo Xie who was chasing after him!

“Mo Xie, retreat!”

Chu Mu became aware of the Blood Fiend Hurricane’s power, and he instantly ordered Mo Xie to renounce her chase.

Mo Xie’s body was already in the midst of pouncing towards the Blood Fiend Hurricane. Nonetheless, the Evil Flame on her four paws suddenly sprang up as she began treading on air, flitting past the edge of the Blood Fiend Hurricane. Hastily, she used the interweaving silk to return to Chu Mu’s side.

“Yang Lengcang, you… you’ve truly come at the perfect time.

Quickly, help me kill that brat. He… he has already slaughtered my Blood Winged Trioptic beast!" Yang Zheng steered his Cyan Bird as he flusteredly descended next to Yang Lengcang.

The Cyan Bird's body was covered with injuries. When it flew down, it staggered along. Yang Zheng's body was even more burnt and he was in an extremely miserable state.

"You've truly completely lost face for our Yang Family. A brat who barely managed to live has even beat you up into this state!" Yang Lengcang unrestrainedly criticized.

Yang Zheng was clearly rather afraid of Yang Lengcang, and he didn't even retort at all to Yang Lengcang's words. Instead, he put all his resentment onto Chu Mu.

Yang Lengcang lifted his head and his gaze arrogantly fell on Chu Mu high above on the cloudy silk. Chu Mu's facial expression was the same as before, but his eyes revealed even more killing intent.

In truth, Yang Lengcang could disregard Chu Mu, but he knew that he couldn't let this brat develop any more.

He was only 18 years old, but had reached the Soul Master rank. He controlled a Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox, possessed a Night Thunder Dream Beast, and could defeat Yang Zheng despite having lost a soul. If he were to give Chu Mu a few more years, he would definitely become a huge danger to his Yang Family!

Actually, Yang Lengcang had never thought that this completely neglected brat had unexpectedly raised his strength to such a level in a short three or four years!

Chu Mu locked his gaze with Yang Lengcang's. Chu Mu recognized Yang Lengcang; this fellow's strength was terrifying. Chu Mu never thought that this fellow would appear on Prison Island and, knowing that he wasn't his opponent, Chu Mu decisively recalled Mo Xie, choosing to retreat.

"Thinking of escaping? If I want to kill someone, he or she is not going to escape!" Yang Lengcang immediately sensed Chu Mu's intention and promptly urged his sixth phase fourth stage Blood Winged Trioptic Beast to chase.

Yang Lengcang's Blood Winged Trioptic Beast's flying speed was extremely quick. Although its wingspan had reached five meters, it nimbly transversed through the cloudy silk, growing closer to Chu Mu bit after bit.

Blood Fiend Hurricane!!!

"Huhuhu"

The powerful and terrifying Blood Fiend Hurricane swept forth again. This blood-colored hurricane violently engulfed everything up to ten meters around it. Like a blood-colored whip, it frantically hurtled towards Chu Mu and the Night Thunder Dream Beats.

Suffering from the Blood Fiend Hurricane's effects, the Night Thunder Dream Beats's speed was immediately affected.

Chu Mu's heart clenched and he once more swept his gaze of the sixth phase Blood Winged Trioptic Beast growing closer.

How could Chu Mu not understand Yang Lengcang's strength. If he wasn't able to open a gap in distance from Yang Lengcang, then this time it would truly be hard to escape from this calamity.

"Devil Tree Battle Soldier!" Chu Mu clenched his teeth. He was not afraid of death, but instead unreconciled to die on Prisoner Island. Therefore, even while knowing it would be hard to resist, Chu Mu would not easily give up!!

"Devil Tree Battle Soldier, Nature Power-Root Net..." said Chu Mu.

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier nodded its head and its two muscly arms covered in tree bark suddenly spread open. Instantly, numerous roots extended from its stomach. The roots quickly grew long and rapidly formed an enormous root net!

The root net unceasingly expanded, becoming ten meters wide and fell down from above!

"It can't even stand one blow." Yang Lengcang unexpectedly completely disregarded the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's Root Net and urged his Blood Winged Trioptic Beast to charge upwards!

The The root net instantly enveloped the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast, but it only managed to slightly reduce this powerful soul pet's speed. Quickly, the sturdy Root Net was torn to pieces!

"Return!" Chu Mu promptly chanted an incantation and recalled the Devil Tree Battle Soldier.

"O!!" The low intelligence Devil Tree Battle Soldier, however, didn't listen to its master's order. Instead, it let out a howl and refused Chu Mu's recall...

"Ao!!! Ao!!"

The Devil Tree Battle Soldier was also connected to Chu Mu's mind and spirit. Currently, Chu Mu didn't have enough soul power to summon the Ice Air Fairy or Mo Xie to do battle. If he were to recall it, the only protection Chu Mu would have left was the Night Thunder Dream Beast.

.....

Chu Mu's heart sank as he watched the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's obstinate yet slightly clumsy figure. In his two black and indifferent pupils, there appeared a sliver of sorrow...

"Ao!!" The Devil Tree Battle Soldier let out a wild howl, brandished its fists and launched itself at the Blood Winged Trioptic Beast.

Chu Mu turned his head and didn't look back at the Devil Tree Battle Soldier. He urged the Night Thunder Dream Beast on as it ran to the very peak of the enormous pupa...

Chu Mu heard the sound of the Devil Tree Battle Soldier's body being smashed to pieces. However, the soul link he had with the Devil Tree was not severed.

The vitality of plant kingdom soul pets was more tenacious than elemental kingdom soul pets. Apparently, Yang Lengcang felt it was too much beneath his dignity to kill a tenacious wood type soul pet.

"By abandoning a Devil Tree Battle Soldier you think you can escape? Too naive!" Yang Lengcang had suddenly appeared in front of Chu Mu.

Standing under the Blood Fiend Wind at the peak of the pupa, Chu Mu could feel the stench permeate into his body, and he couldn't help but shudder!

The blood-colored shadow engulfed Chu Mu, and the biting cold Blood Fiend wind hit him in the face!

From above, Yang Lengcan overlooked Chu Mu, who was sitting on the Night Thunder Dream Beast. A cold smile appeared on his face.

To Yang Lengcang, killing someone with potential was the most

fascinating thing because he could lessen potential threats toward him!

“Where else can you flee to?” Yang Lengcan had already chanted an incantation. Suddenly, an even more terrifying aura swept through!!

The evil aura of the sixth phase eighth stage Terror Wolf appeared in front of Chu Mu and the Night Thunder Dream Beast, blocking off their escape route. Moreover, behind Chu Mu stood the seventh phase Rare Blood Beast!

“Yang Lengcang, don’t kill him so fast. Let him summon his Evil Flame Six Tailed Demon Fox. Otherwise, we will have to wait for his soul pet space to naturally disappear before it appears.” Yang Zheng and Yang He had already arrived, and Yang Zheng was hastily trying to remind Yang Lengcang.

“I know already!” Yang Lengcang coldly said.

Chu Mu’s movements were even quicker. Rapidly, he chanted an incantation and recalled the Night Thunder Dream Beast back into his soul pet space. His gaze swept over the three Yang Family members in front of him, and a demonic smile appeared on his face.

“You can still smile! Tch, after I steal your soul pet, you will definitely taste the feeling of wanting to die!! ” Yang Zheng coldly said!

“Precisely. You absolutely cannot let him off lightly. He made us waste all that time.” Yang He immediately agreed.

“It seems that Heaven’s Will is to destroy the Chu Family. If you hadn’t encountered me, perhaps you would be able to contend against me in the future. Only, it’s too bad…” Yang Lengcang’s cold and gloomy face revealed a rather abhorrent and arrogant expression.

“However, you don’t need to be worried. Your family clan members already think you’re dead. You’ve just lived an extra three years…”

Chu Mu stared at Yang Lengcang’s false facade, but his expression didn’t change. Many years of killing had already caused Chu Mu to maintain his calm, even in the face of death.

“Could it be that you think that I brought you here just to let you enjoy the scenery?” Chu Mu looked at the of false facade of Yang Lengcang before looking at Yang Zheng, who was full of indignance. He then slowly began speaking.

“Then I have to thank you. You’ve brought us to such a treasure house.” Yang Zheng immediately began laughing. Evidently, he felt that everything was over already.

“You don’t need to thank me. You guys can go to hell first and prepare for a reunion there for your Yang Family members. Moreover, you have the honor of being killed by an ancient and powerful creature!!”

The moment Chu Mu's voice faded, a strange aura suddenly discharged from the enormous pupa under their feet!!!

The enormous pupa was covered in white silk and was eminently thick. Originally, when it was wrapped, it was only in a half solid state, but currently, it had completely solidified. Nonetheless, just as the surroundings became deathly silent as its aura was discharged, the outer layers of the pupa began to peel off!!!

One large piece after another, like the white rocks of a mountain breaking, the pieces smashed into the vast white forest!!!

"Beng!! Beng!!!"

When the solid white shell frantically smashed onto the ground, the entire humongous pupa began to violently shake. Fissure after fissure of earthquake-like cracks appeared on the mountain-like pupa!

As if it felt that the shell was peeling off too slowly, a terrifying energy suddenly exploded forth from within the enormous pupa. A shock wave coursed through the pupa as even more cracks appeared on its exterior. It seemed like it was about to explode!!!